



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 02

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101: Danger

“Who has come?” Wan Zhenghao and the middle-aged man opened their eyes wide. They were a bit untrusting of the old man, Guan Wanshan. They actually didn’t realize why it was so important.

“Feng... Feng Zhiling! The supreme dan beads! Feng Zhiling... He is here!”

What Guan Wanshan said immediately made them thrilled!

“No shit!”

They both shouted out, “This bastard finally came!”

They rushed to the door like their asses were on fire, leaving Guan Wanshan behind. When passed through the door, the middle-aged man suddenly slowed down, acting like he was casually walking.

Yet, Wan Zhenghao had actually rolled down the stairs.

...

Ye Xiao had been rather tolerant.

He had put that much money in here yet never even asked about

it even once. An ordinary man would never be able to do so.

In fact, if he wasn't in need of money this time, he might not come to the Ling-Bao Hall again, at least, not any time soon. In fact, he didn't really care about this amount of money!

However, although he hadn't taken all the money he had earned last time, he had still kept a large amount of money with him. It had been just a few days. How come he was in need of money again?

It was because of the heavy rain the last night.

When Ye Xiao woke up and absorbed the first stream of the purple qi in the sky, he found that some moist qi had followed the purple qi into his dantian along the Jing and Mai. And then the moist qi had entered the Spaces.

Then, some fog appeared in the Water Space. The fog was extremely humid. As the moist qi entered the Water Space, the fog became thicker and was on the verge of condensation.

It really confused Ye Xiao.

[Don't tell me the natural objects can also increase my cultivation? Is the East-rising purple qi really so comprehensive? That is unbelievable, isn't it?!] Ye Xiao thought for quite a while and tried staying in the pool for a long time, yet he didn't find the moist qi increasing.

[The water in the pool cannot be converted into the moist qi? It seems only the water from the sky... the Rootless Water, can turn into the marvelous water in the Space...] Ye Xiao thought so.

Yet how can there be so many heavy rains in the world.

It was actually a rainstorm the last night. Even though it would frequently rain, it could hardly be impossible to rain like that. Such a rainstorm was truly rare in a hundred years!

If a rainstorm like that kept happening for a long time...

The world would soon be broken down.

Since he couldn't count on the weather, he could only think about using some human sources!

It was difficult for him to think of a "human-sources" way. He immediately came out with a practical solution.

As long as he could have enough amount of spiritual jades and use them to set up a small Raining Circle, it would allow him to control the rain as he wished.

That seemed practical, but there were still some problems which persisted.

It was surely not a difficult thing to do in the Qing-Yun Realm. Even a second-rank sect could set up the circle easily. However, it was difficult in the mortal world. The “spiritual jades” that were essential for the circle were rather rare in the Land of Han-Yang!

Most of the normal people could never even see one piece of it in their lives. Even if they saw it, they would probably ignore it because of their ignorance.

It was extremely precious and priceless!

It was hard for Ye Xiao to find one in this world. Even though he could find some, the money he had at the moment was too little to even buy one piece of it. A small Raining Circle might not need many pieces of “spiritual jades”, yet there had to be more than just one or two pieces for sure.

If he wanted to get enough “spiritual jades”, he needed to have enough money, which he didn’t.

So Ye Xiao needed money!

He needed it!

He needed a lot of money!

And then, he naturally thought of the money he had saved in the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom. The money of over five million taels of silver!

So he came to take it.

However, he didn't know that things in the Ling-Bao Hall had changed a lot now!

He didn't know that what was waiting there was a huge trap that was specially made up for him!

There were people waiting for him to fall in for so long!

...

Ye Xiao smiled when he saw the distant Ling-Bao Hall.

He thought, [I don't mind if I need to give them more supreme dan beads, if I need to... I still have quite many... Well, first of all, money can really bring me the spiritual jades...

My biggest problem is where should I find them.]

Ye Xiao had used many spiritual jades many times in his previous life, but they were all fully developed. They were all normative after manufactured. He only needed to buy or to rob some...

It was normal objects in the Qing-Yun Realm after all, even though they were in a high price.

However, now that he was in the mortal world. Well, there should be spiritual jades in every realm, yet he didn't know how it would look like in this world. He was not sure if there would be anyone who could recognize it... That mostly gave him headache.

“Fine. I will just see what happens next then!” Ye Xiao murmured, “[A living man will not die for holding urine.](#)”

He casually walked in the salesroom and was stunned by Master Guan!

Guan Wanshan was like looking at a gold mountain when he saw Feng Zhiling. It seemed like he was waiting for this “gold mountain” for ages, and as soon as he saw him, he was immediately relieved. He looked quite creepy anyway.

Then he ran away without hesitation!

The way he ran made him look like a youngster.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

“What the hell is going on? What happened!” Ye Xiao sensitively realized that something was wrong.

[Guan Wanshan was supposed to be excited when he saw me, but like this.... that was just so unusual...

He is an old master who had worked in the salesroom for decades. He is experienced. He shouldn't be like that...

He is supposed to be enthusiastic at the same time, isn't he? He should have come forward quickly and greeted me warmly to maintain a good relationship with me. Right?!

But he just ran away like that. That is so weird. There must be something wrong here. What's the problem?]

Ye Xiao looked around cautiously and found that several men had come to the door standing.

It seemed normal and they seemed to be the guards.

[Well... As I remember, usually, there should be four people guarding at the door. Now there are eight. And... These eight guards are actually watching me. How come I feel that they are afraid that I will get away.]

He had a feeling that if he left now, these men would very possibly stop him!

“What the hell is that? Blocking the door?” Ye Xiao frowned and then walked to the door.

He wasn't even that close to the door when a big man among the

eight people walked towards him smiling. He bowed and scraped to Ye Xiao, “Lord Feng, please hold on. Master Guan has given us the order that if you come, we need to ask you to wait for a second. There is an urgent event that needs your opinion.”

Ye Xiao nodded peacefully and spoke warmly, “Hmm. I know. I just want to get some fresh air at the door.”

The big man bowed and said, “Please enjoy some tea, Lord Feng.”

That meant... “Forget about the fresh air. Just get back inside and have some tea”.

Ye Xiao frowned immediately and spoke blandly, “What is this? Can’t I even just get some fresh air at the door? Can’t I?”

The big man became more humble, but he kept standing in front of Ye Xiao. The other strong men were slightly moving over. They seem to be trying to stand in a circle around Ye Xiao.

“Get away!” Ye Xiao shouted and frowned. He realized that there was a vital danger in the Ling-Bao Hall getting close to him. Something terrible would happen if he stayed longer.

His hands had become golden inside his sleeves.

The golden hand which had shocked the auction might once show up again.

“I suppose this must be the well-known Feng Zhiling... Lord Feng. Right?” A bright voice suddenly sounded, “Hahahaha... I am Wan Zhenghao. I am the owner of Ling-Bao Hall. I have heard of Lord Feng for a long time but didn’t have the luck to meet you in person. Today is my lucky day. It is my pride to see you!”

Ye Xiao frowned and looked to where the voice came.

He just saw a huge meat ball quickly rolling down the stairs from the second floor.

The ground seemed to be trembling. That was quite a heavy one, Ye Xiao thought!

When the “meat ball” got to the floor, Ye Xiao recognized that... it was actually a person!

The man hardly had a neck. At least Ye Xiao could tell where his neck was. His head was like a watermelon, and it was just set on the fat shoulders. The fat face was trembling. His facial features were almost huddled together because he was too fat. His mouth was like a huge pot, yet it didn’t look too big on his face. In fact, it was quite a small mouth on his giant face...

Big shoulders and fat waist. Hmm. A round tummy. His lower abdomen seemed to be connected with the legs. His shanks were like the elephant’s legs supporting his huge body. Yet he moved fast. It was unbelievable. Ye Xiao couldn’t even imagine it if he didn’t see it in person.

However, after getting down the stairs, he was already sweating profusely.

It seemed the “price” for him to move fast was a bit high!

“Aye ya ya... Lord Feng...” When Ye Xiao was shockingly looking at him, Wan Zhenghao had hurriedly come to him with his fat hands and unhesitatingly held Ye Xiao’s hands. He fervidly shook his hands and said, “Aye ya ya... Brother Feng. Oh no. Lord Feng... Hahaha. I have been looking forward to meeting you these days. Just after a few days, I have lost a lot of weight because I have been waiting for you so eagerly. You really have made me wait with suffering...”

...

A living man will not die for holding urine (活人不会让尿憋死), means there is always a solution. [I never have heard of it before. I just googled it. It isn’t something we will usually say.]

Chapter 102: Gu Jinlong, The Enemy

Ye Xiao only felt that his hands had been fully wrapped with two big fat pieces of meat. Those were definitely the same as the meat of a pig's ass...

Wan Zhenghao's facial features all huddled together with an ebullient smile. The fat on his face was trembling, and his fat belly was quivering. The fat on his shoulder was also shaking, and the meat on his leg was also shaking even after he had stood still for quite a while...

As for his ass... Oh. We better not talk about it...

Ye Xiao saw all of those and his face showed an extremely strange look. He murmured, "You have actually lost your weight these days..."

He felt like there were a million [Cao Ni Horses](#) that were covered by shxt roaring past his mind.

[Now you said you had lost your weight when your are actually fat like this...

What will pigs say about it?]

"Oh... Huo, huo, huo... Manager Wan... Boss Wan... You..." Ye Xiao suddenly stopped. After an instant thought, he raised his left hand and covered his mouth right away. It was Ye Xiao's fastest

action, yet it was still a little late. - Kacha!-

It was the sound of... his chin that was nearly dislocated!

It was true!

It was no exaggeration!

His chin was about to be dislocated!

The Xiao Monarch was experiencing a second life now, but it was his first time to see such a “giant thing”! And the “giant thing” was a person...

So he couldn't help but to open his mouth when he saw the man.

So... When he rapidly opened his mouth, he almost disgraced himself by breaking his own chin. It was lucky that he stopped his mouth so quickly...

Wan Zhenghao was truly the first person who could actually make the Xiao Monarch act ludicrously like this!

Ye Xiao hurriedly held his chin, yet he still spoke out some words. But he had spoken with unclear articulation and made a ‘heh heh heh’ sound along with a ‘huo huo huo’...

However, it really wasn't his fault. Wan Zhenghao's size had really broken the limits of his imagination and had truly gone too far from being a human!

Ye Xiao dared to bet that even if Wan Zhenghao knew nothing about martial arts, he could stay unharmed being punched by a superior cultivator at the Grade of Renyuan! It would at most hit in his fat, but definitely not his bones!

Ye Xiao smiled and vigorously drew back his right hand.

When his hand got out, he felt his hand was oily, as if it was covered in grease.

That was so embarrassing! Extremely embarrassing!

"Hahahaha..." Wan Zhenghao didn't notice anything wrong at all and laughed, "Please, Brother Feng. To the upper floor... Hahaha. I have some good tea that had been kept for thousands of years... I like making friends very much. Especially with some brilliant people like you. It is truly much better after seeing you than hearing about you. Hahaha. I wish for a good friend like you..."

He wouldn't stop talking after he opened his mouth

[Some thousands of years old tea... That must have become dust.]

Ye Xiao found that he completely had no chance to talk back.

Wan Zhenghao was an experienced man. Apparently, he clearly knew how his fat image would shock people, so he laughed and said, “Everything is good about me, except my weight. Haha. Well, there is really nothing I can do about it. No matter what I eat, it will put on my weight. I have tried going on a hunger strike, but it didn’t work. I got fat like always. So I just keep it as what it is. I wonder to what extent my body could grow fatter...”

He was stepping on the stairs and the stairs squeaked. Apparently, the stairs were overwhelmed.

“... Gradually, my body became what it is now...” They finally got to the second floor and Wan Zhenghao was gasping, “... Well it was just about 700 kilograms. Forgive my jeer.”

“Awesome!”

Ye Xiao finally got a chance to talk, so he spoke out a word with sincerity. That was the truth of what he felt in his heart.

[700 kilograms...]

“No. It is not a jeer. I have to say that in every area, there is always a brilliant person. Every profession produces its own leading authority... In the profession of ‘weight’, I believe you must be the No. 1 in the history! You deserve it!”

Ye Xiao spoke with sincerity.

He was not flattering. He was expressing his true feeling. There were only things that you couldn't imagine, not things that couldn't be possible. Nothing was too strange in the world!

[A man can actually be so fat... That is truly an oddity in the history.]

Wan Zhenghao laughed, "What a shame that the royal court never considered "weight" as a test to recruit new members. Otherwise, I could defeat anyone in the whole world and the entire history!"

"By just a smile, you could certainly win!" Ye Xiao was admiring.

They were chatting while walking to the tea room. In the tea room, Ye Xiao didn't release his caution. Instead, he became cautious to a great extent.

Because he saw a man.

A middle-aged man who had three streams of black facial hair fluttering in front of his chest. His face was emaciated, and his body was strong. He was dressed in cyan like a man from the heavens!

He looked like a middle-aged man that meant no harm to anybody!

At the moment, the man was looking at Ye Xiao with a smile. He gently greeted Ye Xiao first, “Mr. Feng?”

Ye Xiao lowered his sight looking at the chair. And then he walked to it and sat down. He looked up again and asked, “And this is...”

His face looked calm, yet his eyes were filled with confusion.

In fact, his heart was not peaceful at all!

Ye Xiao knew this man!

They knew each other well!

It was not “Ye Xiao” who knew this man; it was the Xiao Monarch!

It had only been three and a half months since Ye Xiao met this guy the last time!

Three and a half months ago, the man was among those guys who made the Xiao Monarch fall!

In the ten special disciples of the Sunlight Sect which was one of the three factions, he was the No. 9. He was the Breeze Sword God, Gu Jinlong.

A “Long” among humans from “Gu” to “Jin”. His sword was like the breeze, blowing the water of the lake; the breeze would leave no trace, yet people die because of it.

Ye Xiao couldn't imagine, not even in dreams, that he would meet with an enemy from his previous life in this world!

A man with such a strong cultivation capability was actually in the Land of Han-Yang!

Now Ye Xiao was finally sure about one thing. It was something that he had been thinking about since he had come to this world. Now he was sure. There had to be a channel that was linking the Qing-Yun Realm and the Land of Han-Yang which allowed people to go through!

The channel was most possibly controlled by... the three factions in the Qing-Yun Realm!

Maybe the three factions had their own channels and they just kept it a secret.

As Ye Xiao knew, Gu Jing-Long was too strong to be in this world because the Land of Han-Yang wouldn't be able to hold such a powerful cultivator!

He was a superior cultivator of the Dao Origin Stage!

There were only three grades in the Land of Han-Yang!

They were the Mortal Origin Stage, Earth Origin Stage and Sky Origin Stage!

The Grandmaster Levels of Sky Origin Stage were the limits of this world!

Cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm were in three higher grades than those three grades.

They were the Spirit Origin Stage, Dream Origin Stage and Dao Origin Stage.

There were nine levels in each grade, and the gaps between two close levels were enormous!

So it wasn't hard to understand that Gu Jinlong was... an extremely horrible existence in this world!

It would be overstating to call him a god.

Well, such a man was Ye Xiao's enemy!

Now he was in front of Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao tasted the tea and swallowed it. He had swallowed his hatred and hostility that was raising in his heart along with the tea.

He buried the hatred and hostility deep in his heart without showing a single sign!

The Xiao Monarch, in his best moment, could easily kill Gu Jinlong.

However... if Gu Jinlong wanted to kill Ye Xiao now, he wouldn't even need to breath.

He would only need to stare at Ye Xiao and Ye Xiao would just die!

That was a gargantuan gap between their strengths! How could Ye Xiao not be cautious?

“My name is Gu. I am a bit older than you, I am afraid. If you don't mind, you can call me Brother Gu.” Gu Jinlong spoke in a casual way. He didn't even show the strength that was hidden in his heart. He just used some simple words, and that could get him close to Ye Xiao.

He was now like an elegant gentleman in front of Ye Xiao.

He showed no threat at all.

“Brother Gu.” Ye Xiao smiled and said, “You are an elegant man. I admire you.”

Gu Jinlong smiled gently, “I have heard the great name of your for a long time. Now that I have the great opportunity to see you in person, I have to say you are truly young and talented.”

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, “I am just wasting my youth. That’s all.”

They had spoken some formalities and stopped saying anything useless. Ye Xiao didn’t know the purpose of Gu Jinlong, so he didn’t want to recklessly say anything wrong. The less he spoke, the less mistakes he would make. Gu Jinlong was trying to be mysterious, so he didn’t want to talk much either.

However, Ye Xiao figured out something that was rather important at the moment.

Wan Zhenghao, who had been speaking with fervor and assurance just now, was sitting on the chair behaving well. He was sitting on the main chair, yet he looked extremely restrained. Under his calm expression, there was a sense of profound fear.

After some formulaic greetings, Gu Jinlong gave Wan Zhenghao a hint with a glance. If Ye Xiao hadn’t noticed the interaction between them, he might not be able to notice the glance.

Wan Zhenghao started to laugh, “Hahahahaha.” His face was still quivering as he said, “Brother Feng, the supreme dan beads you brought here last time... are really awesome stuff. Master Gu is here for that... I wonder if Brother Feng... Heh, heh...”

Ye Xiao smiled and spoke blandly, “The supreme dan beads are difficult to make. My master is having an ablution and making preparations for creating the second group of dan beads.”

...

Cao Ni Horse (草泥^马): In fact, it is alpaca. In China people call it Cao Ni Horse and it sounds exactly the same with ‘Fuck Your Mother (操你妈)’. Just use your imagination...

(A ‘Chinese Dragon’ among humans from the ‘past’ to the ‘present’)

Chapter 103: A Super Big Lie

Wan Zhenghao and Gu Jinlong looked at each other.

['My master']

Ye Xiao's words contained so much information.

That meant Feng Zhiling didn't have the ability to make supreme dan beads. Only the guy hidden behind him could make it.

And that guy must be a superior master of making dan beads!

Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao had thought about it earlier. Feng Zhiling looked much older than Ye Xiao, but he was only about 30 years old. A 30 years old man could hardly be a dan-making grandmaster. So in their opinion, it was rather reasonable that there was a master behind Feng Zhiling!

Wan Zhenghao laughed and probingly asked, "Brother Feng, I wonder... Except Pei-Yuan dan beads, what kind of dan beads with a supreme level can you master make?"

Ye Xiao stayed quiet for a while and then raised his head immediately. It seemed like he had made a decision about something and said, "I have a pleasant relation with Ling-Bao Hall in the previous cooperation. Since Brother Feng has asked me this question, I think I should just give you the truth."

Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao were both spirited.

They thought Feng Zhiling was about to tell them something very important.

"My master started making dan beads from last year." Ye Xiao's first sentence had stunned them both.

[What? Last year?

That means in only one year, his master successfully made supreme dan beads?

What is this bullshxt? Truly bullshxt? Or seriously bullshxt?]

"You may think I am lying or raising his stature, but I can only say that it is the truth. The supreme dan beads are the perfect proof!" Ye Xiao spoke.

"Please go on." They nodded and asked.

"My master is 397 years old now. He was in the ninth level of the Earth Origin Stage. He could only go this far as his talent is limited. He is about to pass away within the next three to five years."

Ye Xiao continued, "My master was born in a family of dan-makers. He has heard and seen a lot of dan-making since he was born. However, his father only let him read books about dan

beads. Even though he has kneeled and begged for practice, his father had never allowed him to."

While Ye Xiao spoke of that, Gu Jinlong actually frowned.

Gu Jinlong didn't want to talk, but he wanted to figure out something.

So Wan Zhenghao became the perfect person to ask for him.

He asked, "Why is that?"

Ye Xiao answered, "Please be patient. Listen to me carefully."

Wan Zhenghao shut his mouth right away.

"After that, during my master's first dozens of years, he had read all the books about dan beads that could be found in the world. After he had done so, he thought he could finally practice what he had learned. Yet his father still didn't allow him to. Instead, his father made an extremely harsh request which was totally unbelievable."

"What was it? How was it extremely harsh and unbelievable?" Wan Zhenghao asked in just the right time.

"It was... to recite all those books without a single mistake. All of them! No mistake on even one single word!" Ye Xiao said, "If you

get in our sect, the first thing you should do is reciting books. We have collected the biggest amount of books in the Land of Han-Yang. We hardly missed any book. All our books... If you put them together, they could nearly filled up several houses... I have been in our sect for nearly 20 years, and I am still unable to finish all the books. My master's father requested him to recite all those books without a single mistake being made! That was as difficult as reaching the sky!"

Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao both sucked in a deep breath. They really couldn't understand why this father wanted to do such a thing.

"And then?" Wan Zhenghao asked.

"And then my master actually went on reading and reciting... Before he could recite all those books, his father passed away. Before his father died, his father told him, 'I have been working on making dan beads for my whole life. I am already a dan-making grandmaster in people's eyes. There won't be many people who can be better than me. However, I am the only one who knows that I am not qualified. I am very, very far from it.'

In the area of dan-making, there is no limitation. I have only walked one or two steps on a path that is a hundred miles long.'

It is such a pity that I figured out the truth when I was already too old... It is that when you start with it, you have to calm your heart! If you don't, your heart will hold you behind!"

Gu Jinlong was so concentrated when Ye Xiao spoke of that.

[Maybe, the biggest secret about the supreme dan beads are just hidden in this story.]

"My master's father spoke in a serious voice, 'Now I am not reading those books for learning; I am... looking for the mistakes in those books.'"

"And the way I make dan beads has become a certain pattern. It has become a part of my habit. I can no longer change anything about it. So I am unable to make the legendary supreme dan beads all my life!"

"There are millions of books about dan beads in the world. They all have their significances. However, every book contains the personality of the author... If you learn by following one's book, you are never gonna do better than the author. You can't have the experiences and understandings of a grandmaster! So you are never going to be outstanding by learning from others."

Gu Jinlong nodded slowly.

[That is so true. That is actually the truth amongst the truths.]

It was like the a master and two disciples practicing the same sword-play. They could never show it the same way. This was the same situation.

Three men playing the same art of sword. They were actually executing three different sword-plays!

Even though they made the same movements, the power and the inner spiritual influences would be completely different.

Ye Xiao continued.

"His father made a final request to my master before he died, 'I want you... to fully understand every word in those books after you successfully recite all of them. You have to know everything about every way to make dan beads. After then...

After that, you throw away all those books and only keep what you have experienced all these years. Figure out your own way of making dan beads. Create a brand new way for the dan-makers!

Maybe you can do it; maybe you can not... However... That is the only way you should proceed in the area of dan-making...'

And then after he finished his last words, he died."

"What words?" Wan Zhenghao asked.

"He said... 'If one day, you have figured out your own way and you are sure that it only belongs to you, you can start bringing it into practice! If one day you produce some supreme dan beads... You come to my tomb, burn incenses for me and tell me about your success.'"

Ye Xiao finished that with a few sighs.

Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao were both immersed in the story, so they sighed too.

[That's the story...]

"After that, my master kept all those words in his mind. All these years, he has been working on it and searching for some materials in the mountain. During those 300 years, he had never touched the dan stove ever."

"Until last year... My master had finally figured out something. He laughed three times on the top of a mountain, and then he started making dan beads! He started to make the first group of dan beads in his life!"

"My master was 395 and a half years old that day!"

"I had been following my master for 18 years in total. I can still vividly remember that he said..." Ye Xiao acted like he was lost in the memory and spoke gently, "... 'After these fascinating four hundred years, the little boy has gone. My eyes are dim-sighted now when I look at my life, but I have never changed my mind about making dan beads. There will always be a way out at the end of my rope; when it shows up, it will open all the gates to the night heavens. My life of dan-making has started today, and I will stick to it until I die!'"

Wan Zhenghao and Gu Jinlong sighed together again.

People in the Earth Origin Stage was never able to live longer than 400 years!

It was a rule that was set by the gods that people in the Earth Origin Stage could live no more than 400 years.

[Feng Zhiling's master had finally come to his great awakening when he was 395 and a half years old. In fact, he could only lived for four and a half years!

Several hundred years' hard works were only for the last four and a half years!

Though the glory only happened in such a short time, it should be imperishable forever!]

"That is the story... of the supreme dan beads... The process of making those dan beads has lasted nearly 400 years, hasn't it? The difficulty in making supreme dan beads is truly unbelievable!" Gu Jinlong was moved.

"It could be longer than that." Ye Xiao spoke, "If my master didn't figure out the true art of dan-making, the 400 years would only mean nothing!"

"Oh? the true art of dan-making?" Gu Jinlong asked.

Gu Jinlong must be casting his greedy eyes on the secret dan-making method. Usually, a man like Gu Jinlong would never show such curiosity. However, what Ye Xiao had said had truly motivated his curiosity. Even though Gu Jinlong was usually calm and steady, he couldn't help speaking out all of it.

Ye Xiao didn't feel offended at all and replied gently, "The secret that my master has figured out is only one word."

"One word? What word?" The two of them both asked.

"Silence!" Ye Xiao spoke peacefully.

"Silence?" The two of them looked at each other. Apparently, both of them were surprised by the answer.

"That's right. One word. Silence." Ye Xiao sipped some tea. He seemed to be thirsty after speaking for so long. He then continued, "After fully understanding everything in those books, my master finally figured out that... In fact, the ways that those dan-making masters make dan beads were all right. They were reaching the same goal by different routes. That's all."

...

Chapter 104: The True Art of Dan-Making!

"All of them were right..."

Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao were both surprised by the conclusion.

[I have been listening carefully for such a long time and that's what you are telling me?] They both nearly spat out blood at the same time.

[The man has spent his whole life and the conclusion for all his works turns out to be... that the others are all right... What the hell you are working on then?]

"Please be patient." Ye Xiao smiled blandly.

"However, the reason why all those dan-making masters could reach the outstanding range was because they weren't calm enough. They had thought too much." Ye Xiao spoke, "My master has been doing one thing in his life, so his heart is pure. There is no impurity."

"After that, my master stuck to the path he had discovered. He first burnt some incenses to calm himself down for three days. And then he undertook ablution for three days. After that, he started to make dan beads with his sincere heart filled with respect..."

"That was the first time in his life he tried making dan beads, his

first time touching a dan stove."

"What's the outcome?" It was Gu Jinlong asking. He couldn't pretend to be indifferent and casual anymore.

"It didn't go well. He failed." Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "The first time, he failed. The second time, failed... He kept failing, until... The seventeenth time, he successfully made something. Some ordinary Pei-Yuan Dan Beads. However, he just kept trying. After a half year, he was already able to produce some superior dan beads that were capable of producing dan glow!"

"A half year! Dan glow!" Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao looked at each other.

That was as fast as a rocket speeding across the sky for a rookie dan-maker!

"After a year, he could skillfully produce superior dan beads with dan mist." Ye Xiao continued shocking the two men by talking peacefully.

"After another two months, he finally got his first group of supreme dan beads!" It finally exploded all the bedding he had made.

[Fourteen months!

The supreme dan with dan cloud!

From the first day he made dan beads to the day he produced supreme dan!]

They felt like they were dreaming. When they thought about the 400 years hard work, they were speechless at the same time.

Everyone knew about one thing. If a man used his whole life to do only one thing without considering anything else, no matter what he was doing, he would succeed!

By saying "without considering anything else", it truly meant... EVERYTHING! That included eating, drinking, playing, living, traveling and even things between men and women...

It meant full concentration!

They were astonished, but they felt reasonable somehow. [If he didn't succeed after giving up so much... It would be too cruel for him...]

Ye Xiao spoke slowly, "I have witnessed the moment when the supreme dan appeared. It was like the world was shaking!"

"The supreme dan just came out the stove and the cloud was forming around it. The fragrance spread out a hundred miles away, and the whole world was thundering!"

"Anomaly of the world!" Gu Jinlong murmured, "The appearance of supreme dan beads could indeed produce anomaly of the world..."

"I will never forget that day! When the supreme dan showed up, my master looked up to the sky with tears on his face." Ye Xiao said.

"400 years hard work. All for that moment. 'It truly is dan cloud! It is...' How could he not be emotional..." Gu Jinlong looked up and murmured. He looked motivated.

"After my master produced his first group of supreme dan beads, he stopped. He went to his father's tomb and burnt some incenses. He stayed sitting there for ten days. During the ten days, he had spoken nothing." Ye Xiao spoke.

Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao didn't know what to say.

They thought if they were in that situation, they would have said nothing like that too!

Because nothing was needed to be said already.

What could he say to speak out the difficulties he faced during the 400 years?

What could he say to express his lifelong insistence?

"So the secret art of dan-making is simple." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "My master had made a conclusion with several lines... 'Pure heart; pure soul; pure body; pure spirit. No troubles; no seduction. Without distractions, to follow the harmony between man and nature.'"

It is just that simple. The thirty-two words were describing all the secrets of the supreme dan! Everything!"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "I am finished."

"Ah..." Gu Jinlong sighed and spoke, "Pure heart; pure soul; pure body; pure spirit. No troubles; no seduction. Without distractions, to follow the harmony between man and nature... Well said. Well said indeed..."

He shook his head with sorrow and smiled bitterly, "It is all about only several lines to speak, but when it comes to practice... How many in the universe are able to do so?"

At this moment, he gave up what he had been planning.

It turned out he had been planning to do something.

He had planned to capture the dan-maker back to the Qing-Yun Realm to make supreme dan beads for his sect after he took the Cosmic Hades back.

With the help of the powerful resources of his own sect, he believed the dan-maker would soon reach a grandmaster's level.

It was essential for the dan-maker who wanted to improve himself to be skillful. Even if the dan-maker would resist, he would eventually give up and start to make supreme dan beads soon because there were endless resources in front of him!

However, after what Ye Xiao had told him, Gu Jinlong believed everything he said!

So he gave up that plan. If the dan-maker was threatened, how could he still contain the pure heart, the pure soul...? Let alone "without distractions, to follow the harmony between man and nature"... It would be bullshxt...

If the dan-maker's mind had been distracted, even if he was willing to make dan beads for Gu Jinlong, he could never be able to produce supreme dan beads!

So Gu Jinlong thought that it would be just ruining the dan-maker! He decided to let him make his own supreme dan beads, and he could maybe have some from him...

He totally believed in what Ye Xiao had said.

Because what Ye Xiao had told were impossible to make up.

The theory that was mentioned in the story was admirable.

It was enlightening!

Yet he could never have thought that...

The guy in front of him was actually the Xiao Monarch!

The theory Ye Xiao had told was surely true, but it was just a theory. It wasn't even a theory about the art of dan-making.

The story was true, but the main character surely was not Ye Xiao's master. It was his only sworn brother in his previous life. That man was chasing the ultimate art of knife. That theory was the cultivation method he had eventually figured out.

Ye Xiao had just modified the story to a certain extent.

Speaking of Ye Xiao's sworn brother, he was the main reason why Ye Xiao started killing in the Qing-Yun Realm and became the enemy of the three factions... crazily messing up with the three factions!

Of course... if there was truly someone who had been working on dan-making with the way Ye Xiao had told... Well... No matter how long this "someone" could live, he would waste every second of it... It was merely wasting and failing.

To convert the theory of cultivation of the art of knife to the art

of dan-making was absolutely impossible to be successful!

Ye Xiao raised his head and looked at Wan Zhenghao. He sneered and smiled, "I came here only by fits and snatches, yet you are not willing to let me leave now... I have thought a lot and couldn't understand why. The only possibility is that you guys want to know how these supreme dan beads are produced, right? Now I have told you the secret. Are you happy now?"

Wan Zhenghao was a bit embarrassed.

As the owner of the famous Ling-Bao Hall in the Land of Han-Yang, what he was doing was truly a bit embarrassing. Yet he had no choices. The one who could make the call was no longer Wan Zhenghao now!

Ye Xiao said, "Now that I have told you everything. I wonder if I could keep my life... Well, at least I have told you the secret. Even if I will die later, my master's effort will be passed down to the future by you two. It won't be wasted anyway..."

"You are mistaking us, Brother Feng..." Wan Zhenghao hurriedly explained. He kept shaking his hand, "I am not such a despicable man, am I?"

Ye Xiao said, "But it is the supreme dan beads... Everyone wants it..."

Gu Jinlong smiled and said, "Brother Feng, you are telling the

truth. However, even if we wanted the supreme dan beads, we will never use such an ugly way..."

He stopped for a while and then continued, "If you don't mind, Brother Feng... Can your master make any supreme dan beads of some higher-level dan?"

Ye Xiao was surprised and then he said, "It is possible, but as I said, my master might not have the time to do it. Even if he wants to, he may not be able to..."

"I see." Gu Jinlong immediately changed the topic, "Well, one more thing... The reason why we have been a little bit impolite to you today is because of something else."

Ye Xiao was surprised, "Something else?!"

He wasn't pretending to be surprised. He was indeed surprised and cautious at the same time!

He knew about Gu Jinlong deeply.

Gu Jinlong might look well behaved and elegant. He had a good reputation in the world. He was like a representation of the noble men.

But Ye Xiao knew that he was extremely insidious and acrimonious inside.

He might be smiling at the moment, yet the next second, he would draw out his sword and take your life. He had done this so many times before.

There had been many people in the Qing-Yun Realm who had died in the hidden dagger behind his smile. They had never figured out what had truly happened even at the last moment of their life...

...

Chapter 105: Framing the Decree Master!

Gu Jinlong had just reached the 3rd level of the Grade of Daoyuan. He was only a first rate superior cultivation in the Qing-Yun Realm. However, he had played the main role in the battle of hunting the Xiao Monarch.

At the beginning, he had told the Xiao Monarch that he wanted to apologize and he had asked for a negotiation. In fact, he was only trying to get close to the Xiao Monarch and make him put down his guard. Step-by-step, he had led the world-shocking Xiao Monarch fall into the trap.

In that battle, most of the people who had been much better than Gu Jinlong died, yet he himself somehow survived with no wounds although he was the weakest one among them. It could be seen that he was a selfish and cold-hearted person.

If he truly had fought with honor, he would have stood at the front and died under the Xiao Monarch's sword!

However, when the Xiao Monarch was weak and struggling to escape the hunt, he staged his sword into the Xiao Monarch's chest leaving a blood hole.

He had struck only once during the whole battle.

Yet that only strike had badly injured the Xiao Monarch and also kept himself safe off the battle. He truly had shockingly sharp eyes on how to seize the perfect chance!

This man who had been nothing but an ant in Ye Xiao's sight had actually caused the fall of the Xiao Monarch!

Ye Xiao couldn't drop down his cautiousness against such a man who was foxy, malicious, and good at pretending.

Ye Xiao was always a bodacious guy who had faced so many superior cultivators of the three factions without feeling fearful. Yet at the moment when he heard Gu Jinlong said about "something else" which was unexpected, he actually felt a bit nervous. That was something he had never experienced before!

He was still too weak at the moment!

"Oh? There is something else? May I ask what it is?" Ye Xiao was confused.

"It is about the auction..." Gu Jinlong spoke casually, "Brother Feng, you have bought one thing from here... And in fact, it was something I had saved here. As a matter of fact, that was how I helped, invested and supported Wan Zhenghao."

"We had a deal long ago. Once Ling-Bao Hall became successful, I would come back to have it back... Well, it has been a long time, and Wan Zhenghao misunderstood my wish and incidentally sold it out. I know it is inappropriate to say so, but it is extremely important for me..."

Ye Xiao understood what he was talking about right away.

The Cosmic Hades.

Ye Xiao nodded to show understanding to what Gu Jinlong was saying, but in his mind, he had cursed out a million times of “bullshxt”!

[That was an even more hilarious bullshxt...

If it really was yours, I bet you would have kept it with you and treated it like it was your ancestor. How could it be possible that you would give it to Wan Zhenghao? Help? Invest? Support? That is so... Do you really think I am a fool...]

“It was our mistake at the first place. We won’t let you suffer any loss.” Gu Jinlong spoke blandly, “I will return you double the amount of money you spent for it. What do you think?”

[Double?

Ye Xiao immediately cursed all of Gu Jinlong’s families again and again.

Forget about double of the price. Even if you want to return 20 thousand times of the price to me, I won’t let you take a single piece back from me!

That is the Cosmic Hades!

Is it a cabbage to you? Double the price, huh. You truly see me as an ignorant stupid country boy...]

However, he laughed brightly and said, “The first sight of you made me think that you must be a very good friend to me. It is nothing but a piece of treasure. No problem. Well actually, I wonder what exactly is it that you are talking about? To be honest, I have bought many precious treasures in that auction. I have no idea which one are you talking about. Just tell me and I will return it. That’s all. Forget about doubling the price or something. Just see it as a gift from me... Brother Gu, don’t see me as a man who couldn’t even afford giving his friend a gift. I don’t even care about my money in the Ling-Bao Hall. Why would I care about just a piece of treasure.”

Gu Jinlong laughed loudly and said, “Brother Feng is a generous man! Well then, I think I should just be straight. It is the Cosmic Hades I am talking about...” He nervously looked at Ye Xiao and spoke slowly, “It is not a precious thing really... However, it is something that has been passed down from generation to generation in my clan... It had been kept in my family for hundreds of years... Brother Feng, please...”

Gu Jinlong thought that Feng Zhiling was the only source of the supreme dan and his master was about to die soon. Otherwise, he would have torn Feng Zhiling apart after torturing and questioning him until he got the secret of the supreme dan beads.

Gu Jinlong surely wanted the Cosmic Hades, but he also wanted

the supreme dan beads...

That was why he had to be patient and tried to fool Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was suddenly quiet and then he stood up and said, “Wh... wha... what? The Co... Cosm... Cosmic Hades?”

Gu Jinlong was stunned and asked cautiously, “Brother Feng... Is there a problem?”

Ye Xiao suddenly sat back on the chair and spoke, “Why would it be the Cosmic Hades?”

Gu Jinlong frowned and spoke, “What? Anything happened during these days?”

He sounded a bit annoyed already.

“To be honest, Brother Gu, there is a problem indeed... Oh.” Ye Xiao sighed and said, “It is no longer with me now...”

Gu Jinlong frowned and his face was a bit cold already, “Then... Who has it now?”

“I don’t know that guy’s name actually...” Ye Xiao frowned and looked anguished, “I never wanted the Cosmic Hades. I was asked to buy it... That’s why I bidded for it. I had never attended an auction. That’s true. Yet I had heard something about the Cosmic

Hades. I wouldn't want such a useless thing!"

"What was it? Please tell me specifically!" Gu Jinlong realized that things were bad for him, but he stayed patient and went on asking.

"Hmmm. It was... A long time ago, there was this guy visiting my master. He gave my master a variety of precious treasures. Some of them were actually something from outside this world. Those were truly something that could only be found by luck, yet he seemed to care nothing about them. What he gave my master were just enough to make ten group of dan beads. They were perfectly organized... He stated it quite clear to my master that he would only take one dan bead from my master and it had to be a supreme dan bead."

Ye Xiao frowned. He started to make up some story again. This time, he did it much more affluently, "My master didn't accept it at the first place because it was too difficult. Those materials were all extremely precious, so it was very difficult to successfully produce dan beads, let alone supreme dan beads. My master thought that even if he used all those materials, he might fail to make even one supreme dan bead."

"Precious dan beads? What kind of dan beads could make your master feel difficult?" Wan Zhenghao spoke out his question in a perfect moment again...

"It was... well hmmm... Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan." Ye Xiao rolled his eyes to show that he was recalling it so hard.

“What?!” Gu Jinlong suddenly stood up.

His face turned green, “Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan? Are you sure?”

“Absolutely!” Ye Xiao confirmed, “I had never heard of it, but I wouldn’t forget the name I heard. My master had murmured about it for several months...”

“Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan... What is it?” Wan Zhenghao was confused.

“Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan is something that specially cures the soul wounds... It is a divine medicine of the world!” Gu Jinlong’s face was dark and he said, “It is a level 7 dan... Even in the Qing-Yun Realm, it is among the top-ranged dan. If it is also some supreme dan bead, only those who have reached the fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage would need it for their soul wounds. If it is some supreme Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan, people below the fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage who have eaten it will die with their souls broken into pieces and then vanish...”

“Who exactly... Who would need such a thing?” Gu Jinlong felt something was wrong about it.

He looked at Feng Zhiling and thought that he looked honest and humble. He thought that Feng Zhiling wouldn’t be able to make up a lie that was so flawless. [Even if he was able to, he couldn’t just make up the name Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan!

Things are not going well... I am afraid.]

“Do you know the guy’s name?” Gu Jinlong frowned.

“I have no idea. He was talking to my master and I was hardly around them.” Ye Xiao acted like he was trying so hard to recall, “Oh right... I have heard my master talk about it once... He was calling the guy... the guy... What [Decree Master](#)? Right, the master!”

He slapped on his leg to show affirmation.

“Decree Master...” Gu Jinlong’s face suddenly turn blue.

In the Qing-Yun Realm, there were no more than six people who was named with “Decree Master”. Any of them was a great figure though! They were someone who had shocked the world!

They were all people that he could never afford messing up with.

Yet he had never heard that these people had been harmed...

“What Decree Master? What does he look like? How tall? His weight? His face? His hair style? His clothes?...” Gu Jinlong asked about twenty questions in one breath.

“Hmm. I have only seen him one or two times. He looked...” Ye

Xiao frowned and rolled his eyeballs. He seemed thinking so hard and described how the Purple Lotus Decree Master looked like bit by bit.

...

In Chinese it is 令主, it can be translated into master, but it turns out the author is using this word specifically. So from now on let's change the Purple Lotus Master to the Purple Lotus Decree Master.

Chapter 106: The Honest Feng Zhiling; Everyone Was Happy?

The more Ye Xiao spoke, the more unsightly Gu Jinlong's face looked.

When Ye Xiao finished, Gu Jinlong finally took a breath out and murmured, "It is him... It is him... He is actually still alive, and he is in this mortal world right now... I should've thought about it... The Decree Master needed the supreme Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan because of his wound. There wouldn't be anybody else who needed it so much..."

His eyes became dull and he looked ahead. He murmured word by word, "The Purple Lotus Decree Master... is actually still alive?"

His face showed that he was slightly fearful.

Ye Xiao clapped his own leg and spoke, "Purple Lotus Decree Master... Right. That must be his name. Brother Gu, do you know this guy?"

Gu Jinlong's face became more unsightly and he stayed quiet.

[Do I know this guy? Are you kidding me? If I know him, that means I am a dead body now!]

"Brother Gu, if you know him, things would be easier. It was him

who asked me to get this bloody Cosmic Hades..." Ye Xiao spoke, "When I brought it back, he took it with him and left right away... Now I am not sure where did it go. If you know this guy, you just need to find him and take the Cosmic Hades back."

Gu Jinlong's face turned dark, and he had been changing plans thousands of times in his mind.

[The Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao, was hunting the Purple Lotus Decree Master. After that, no one had heard anything about how it was concluded. Nobody knew whether the Decree Master was alive or dead... It was known that the Xiao Monarch had wiped out everybody who followed the Purple Lotus Decree Master. I thought he was dead because nobody had heard about him anymore... Well, I am afraid he is alive at the moment. He's just hiding in the Land of Han-Yang to escape the Xiao Monarch.

I think the reason why Ye Xiao wiped out the Decree Master's people was because Ye Xiao got humiliated as he failed to kill the Decree Master...

If Feng Zhiling is being honest, the Purple Lotus Decree Master must have been seriously hurt when he got away from the Xiao Monarch!

It must be true that he needs the supreme Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan... The wound he suffered was some serious wound on his soul. It was truly difficult to recover. It was out of his capability to cure himself.

But why does he want the Cosmic Hades?

I know his personality. If he really wants the Cosmic Hades, he could just break down the whole Ling-Bao Hall and take the Cosmic Hades. It must be an easy job for him like turning over his hand. Yet he didn't do so. He sent a man to buy it. Why he did it this way...

What is he fearing in this mortal world...

Maybe... he was truly hurt too bad... At least he had lost the capability to do it himself.

That means... If I can find him, it will be a piece of cake to kill him and take the Cosmic Hades!]

He thought of all that in his mind in just an instant.

"Brother Feng, don't you have a bit of information about where this guy is? He is my friend. Well because of an incident, my friend was badly injured. Many of our friends think that he must have died. I would have never expected that he is here!"

Gu Jinlong raised his head and looked at Ye Xiao with eyes filled with coldness, while his mouth was talking a monstrous lie. And he was actually talking in a sensitive way.

"Well, I truly don't know." Ye Xiao threw up his hands, "He might be hurt. That's why he acted cautiously and stayed mysteriously.

After giving my master those materials, he took away the Cosmic Hades and never showed up again."

Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "Oh right. Before he left, he had walked around the small valley around my master's residence and pointed on my body two times. It looked like he was setting up some kind of array... Anyway, after that, nobody has ever come near the valley. It is a weird thing."

Gu Jinlong pretended to smile and then he said, "It isn't weird. It is reasonable in fact. The Purple Lotus Decree Master surely has the capability to do so. If he didn't do it, then that would be a weird thing."

In his mind, he was thinking, [It seems that he is afraid that things would go wrong for him, so he set up the great array of spiritual sensation... If I entered it recklessly or try to break it, I will alert him... If he knows somebody is looking for him, he will hide and I will never be able to find him.

For now, he still needs the dan-maker... So the dan-maker is the key of the whole situation. I can't act rashly.

If I make any mistakes... I will lose the supreme dan beads... And I will lose the Cosmic Hades forever. That's the last thing I want to happen.

Do I need to ask my sect for help?]

Things had changed, so he was a bit hesitant.

He knew well about the Cosmic Hades. If he could acquire it on his own... he would become one of the best cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm within a thousand years.

But if people in the high level of his sect discovered it, even if he could get the Cosmic Hades back, he would never have the chance to touch it!

Who would let go of such a unique and precious treasure in the world?

There were a lot of people in his sect that were stronger than him...

So he decided not to let the sect know about it!

Since he wouldn't want the sect to know about this, he had to deal with the Purple Lotus Decree Master himself!

Gu Jinlong took a deep breath when he thought about it.

[I have successfully let the Xiao Monarch get killed. I must be able to take care of the weak Purple Lotus Decree Master, right?]

He made up his mind.

He looked at Feng Zhiling and came up with a plan. He thought that his plan had to depend on this Feng Zhiling... So he smiled and said, "Well... That is a shame... However, it won't matter if my treasure is in my friend's hand... But..."

Ye Xiao comforted him saying, "Perhaps that glacial thing hasn't been used up yet. You don't have to be worried. When I see the guy next time, I will ask him about it for you. He has to come back and ask about the supreme dan beads. Since you are friends, it won't be difficult to make him understand. As long as the treasure is still there, nothing will go wrong."

Gu Jinlong shook his head and said, "No. Please don't do that. I am just guessing that he is my friend. I am not completely sure about it. If I am wrong, I don't want to cause more troubles..."

He thought for a while and said, "How about this. When he go to your master for the dan beads, please inform me. I have to meet him myself... If he is truly my friend, everything will be fine for sure. If not, I will show him my sincerity and ask him about getting my Cosmic Hades back. Please!"

Ye Xiao sneered in mind, [Your sincerity? You must be talking about your sword. To show your sincerity with your sword, you are truly unbelievable.]

Yet he nodded and agreed, "It surely is the perfect solution." He sighed, "The precious treasure that is passed down generation to generation in your family is truly something you can't lose... Oh. What Mr. Wan did was really... Well then. That's it! Don't worry, Brother Gu. I will help you with this!"

He actually criticized Wan Zhenghao again.

Wan Zhenghao was embarrassed.

Gu Jinlong spoke gratefully, "Brother Feng, you are a kind-hearted man. I shall never forget about it! I must pay you back the favor! Many thanks... I have to make good friends with you!"

Ye Xiao nodded and spoke humbly, "Nah... Don't be silly... It is what I should do... Heh, heh, heh. You are being too polite to me..."

Gu Jinlong gave a hint with his eyes and Wan Zhenghao came over hurriedly with a small bag. Wan Zhenghao said, "It is my fault. Here is a small gift. Brother Feng, please accept it."

Ye Xiao pushed the bag away hurriedly and spoke a bit angrily, "You are mistaking me with a philistine man... I am certainly not that kind of person. It is what I should do for a friend... I... I... I can't take it..."

"Friends should share fortunes sometimes..." Gu Jinlong spoke seriously, "Brother Feng, do you look down upon the small gift we want you to have? If you keep resisting it, you are not seeing us as friends."

Speaking of that, his face showed anger. His beard went up showing that he was dissatisfied.

Ye Xiao spoke, "Well then... Since you are so full of kindness, I shall take it then..." He grabbed the bag and put it into his pocket quickly.

So... everyone was happy now.

The tensed situation suddenly got relieved.

They discussed about the details again. Gu Jinlong was afraid that he would arouse Feng Zhiling's suspicious, so he started another topic, "Brother Feng, you just said that your master wasn't unable to make the Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan. He just didn't have much assurance of success. Well then... Does that mean that he could easily produce some slightly high-grade dan in the supreme level?"

Ye Xiao nodded humbly and said, "But I wouldn't agree with that. My master is quite successful in making dan beads. That's true. But dan-making always requires luck. Nothing is absolute in dan-making! For my master, most kinds of dan are not so difficult for him to produce. It is just a little bit difficult to develop them in the supreme level... In fact, I am sure that my master can totally succeed in making some Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan Beads. He just doesn't have the assurance that it would become supreme dan.."

He was saying "MY MASTER IS FRIGGING AWESOME"!

...

Chapter 107: Will I Get Rich Today?

"My master, he really doesn't like challenges... And..." Speaking of this, Ye Xiao sighed.

"What?" Gu Jinlong noticed that Ye Xiao's expression was unusual, so he asked.

"Brother Gu, we are like old friends. You and I are truly congenial. I won't treat you as a stranger. Let me talk honestly." Ye Xiao played sincere.

"Yes, please, Brother Feng." Gu Jinlong acted like he also thought they were like old friends with a bright smile. Ye Xiao frowned and spoke bitterly, "The so called dan-making... Brother Gu, you see, all the masters of dan-making have a great force supporting them. Right? Let's just think about those endless amount of failed dan beads. What are they? They are countless of precious treasures, aren't they?!"

Gu Jinlong nodded and agreed, "Exactly. That's true."

"And what is the price for all those wasted treasures? They are rare. And even if they are normal, it will still have a cost to collect them all, right? It needs money to buy them, right? Me and my master, how can we afford all those materials?"

Ye Xiao was upset.

"It is hard especially for my master. He has been keeping his purity so that he can produce the supreme dan beads. He doesn't want to meet people. He doesn't want to get into the society. He doesn't want to love a woman... He will rather die than become a dan-maker in the big sects. How can he possibly get supply for himself?"

While Ye Xiao was speaking, Gu Jinlong nodded.

"So... to produce some supreme dan beads, dan-makers might have to give up faster improvements with their capability! A dan-maker wants to improve, so he needs massive amount of materials that are offered by the powerful sects... Only with countless materials can the dan-makers produce more and more dan beads... But if he wants to produce supreme dan beads, he has to stay away from the martial world..."

"That is the main reason why all the so called 'masters of dan-making' have never truly achieved the pure top range!"

Ye Xiao sighed.

"It is a serious contradiction... A contradiction that can never be solved..." Gu Jinlong sighed too.

Because of what Ye Xiao just said, Gu Jinlong completely lost faith on what he had been thinking in mind.

"So..." Ye Xiao smiled bitterly, "My master had no other choice,

so he only made Pei-Yun Dan. He couldn't make other kinds of dan because we don't have enough materials, or because..."

Ye Xiao suddenly humphed and spoke proudly, "If the materials were enough, Firm Spirit Dan, Spirit Gathering Dan, Bone Ablutionary Dan, Mai Converting Dan, Limit-breaking Dan, Earth Essence Dan, Cyan Cloud Dan, Sky Vessel Dan, Five Element Dan, Seven Emotion Dan, Spirit Cutting Dan, even the Nine-rolled Golden Dan... are all easy jobs for my master. When he becomes practiced enough, he can even produce the supreme Nine-rolled Golden Dan..."

Ye Xiao had just named out over seventy names of different kinds of dan from lower grade to higher grade. Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao were surprised with lights in their eyes. It was like they were watching the most precious treasures in the world!

"Really?" Wan Zhenghao asked hurriedly.

"Humph!" Ye Xiao smiled and took out a purple jade bottle. He spoke blandly, "You should know that not only Pei-Yuan Dan can be developed to the supreme level... Brothers, look... Tell me what this is?"

Gu Jinlong seriously took over the bottle and opened it. Suddenly, a thick white cloud rushed out and then completely covered his face.

Gu Jinlong had his sensations filled with a certain comfort that seeped deep into his bones.

A dan bead shining in golden glow actually flew out and stayed in the air. It was rolling slowly and shining brightly!

"... The Bo... Bone Ablutionary Dan!" Gu Jinlong's neck was trembling, and he spoke like he had difficulty in speaking. His mind blanked out as he looked straight at the dan cloud permeating in the air.

"Dan cloud... It truly is dan cloud..." Wan Zhenghao looked around the cloud and mist in the room. He was astonished. It was like he was watching a gold mountain coming to him.

"That's right. My master only used the minimum amount of materials he had to produce this supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead!" Ye Xiao smiled proudly.

The next moment, he casually took over the bottle from Gu Jinlong and put the supreme dan bead back into the bottle. After that, he sealed the bottle.

Looking at the way Ye Xiao did that, Gu Jinlong and Wan Zhenghao's face quivered.

[How can you be so rude to the supreme dan bead? Do you want to break it?]

Gu Jinlong's eyes lit up with feverous glow.

[The Supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead!

I just can't believe this is happening to me. We truly do not know what we will get to in our lives!]

Gu Jinlong had been cultivating for so many years. He was truly an experienced and farseeing man. Even though he wasn't able to match the Xiao Monarch's prowess, he was still better than all the residents in the Land of Han-Yang. However, even he himself had never seen such a treasure, not even in the Qing-Yun Realm!

He had seen too much of Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads. The Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads for him were something that if it dropped to the floor from his hand, he would never want to bow and pick it up!

However, as of this moment, he had actually seen a Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead of the supreme level!

If there were twin brothers, who were exactly the same in their mental and physical conditions, and one of these twins ate a normal Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead, he would eventually reach the Dream Origin Stage in his life. And, if the other one ate the Supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead, then he would reached the ninth level of the Dao Origin Stage and would even have the chance to break through the limit of the Qing-Yun Realm!

That was the difference between supreme dan beads and normal dan beads!

A difference like heaven and earth!

Gu Jinlong didn't need any Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads anymore as he was stronger than that now. However... if he could use the supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads to raise a group of genius followers... he could certainly become the head of the Sunlight Sect in the future!

When all the strongest disciples in the sect were his followers, the whole sect would beg him to be the hierarch even if he didn't want to!

[...and if Feng Zhiling's master is truly able to produce the Supreme Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan Beads... then the other kind of supreme dan...]

Gu Jinlong's eyes were turning brighter and brighter while he was thinking about it!

He was filled with impatience.

As for now, Feng Zhiling might be more important than the Cosmic Hades in Gu Jinlong's mind!

"Brother Feng! Brother Feng..." The fat on Wan Zhenghao's giant body was

"dancing". He came to Ye Xiao with a face adorned with a fake smile and adulation, "The Supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead. I

will bu... buy it from you... I will sell it in the auction. Tell me a price? Give me a number and I will never bargain!"

Ye Xiao looked at this big boss of the Ling-Bao Hall and felt truly speechless at the moment.

[I am just showing off. Who told you I am selling it?

This one is for me, all right? There are only two of this, and one of them is already taken by Song Jue. Now this one is saved for myself. I don't even have one for my girl. How can I sell it to you?!

Well, if I have more in the future, maybe I will consider selling some of them. But at the present, you can just give it up!]

"Shut up!" Gu Jinlong shouted angrily, "Such priceless treasure! How dare you use the word 'buy' on it? You are desecrating such a sacred treasure! Didn't you hear what Brother Feng said... He only has one! How can you make him feel difficult like this?"

Wan Zhenghao was terrified that he failed to find a word to speak.

"You have wasted all those years you have lived. How childish! How can you take good charge of Ling-Bao Hall with this!" Gu Jinlong shouted at Wan Zhenghao.

[You fool! Why can't you be patient... You are acting to in a rush. If Feng Zhiling felt alarmed about us, what then? Apparently, we

cannot take him down by force. We have to use strategy. You are truly ignorant!]

"That... That is something... something like a gold mountain..." Wan Zhenghao spoke like he was sobbing.

He was truly heartbroken at the moment.

He was like looking at a gold mountain, but unable to do anything about it.

As a businessman, Wan Zhenghao was nearly freaked out by that feeling...

"Brother Feng, in fact... The problem with the materials is quite easy to solve." Gu Jinlong spoke blandly and looked at Ye Xiao with sincerity that he had never shown before in his eyes.

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly, "Easy?! How?! You see, Brother Gu. First of all, we need many kinds of treasures that could be used as a material to produce the dan beads. Any of them could be rare and priceless. How can it be easy to collect them? Second, to develop the level of the dan beads during the refinement, it requires not only the capability of the dan-maker, but also a way to keep the spiritual qi from getting out of the dan beads. To keep the spiritual qi from getting out of the dan beads, it requires a lot of spiritual jades. The higher the level of the dan beads we want, the higher the level of spiritual jades we need. We will need to use up a huge amount of spiritual jades to get it done!"

"After all, it needs a massive amount of manpower, materials and money to solve the problem that you think is easy to solve."

Ye Xiao sighed, "Me and my master... We are men out of the social world... How can we possibly get that much resources?"

While speaking, he was looking at Gu Jinlong with eyes full of shame. In his heart, he was thinking, [Well, well... Despite of all the troubles I have today, maybe I can get rich today?

For now, Gu Jinlong... is quite a wealthy man as I see...]

...

Chapter 108: You Are Rich? I Am Rich!

"... So we need to urgently find all the materials we need and keep calm and peaceful at the same time... These are just two things that won't go together. It is just impossible." Ye Xiao turned emotional.

Gu Jinlong smiled and said, "No, no, no. I think you are wrong about it, Brother Feng. These two things are fine together. It is very possible to go on both sides. In fact, it is quite easy to achieve them both at the same time."

"What? How could that be possible?" Ye Xiao widely open his eyes acting like he couldn't understand and spoke, "Oh... Brother Gu, please. Tell me how I can do both of them at the same time."

Gu Jinlong's face looked even nicer and he spoke gently, "Brother Feng, you are just too uprightly thinking. Why don't you think about it in another aspect? Look. The person who makes the dan beads is your master... He surely doesn't care where you get the materials from. He only needs to stay calm and peaceful to make his dan beads. Right?"

Ye Xiao acted confused, "Yes... It is the basic rule... But..."

"No. No 'but'." Gu Jinlong stopped him, "Things are much easier then... Only if you work with me together, Brother Feng. You will get all those materials easily..."

"Work with you?" Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes acting like he

couldn't understand him and said.

"Yes, that's right. Together." Gu Jinlong spoke sincerely, "You see. Those dan beads your master made are all priceless treasures. All cultivators want them badly... To be frank, I need a massive amount of dan beads with upper grade and fine quality. I will take all the dan beads that contain dan mist and dan cloud... I will provide all the materials and spiritual jades that are needed during the dan-making process. No matter how many it requires, I have no problem about it. All the materials will be handed to you and you give them to your master..."

Ye Xiao acted like he was stunned, "That... Well... That is..."

Gu Jinlong continued, "I think this is a perfect solution to solve all the problems. Your side and my side, we all get benefits. I can get the some fine upper-grade dan beads and your master can have his chance to do what he really wants to do..."

"Besides, I will additionally give you some money as a reward for your hard work..." Gu Jinlong said, "If you worry that this money will contaminate your pure heart, you can also choose to get some treasures, some dan beads or anything rare that you want instead of money... Please don't be hesitate. I can easily get this kind of things for you."

"As long as you promise to work with me, you can get whatever you want." Gu Jinlong said blandly, "Even if you want to be the monarch of this world... it will be a possible thing."

Ye Xiao was stunned. He truly didn't know what to say at the moment.

In fact, he was thinking that his acting skill was truly improved like rushing out a thousand miles within a day.

He actually acted as an honest and humble middle-aged man in a wonderful way.

He surely knew about the little scheme in Gu Jinlong's head.

[What a good scheme. You actually want to exchange the dan beads with the materials. You just want to get a best deal for yourself. To offer only the materials and get the products including the supreme dan beads. And my 'master' will become your free worker...

You are really good at scheming.]

If all the dan beads went to Wan Zhenghao, they would just bring him a lot of money. If they were given to Gu Jinlong, even if they were only Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads, that would be far more than enough for him to develop most of his followers into superior cultivators.

If things went that way, the Sunlight Sect would become the most powerful force in the Qing-Yun Realm.

There would be no more three factions in the Qing-Yun Realm.

There will only be one great faction - the Sunlight Sect.

"How about it?" Gu Jinlong looked at Ye Xiao. His voice was steady and calm, but inside his mind, he was a bit nervous at the moment.

[This little fool doesn't know the value of the supreme dan beads at all... I don't think I will fail in fooling you with my marvelous experience and skills.]

"Brother Gu, I understand it. I am absolutely fine with it... But my master will certainly be suspicious..." Ye Xiao hesitated and said, "The sources of the materials, my master will ask about that for sure..."

Gu Jinlong thought, [Yes! This moron has been motivated. As long as I can solve this little problem that he's concerned with, this deal will be done.]

Gu Jinlong was highly spirited. He was extremely happy and spoke gently, "Brother Feng, you are truly an honest man. In fact, if you don't tell your master the truth, he won't get to know it, right? Maybe you can tell him this... The first group of supreme dan beads had brought you a huge amount of money... One dan bead was sold with the price of dozens of millions of silver bars... And all the materials you give him are bought by using the money you got... That will absolutely let your master feel good about it."

Ye Xiao rolled his eyeballs.

[The price is suddenly raised ten times in your story.

I am afraid that you are a better liar than me.]

Ye Xiao acted worried, "That may be a good reason. But I am afraid there is a mistake in it."

Gu Jinlong thought, [This guy is not completely a moron after all. He is obviously asking for more benefits for himself by saying that.] However, he became more interested so he tried harder, "Brother Feng, you see... Your master has spent nearly all his life to study the art of dan-making, yet now he has such a silly problem having no materials to produce the supreme dan beads... I think you surely can feel the pain in his heart, can't you?"

"Your master is feeling his life passing everyday. Even though he has the best dan-making skill in the world, he can only look at the empty stove and do nothing.

Such great skill has been only used several times and only to produce some Pei-Yuan Dan Beads... That is truly a waste of preciousness. It is a huge loss for the whole Land of Han-Yang... If your master dies namelessly, Brother Feng... you will be the sinner of the whole world."

Gu Jinlong spoke grievously. He had apparently raised the meaning of this subject to a level of the whole world. Ye Xiao would become the sinner of the whole world if he didn't agree with Gu Jinlong.

Ye Xiao had abused all of Gu Jinlong's families in his mind, yet he showed sorrow on his face and said, "That's true. Of course I know it well. I am actually suffering inside my heart..."

[You are just a moron.] Gu Jinlong sneered in mind, but he acted like he was empathizing with Ye Xiao, "Yes. As his disciple, you are like his own son. Looking at your master dying slowly without achieving what he should have, the pain in your heart is something only you can understand..."

"However, it is different now." Gu Jinlong pointed himself and spoke proudly, "You got me now. There won't be any difficulty for you."

"Because with my help, all your concerns will be solved once and for all." Gu Jinlong got emotional and spoke seriously, "Brother Feng, even though you need to lie to your master... Don't you want you master to have some happy days in the last years of his life? Won't it be your lifelong regret if you fail to take this opportunity for your master? If you can help your master leave a legend for himself in this world, you are helping him build a marvelous accomplishment, aren't you?"

"The long lasting glory. The enduring legend of dan-making. The myth of the cloud and sky."

Gu Jinlong spoke in a deep voice.

Ye Xiao's face turned red because of his excitement. He nodded heavily and spoke quiveringly, "That's right! That's what he

deserves!"

He acted like he had been highly motivated by what Gu Jinlong said. It was like he was shameful, regretful, helpless and hopeful all at the same time. He nodded again and spoke loudly, "That's it! To help my master achieve this glory and become the enduring legend of the world, I will do anything.

I, Feng Zhiling, will do whatever it takes, and whatever I do, it must be worth it!"

Gu Jinlong showed a smile on his face with satisfaction and confidence.

[The moron has finally been fooled by me...

Getting this thing done so easily, I, Gu Jinlong, am really going to be rich.]

But he didn't know that in Ye Xiao's mind, things were totally different.

[My acting skills are really in a god's level. Look at the stupid man. He has already been fooled badly by me, yet he is so happy about it. What a moron.

Getting this thing done so easily, I, Ye Xiao, am really going to be rich this time...]

"You and I, we are aiming for the same direction. We should work together to build the enduring legend of dan-making... Do you have any other concerns about this, Brother Feng?" Gu Jinlong was so confident. He knew that this thing was confirmed. He didn't expect he could be so lucky to get the Cosmic Hades and get some supreme dan beads at the same time.

It was like a wonderful dream to him.

"Hmm... I am not underestimating you, Brother Gu, but I wonder how many spiritual jades could you provide? How many precious medicines? How many priceless treasures? I just need to have a rough plan in my mind." Ye Xiao swallowed and acted like he had made up his mind on this.

"Heh, heh. Brother Feng, it is normal that you have doubts on this. Well, what I can do, I'll leave that to your imagination. I can only give you a promise. No matter how many you want, I can give you all."

Gu Jinlong spoke blandly.

...

Chapter 109: Sugarplum Before Serious Cooperation

"No matter how many I want..." Ye Xiao sucked in a deep breath and said, "What if I say... I need ten millions pieces of spiritual jade, one million pieces of jade crystal, a hundred thousand pieces of spiritual medicine and ten thousand pieces of rare medical materials... Can you do it?"

Basically, he was over claiming. All those stuffs he just said were worth of a huge amount of money that was more than enough to buy a small kingdom in the Land of Han-Yang.

Gu Jinlong was totally calm. He looked at Ye Xiao blandly and said, "Absolutely. As long as you are truly able to take them all, I don't have any problem with it... In fact, you can even ask for more as long as your master can handle it well."

"Wow!"

Ye Xiao acted like he was seriously stunned. In his mind, he was shouting out "wow" because he thought he was going to be super rich this time.

Wan Zhenghao was shocked and didn't know what to say.

[Why didn't I know he is so wealthy?]

He just got to know that his backer was so formidable.

He had thought that Gu Jinlong was just a powerful superior cultivator from out of this world with marvelous cultivation capabilities, but he had never thought that he had such abundant resources.

Only Ye Xiao knew everything clearly. What he had just asked were indeed a huge amount of wealth in the Land of Han-Yang, yet it was never a big deal for the Sunlight Sect in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Well, when talking about 'never a big deal', we are talking about the Sunlight Sect, not Gu Jinlong himself though.

Gu Jinlong was acting calmly and generously, but if he was asked to give out all these stuffs right now... he would never be able to do it; it would be harder than having him tear off his own skin.

It was a nation-level amount of money after all. As a third-level superior cultivator of the Dao Origin Stage, although he did have that much money, it would break him to give it out at once.

He smiled with his eyes half-closed, "Brother Feng, you and me, we are good friends who have the consensus now, but all that we are talking about are based on your master's wonderful dan-making capability. I want some dan beads and you want to show your piety to your master... So I think we need to be frank at the beginning. If your master falls down... Heh heh. Our deal should be shut right away. What do you think?"

Ye Xiao answered nicely, "Absolutely. A deal is a deal; the fellowship is merely fellowship. It is a reasonable concern as we are talking about the business. All I want is for my master to have some happy time before he pass away. If my master dies someday, I will stay away from the martial world and devote myself to the art of dan-making myself... About our deal, I won't be willing to go on with it myself."

He spoke with a face full of sanctity and righteousness, "How can my master's wonderful accomplishment stop in my hands. If there is another person who can make supreme dan beads other than my master, I wish it can be me. It can only be me."

Gu Jinlong spoke with a face full of respect, "Brother Feng, I have faith on you. You will succeed."

In his mind, he was actually thinking, [I can't really underestimate anything. Give this guy sometime, he may get some great achievement someday. Besides, he is the only disciple of his master. Maybe he truly will be able to produce some supreme dan beads in the future.

Maybe he will never make any supreme dan beads, but it is very possible that he can make dan beads with dan mist or dan pattern. Those are precious dan beads too. It costs far less in this world than in the Qing-Yun Realm after all... Maybe I should keep a good relationship with this guy.

He is an honest guy. I only need to give him some [sugarplums](#)

and he will absolutely be on my side. After four or five hundred years, he will be totally be loyal to me. It isn't a very long time for a cultivator like me.

When I was dealing with Wan Zhenghao a long time ago, I spent thousands of years. This time maybe I need to offer a lot, yet the return will be much more favorable...

To invest on this Feng Zhiling is a rather better business than investing in Wan Zhenghao...]

Gu Jinlong was collecting his thoughts while he was glancing at Feng Zhiling.

He was doing it very secretly that it won't be noticed normally. However, Ye Xiao wouldn't miss any movements.

So Ye Xiao was more concentrated to act like a humble and honest man.

Gu Jinlong was more and more confident that this Feng Zhiling was worth investing for.

So he was smiling with sincerity and hope.

He was actually showing true sincerity from the bottom of his heart, which rarely happened. Feng Zhiling's master was about to die, so even though he could make profits from his master, it wouldn't last long. However, if Feng Zhiling could be used, Gu

Jinlong would get a much bigger bonus in the future.

Well, his sincerity, hope, kind and smiles were doomed to be wasted after all.

Ye Xiao would never be moved by any of those.

The only thought Ye Xiao had was to tear off Gu Jinlong's head...

Ye Xiao had done so much speaking and acting, so he was tired both mentally and physically. He grabbed the cup and drank a lot of tea. He then said, "Mr. Wan, could you give me my money back first? I have been here for a long time now. I need to go back."

Wan Zhenghao casually said 'yes', yet he was looking at Gu Jinlong. Apparently, he couldn't make the decision.

Gu Jinlong nodded lightly and Wan Zhenghao went out hurriedly to do some arrangement.

Right after Wan Zhenghao left, Gu Jinlong took out a ring and gave it to Ye Xiao, "Brother Feng, we are good friends. Let's be as close as we can in the coming days. I am a bit older than you. Let me call you my brother. As the older brother, since I don't have any precious gift for you, here are some medicines and spiritual jades. There are not many, but it should be enough to be given to you as a friendly gift from me."

Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes, looking at the ring and spoke,

"You, you... You you you... Please don't lie to me. Don't think that I know nothing even though I am from the countryside. It is obviously a ring. What medicine and spiritual jades are you talking about?"

Gu Jinlong was stunned and then laughed out loud. He felt funny and Wan Zhenghao, who had just returned in a hurry, was laughing loudly too. Wan Zhenghao seemed like licking his own chops while he was looking at the ring.

That ring was not some ordinary thing. It was something legendary in the Land of Han-Yang.

The Ring Of Space.

It was a myth not only in the Land of Han-Yang, even in the Qing-Yun Realm, it was a rare treasure that ordinary people would never get.

Gu Jinlong explained patiently, "Brother Feng, please don't underestimate this ring. Within this ring, it is truly all-embracing and wonderful..." And then he started to explain about how to use this ring.

In fact, Ye Xiao surely knew about the Ring Of Space. He just kept playing fool in front of them.

Actually, he had always been eager for one Ring Of Space since he was reborn.

Yet he never had expected that he was going to receive it from one of his biggest enemies, Gu Jinlong.

The fate was truly interesting, making him a bit disoriented...

When he first arrived at this place, it was full of danger, yet now the danger was long gone and he had received lots of benefits.

After Gu Jinlong finished his explanation, Ye Xiao acted like he was a stupid man who had never seen such a wonderful thing. He took over the ring and looked over it again and again. While holding the ring, he kept transferring some spiritual power into it. He was so happy.

He wasn't acting happy this time.

There was truly an abundance of treasures inside the ring. There were thousands of pieces of treasures...

Most of them were rare and precious. Any of them could have caused a bloody battle in the Land of Han-Yang.

Ye Xiao glanced at Wan Zhenghao. The fat on Wan Zhenghao's face was quivering.

Apparently, none of those treasures belonged to Gu Jinlong. They were all collected and contributed to Gu Jinlong by Wan

Zhenghao. Now Gu Jinlong just handed them all to Ye Xiao in one go...

The surprises for Ye Xiao were more than that. He found that inside the ring, there were some treasures that only existed in the Qing-Yun Realm. They were all precious stuffs. Obviously, those were collected by Gu Jinlong himself. Apart from all the precious treasures, there were a lot of spiritual jades lying most inside the ring. They had to be the private collections of Gu Jinlong.

Ye Xiao counted and found that there were about 3000 pieces of spiritual jades.

That was truly a windfall for Ye Xiao. It was like a gold pie in the sky. Ye Xiao was so happy and he couldn't stop smiling. He suddenly felt his enemy, Gu Jinlong was somehow good looking...

Well, he was going to kill him after all when he got the chance... But at least things looked much better now.

"Brother Gu, you..." Ye Xiao acted like he was moved, "You just gave me all this much at a time. Don't you worry that I will take all of this and just run away from you? Wealth does bewitch people."

Gu Jinlong was smiling kindly, "Brother Feng, you and I, we are like brothers. We need to trust each other. If I can't trust you, how can we be best friends forever? I trust you, brother."

He smiled blandly and spoke emotionally, "Brother Feng, if you

are going to run away with all I gave you, I will just accept the misfortune given by the gods."

Gu Jinlong looked nice on his face, yet deep inside his mind he was sneering.

[In this mortal world, even if you want to run, where can you hide from me?

There has never been anybody who could escape my schemes. Not even the Xiao Monarch. Feng Zhiling, you are just a small figure. You are just a nobody.]

...

Sugarplum: When there's a deal to be done, the other party would give a lot of benefits, so that the partner will feel good about the deal.

Chapter 110: The Fool Finally Got Hooked!

"Friends until death? Brotherhood?" Ye Xiao acted like he was touched. He looked at Gu Jinlong's neck and said, "I will never fail you, Brother Gu. You treat me so sincerely. I shall be absolutely loyal to you as a return. To run away from you is the last thing I would do as a human being..."

In fact, he was thinking, [Friends until death? Eh-heh. Wait for some days and I will be friends until death with you with loyalty.

I will send you to death myself and be loyal to my sword that is going to take your life. How about that?]

Gu Jinlong laughed loudly.

"However, Brother Gu, I have to be honest about one thing. No matter how many supreme dan beads my master will produce... I need to keep two beads for myself." Ye Xiao put away the ring and spoke his request.

"Brother Feng, you truly are an honest and honorable man. I wonder how many supreme dan beads can your master produce at a time?" Gu Jinlong casually asked.

Ye Xiao laughed and talked like he was lost in the pleasure from the great benefits, "My master has already reached a grandmaster's level in dan-making. Almost ninety-nine percent of the dan beads are supreme dan beads."

What he just said immediately lit up Wan Zhenghao and Gu Jinlong's eyes. They felt astonished like they never had felt before.

[Ninety-nine percent.

In this world there were less than one percent of the dan-makers are unable to reach such success rate.

This Feng Zhiling's master is truly an eremitic supreme grandmaster dan-maker.

He is absolutely a genius figure.]

"If you don't mind, I wonder how many dan beads are produced at a time?" Gu Jinlong asked.

"Well... It depends on the materials. If there are enough materials, there can be at least a dozen dan beads at a time." Ye Xiao said. It finally made Gu Jinlong totally relieved.

"Well then I have no further questions. Everything is fine." Gu Jinlong laughed loudly and clapped on Ye Xiao's shoulder, "Brother Feng, the dan beads you want will be yours then. Aside from the dan beads, I will give you something else as your reward."

"Thank you so much." Ye Xiao spoke embarrassingly, "It was quite an immoderate request I was making after all..."

In fact, he was rather happy. [This fool finally got hooked.]

Gu Jinlong was happy too. [This guy is truly stupid and honest. He doesn't even know how to ask for advantages. What an ignorant man. He finally got hooked.]

He was very satisfied with the deal. He actually walked Ye Xiao out of the Ling-Bao Hall at the end.

He was showing quite a respect to Ye Xiao.

"Brother Feng, there is another thing I need to ask you for. The Cosmic Hades of mine... Please keep an eye on it for me." Gu Jinlong smiled hospitably.

"Brother, please don't worry. Once I have information about that man, I will surely inform you. We are brothers and they are all strangers to me now." Ye Xiao clapped his chest and said, "It is not only your problem now."

Gu Jinlong smiled, "I appreciate it."

Watching Feng Zhiling leave, Wan Zhenghao was confused.

He didn't understand what Gu Jinlong was planning. So he asked cautiously, "Lord Gu, are you really letting him leave so easily? Are you..."

He meant to say 'are you so sure about it'.

Gu Jinlong smiled and spoke casually, "I trust him. He is my brother."

And then he turned around and entered the room.

Wan Zhenghao's face quivered.

[Brother? Trust him? Do you think I am a fool like Feng Zhiling? Do you think I would believe that you truly treat him like your brother? I will go to hell if you truly do.]

Well I think I should believe that he is a brother to you though. People always try to get the most out of their brothers and then betray them.]

Gu Jinlong walked with his hands on his back and spoke blandly, "You don't need to be anxious. We all know what we are. This Feng Zhiling, he cannot escape my control."

He casually said, "Do you think I just gave him the ring for nothing? I will never do such a stupid thing, will I?"

Wan Zhenghao's super fat body suddenly trembled and he said, "Lord Gu, how do you know I am unhappy about it? You have an eye on your back?"

Looking at Gu Jinlong's ass, he thought, [Is he able to see things through that hole?]

Gu Jinlong walked and smiled, "Nonsense. The muscle on your face shook just now..." He turned over his head looking at Wan Zhenghao, "The muscle is too fat and when it shakes, it makes sound... Ordinary people cannot hear it... Heh heh..."

He kept walking, "I have killed countless men in my life... How can I not know the sound of a fat meat on one's face moving?"

Wan Zhenghao trembled.

[Is it even possible to enter such an unbelievable stage by killing?

To take one life is a sin. To take ten thousand is a demon. To take nine million is a legend out of all demons.

This man has taken more than ten million lives. He is much more fearsome than a legendary demon.

Well...]

"That ring is something priceless. To open the space within the ring, it needs one's spiritual power. Well... The ring will always be my ring... Because no one in this world knows how to become the master of that ring. That guy is just a fool..."

He smiled and casually continued, "So, even the ring stays with Feng Zhiling for the next ten thousand years, he will still be a ring keeper for me. As long as I am still alive, the ring belongs to me."

"Now that the ring is with him, no matter where he goes, I can sense it."

"Most importantly, once he saw the Cosmic Hades, I will sense it without being told by him. The breath of the Cosmic Hades is extraordinary... When I sense it, I will go get it immediately." His eyes were full of coldness at the time.

"This guy is useful for us at the moment..." Gu Jinlong said, "So remember not to offend him."

"I never have expected that my grand plan actually took a huge progress this time in the mortal world." Gu Jinlong laughed loudly, "It truly is a worthy trip this time."

"Lord Gu, it will be my honor to stay on your side and share your glory for all the coming days..." Wan Zhenghao was flattering.

Ye Xiao left the salesroom and headed outside the city with a casual pace.

He went somewhere near the west border and instantly hid in a secret path in the forest.

Now he looked like he was collapsed instead of leisurely. He was drenched in sweat. His clothes were all soaked.

His hair became sticky because of the sweat.

The day was tough for him. He had been through extreme danger, and he had not yet recovered from the fright.

It was like he had been to the gate of the hell and returned alarmingly.

It was like death itself was looming over him all the time.

One tiny mistake would have taken his life away. He might have died ten thousand times in the Ling-Bao Hall.

He was quite weak at the moment, yet he had encountered his big enemy who was in his peak condition.

He gasped heavily leaning on a tree.

He had never felt closer to death than he just did in both his two lives.

Even though he used to be the Xiao Monarch who was calm and strong, he was still a human being. When facing fatal threats, it was normal to feel anxious and frightened.

At least he had been fighting against the fear inside him and talked casually with the powerful enemy before he finally escaped the danger with enormous benefits. That was difficult. But he was still scared when he was free.

After a long time, he finally came back to himself.

Ye Xiao took out the ring and murmured with his eyes filled with coldness, "Gu Jinlong, do you think a little trick in a ring can really give you the trace of the Xiao Monarch? You are truly naive and stupid..."

He didn't hesitate. He immediately operated the East-rising Purple Qi and injected spiritual power into the ring to cover Gu Jinlong's power inside the ring...

When he was sure he had fully covered the power of Gu Jinlong, he closed his eyes. A stream of spiritual power quietly drew out a bit of Gu Jinlong's covered power from the ring. It went through his body and then went into the floor. After that, it was diffused all over the city...

Ye Xiao was not trying to change the ownership of the ring, because if he did so, Gu Jinlong would know it immediately. If Gu Jinlong knew and rushed over, he could kill Ye Xiao in an instant. For Gu Jinlong, Ye Xiao was really not that far away.

Now, Ye Xiao had perfectly covered Gu Jinlong's power. That bit of power which was diffused all over the city wouldn't draw Gu Jinlong's attention, because it was just a slight amount of power.

However, that slight amount of Gu Jinlong's power would play a rather important role in Ye Xiao's plan.

Gu Jinlong could only sense where the ring was or what happened to the ring when Ye Xiao did something practical to the ring.

But as long as Ye Xiao kept the ring untouched...

Gu Jinlong would believe that the ring and Ye Xiao were in the Chen-Xing City at all times, simply because he was misled by that slight amount of power.

...

Chapter 111: Surrounded by Worries

When Ye Xiao wanted Gu Jinlong to know where the ring was, he would intentionally activate the ring.

With that, their positions were completely exchanged.

Ye Xiao got the higher position with the use of initiative in the whole situation.

Well of course, Gu Jinlong would keep on believing that things were still under his control.

That was the most important point for Ye Xiao.

After all, Ye Xiao had gained a lot of precious treasures, and now he had a huge amount of spiritual jades... He should feel rather happy at the moment...

Yet he was anxious as if he was surrounded by endless worries.

He had so many things to worry about at the moment.

Because, he knew, that the crisis in front of him had only been solved temporarily.

Danger was still lurking over him, just like a shadow of death.

Since he had made a huge lie back there, he wonder how he could make it plausible.

Where could he find a grandmaster of dan-making to be his "master"?

Was he really going to give a number of supreme dan beads to Gu Jinlong?

Wasn't it similar to killing himself by doing that?

What else could he do then, if he didn't give out the supreme dan beads?

Gu Jinlong was talking like they were brothers, but he would never hesitate to kill Ye Xiao as long as he knew that Ye Xiao was useless for him.

The most efficient way to solve all the problems was to kill Gu Jinlong. Yet Ye Xiao didn't even think about it.

Because he knew it was impossible.

Even if he put together all the forces he had including Song Jue, Ning Biluo, he wouldn't have a single chance to even hurt Gu Jinlong. That was the plain and simple truth.

Ye Xiao was too weak at the moment, and Gu Jinlong could just kill him by winking.

To start a battle was the last thing he should do, and he would never thought about killing him...

Now that he couldn't kill Gu Jinlong, he would expose himself sooner or later.

When that moment came, Gu Jinlong would never let Ye Xiao get away from it.

Gu Jinlong was a guy who would instantly kill his enemy in the first sight when he recognized it was a threat. He wouldn't leave an uncertain factor out of his control.

"What an annoying situation..." Ye Xiao sighed.

As he kept pondering deeply, he realized that there was only one solution.

Which was also the impossible solution - kill Gu Jinlong.

There was no other option for him now.

"Oh I am going to be freaked out because of this mess..." Ye Xiao was sighing in anxiousness, "There is no way I can kill him... I only have a tiny amount of strength at the moment. Even if I gather all

the forces in this world as many as I can, it is still impossible to fight against Gu Jinlong..."

"Even if I collect all the poisons in this world and make Gu Jinlong swallow them all, he will probably still be alive..."

"I have been going smoothly in this life. How come I would suddenly fall into such a miserable situation?"

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly.

He thought and thought again, but still couldn't come up with any practical idea.

He couldn't figure out anything useful anyway, so he just stopped worrying too much. [Screw it. If I am going to die now, so be it. At least I have live three months longer than I deserve.]

So he just opened the space of the ring and started to transport all the fine medical materials to his Spaces.

At the present, his biggest hope lied on these boundless Spaces.

However, he was well aware of the truth that even if he collected all the treasures in the world into the Spaces, it wouldn't make him improve to the same level as Gu Jinlong immediately.

Well, it was his one last shot after all.

While transporting the materials, Ye Xiao murmured, "...Assassination...? No. Poisoning? Don't think so... Fight with honor! ... No way..."

"Sow dissension? Make troubles to him? Frame him? How...? I can't find anybody or anything to be against him in this world..."

Ye Xiao was getting through a life or death crisis at the moment.

It was some danger that he had never experienced before. Not even in his previous life.

The Xiao Monarch had travelled all over the world being invincible. Although he had been through many difficulties, he had never messed with someone who was so stronger than himself, an opponent that was too strong that he wouldn't even be able to put up a fight.

He had been through some tough times, yet he had never sensed such a dark shade of death.

Even the last battle in his previous life when he realized he would die, he didn't feel fearful like this.

At least, he was strong enough to run and to defend during that battle.

Even though he was doomed to die, he could kill a lot of enemies before he did.

Well this time, everything was different. It was completely different.

Ye Xiao could have been able to instantly kill Gu Jinlong if he was still the Xiao Monarch.

Yet now, no matter what he do, he wasn't even able to make Gu Jinlong die with him together.

Now that even Ye Xiao set a bomb on himself and exploded beside Gu Jinlong, he wouldn't hurt Gu Jinlong a bit.

That was the most annoying thing.

Ye Xiao had to face such an annoying reality after all.

He never wanted to mess with Gu Jinlong in the present life, yet the Cosmic Hades and the supreme dan beads had drawn all of Gu Jinlong's attention to him.

Ye Xiao was annoyed and worried while he was transporting the materials.

When he finished transporting a hundred pieces of precious medical plants, something happened in the Wood Space of the

Nine Spaces.

It happened so quickly that Ye Xiao was frightened somehow. So he leaned to a tree and got himself into the Spaces to check things out.

In the Wood Space, the one hundred medical plants was put in order line after line. It was a wonderful scene.

In the air over the medical plants, there was some green mist rolling up. It delivered a strong feeling of life all over the Space.

No matter where the green mist went, the plant there would suddenly overflow with vigor and vitality.

Some of those plants were bold without leaves at the beginning, but because of the green mist, leaves grew out and the whole scene was full of life and green.

The dense breath of life kept going round and round in the Wood Space like it was some kind of rendering...

Maybe it was a perfect choice to use the word 'render', because after a while, the whole Wood Space was actually turned into a light green color. It was like the Space had been painted by the green mist.

While the Wood Space was transforming, the Water Space next to it was changing too.

The aqueous vapor in the Water Space left and entered the Wood Space all of a sudden. It went together with the relaxing green, and then the next moment, the rain dropped down in the Wood Space.

After a while, there were water drops on the leaves.

The whole space was playing a scene of silent moistening like dreams.

Ye Xiao watched all of this happen. There was a golden ginseng moving in the Space like it was casually taking a walk after a good meal. As it moved, some small root hairs slowly grew out from the its bottom and stuck into the floor of the Wood Space...

The next moment, the leaves were shaking.

Ye Xiao felt like he was dreaming. He blinked his eyes and looked at the golden ginseng again. He felt a lot happier, and it was like his vitality was stronger...

The water vapor was flying in the air of the Wood Space and then it flew out of it. The green mist was actually flying out of the Wood Space along with the water vapor. They slowly flew through the Gold Space, the Fire Space and other Spaces. After they got through all the other Spaces, there were some other kinds of energies in it now...

After that, those magical energies from all Nine Spaces entered a

tunnel at once.

That tunnel was connecting to where the egg was staying.

Ye Xiao was shocked after witnessing this.

He was like staying in a dream. He watched the energies from all the Nine Spaces enter the tunnel like wild wind...

After a while, he followed the energies into the tunnel.

He saw the energies rush to the egg like tidewater.

Some of the energies immediately came out of the egg after they entered it. The whole process was short but marvelous. The energies that came out of the egg went around the egg on the sides and then got back to the Wood Space again. The energies were moving in and out the egg in streams. But none of them stopped. They kept going round and round between the egg and the Wood Space.

At the moment, the egg was shaking.

Ye Xiao rubbed his eyes immediately.

And he saw what happened...

He did. That egg was moving. He couldn't be sure that the egg was alive, but it was growing in a pace visible to the naked eye... At the beginning, it was like a goose egg... And then it kept growing bigger.

It was like the egg was moving itself.

The energies from the Nine Spaces had come and gone ninety-nine times and finally stopped. Everything was turning quiet again.

Firstly, the energy that belonged to the Water Space returned.

And then the other streams returned one by one.

The Nine Spaces returned to peace like nothing had ever happened.

However, the egg was a lot different now.

It was now the same size of a melon.

There were also changes in its appearance. Starlight was twinkling and its surface, and those strange patterns on it had become much clearer.

The egg became transparent like crystal.

Ye Xiao could clearly sense a joyful emotion was coming from inside the egg.

It seemed after absorbing so much energies at a time... the egg was happy about it?

...

Chapter 112: The Supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan

Ye Xiao was a bit speechless, [Even though it is a strange egg, it is still an egg. How can it possibly have emotions? There are only white and yolk inside it.

But the happiness that I sensed from it was so real.]

Ye Xiao walked close to the egg, looking at the patterns all over it. He smiled bitterly and murmured, "You are comfortable now, aren't you? Just lying there relaxing and something good is automatically going to feed you... You don't need to worry about anything. You are just waiting for the day you will be born..."

"I am quite in a mess now though. I have nowhere to go. I have no plan to deal with the situation... Do you know how fucked up I am now? If something seriously happens to me, do you think you can still be happy and relaxing like now?"

He smiled bitterly and sighed.

He was a man who will never accept difficulties. He would always fight for a path through any obstacle!

So after sighing for a while, he came back to himself again. He tried so hard to figure out a solution. He believed that there was always a plan as long as he was still breathing.

There was nothing too hard to conquer!

There was always a way to do it; it was just sometimes, people couldn't figure it out!

There must be a practical solution ahead.

When it was found, everything would be solved. If it wasn't, that was because someone was too stupid to. There was always hope!

He was lost in his thoughts again. He actually didn't noticed the egg was flying up automatically. It flew up one meter high and then fell back down.

It was like the egg was responding to Ye Xiao...

...

Ye Xiao couldn't think of anything useful. He came back to himself looking at the plate under the egg. He smiled bitterly, "These are the only benefits I have now... Heh heh."

On the plate, more than a dozen dan beads were comfortably lying after those strong streams of energies had come and go!

They were all supreme dan beads.

There were fifteen of them in total including five Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads, five Unblocking Mai Dan Beads and five Breaking Limit Dan Beads!

Pei-Yuan Dan was just some low first-grade dan while Bone Ablutionary Dan was in the second grade. Even though the Unblocking Mai Dan was also in the second grade, it was in the upper range of the second grade. The Breaking Limit Dan was rather extraordinary; it was a third-grade dan!

It was specially used for breaking through a bottleneck during cultivation!

Cultivators in different grades would need Breaking Limit Dans of different levels.

For example, one who wanted to break through the limit of the Sky Origin Stage to reach the Spirit Origin Stage would need the 4th level Breaking Limit Dan. If he wanted to reach the Dream Origin Stage, he would need the 5th level Breaking Limit Dan. If he wanted to reach the Dao Origin Stage, he would need the 6th level Breaking Limit Dan, and perhaps even some 7th level Breaking Limit Dan. It depended on the person.

When someone needed help in breaking through the limits of his present grade, some Breaking Limit Dan Beads and the Cultivating Tea were the perfect things for him. They worked perfectly together!

These two things together would increase the success rate of the

breakthrough by about fifty percent!

That was a fifty-fifty chance!

That was nearly the biggest chance in the world!

People would be willing to spend all they had to exchange for a success rate like that!

Fifty percent was a miracle in dreams for most people!

Surely, these two things didn't have to work together. Either of them would help a lot. The Cultivating Tea had better efficacy; it could raise the success rate up to 35 percent. The Breaking Limit Dan could only increase the success rate by about ten percent.

The first thing people would think about was always the Breaking Limit Dan though, because the Cultivating Tea was too rare to find.

What Ye Xiao had now were some Breaking Limit Dan of supreme level. They were legendary treasures that people could hardly see in their whole lives. Because of that, how much it could help in breaking through the grades was still theories!

...

Ye Xiao took the dan beads and got out of the Spaces. The first

thing he did was to find a covert to return to the handsome young Lord Ye. He hired a carriage and got home on it.

There seemed to be nothing to worry for him.

When he got home, he took a Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead right away!

He was in the third level of the Earth Origin Stage now, so it was time for him to do something about the impurity in his body. Besides... he wanted to improve himself as much as he found himself in a real battle.

Even though he knew it wouldn't make any difference, it was better than doing nothing!

The reason why he took the Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead instead of others was because... he planned to take the Unblocking Mai Dan Bead right after the Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead! That would improve him to the fourth level of the Earth Origin Stage right away.

He didn't take any of the Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads earlier before, because he didn't have many of them at that time. He only had one, so he wanted to save it in case something happened. Besides, he had been through some bone ablution earlier, so it might not be that useful to take a Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead again.

So he hadn't decided to take it.

But now he had so many dan beads in his hands and there would be more continually coming. He wouldn't hesitate, would he?

It might not be so useful if he took it, but it surely would do something to him.

Ye Xiao learned from his previous life that the Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads would always stay far from enough for him. There was no such thing as a waste of the Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads!

He wished to take one every time when he prepared to reach a new level. The Jing and Mai would become more clear and clean, so it made it more possible to break through the limit.

In fact, it would be for the best if he took one when he prepared to reach a new level, and took two Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads, one Unblocking Mai Dan Bead and one Breaking Limit Dan Bead when he prepared to reach a new grade!

That would leave no aftereffects for him!

However, he could only do it before he reached the Dream Origin Stage.

Once he reached the Dream Origin Stage, he had to take nine Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads at a time to achieve the same efficacy.

After entering the fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage, well, things like Bone Ablutionary Dan and Unblocking Mai Dan were no longer useful for him.

However, from the third level of the Earth Origin Stage to the fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage...

As Ye Xiao kept breaking through levels to levels, grades to grades... He would need hundreds of Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads and hundreds of Unblocking Mai Dan Beads... and dozens of Breaking Limit Dan Beads!

Nobody in the world could afford such a great amount of dan beads!

That was enough to break down a sect!

The Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads and the Unblocking Mai Dan Beads might not be unsolvable problems, but the Breaking Limit Dan Beads... They were something truly difficult to find.

But now, Ye Xiao didn't need to worry about finding them anymore.

In fact, Ye Xiao might not even need so much dan beads, because all the dan beads he had were of supreme levels.

After taking a Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead, Ye Xiao sat cross-legged. Within an instant, he got rid of the bothering matters in his head by operating his strong will power.

He entered deep meditation to focus on digesting the dan bead.

All of a sudden, he entered a world where only he himself was existing.

It was his first time to take a Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead for both his two lives!

In his previous life, when he was in such a beginner's stage, he never had a chance to have such dan beads. He could only keep working extremely hard without anyone providing him help or guidance. He reached higher heights in cultivation through suicidal methods. Those dan beads that were only offered to the superior disciples of some great sects were never things he could get close to.

He just kept scrambling up and up by himself.

When he was powerful enough to seize these kinds of resources, he had already passed the time when he needed them.

The Breaking Limit Dan was useful in any level, but Ye Xiao had only seized several low quality Breaking Limit Dan Beads. Those were too rubbish that they merely had no use for Ye Xiao, so his whole previous life was a 'no-dan' life.

Well, it was different now!

Completely different!

He was going to have a huge amount of dan beads, and they were all priceless supreme dan beads!

The Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead had just entered his mouth, and he already felt a stream of wonderful scent spreading in his mouth. A vivid stream of spiritual power suddenly filled his mouth as if it had exploded!

At this moment, Ye Xiao felt that as long as he opened his mouth, the enormous amount of qi in his mouth would rush out at once!

He had heard people say, "opening the mouth and letting the scent spread out to the edge of the world"!

He had never seen it, so he had been sneering it all the time. He had never believed it.

Yet now he was the one who might "let the scent spread out to the edge of the world" if he opened his mouth.

The old sayings always meant something!

....

Chapter 113: To the Fourth Level of the Earth Origin Stage

Ye Xiao would surely not open his mouth and waste the scent inside it to just check how far it could spread away. That would be such a waste... He had already swallowed the spiritual qi in his mouth, and the moment it entered his stomach, he immediately felt that his stomach was expanding.

At the same time, one after another, streams of pure energy was flowing along the Jing and Mai and seeped into his bones.

They deeply entered his bone marrow.

An extreme pain suddenly coursed throughout his body.

That feeling was so unbearable.

It was too painful, and even with his good endurance, he nearly couldn't help but scream out.

"Hem!"

He humphed and then kept his mouth shut right away. His face had turned pale, and the sweat on his forehead were as big as beans while dropping down. After just a short while, the accumulated sweat made streams of water.

They kept flowing down to the floor without pause.

The vigorous energy seeping into his bones seemed to be mutating it. It was like burning and roasting inside.

After a while, some black, cyan and purple impurities were coming out from his bones. The burning feeling was still going on.

It kept burning from the bones to the muscles along with the impurities... Bit by bit, the impurities came out from his body through each and every pore of his body...

For Ye Xiao, the whole process was just like a hellish torture.

He felt helpless as he suffered through the endless pain.

He was even unable to make a sound with his open mouth.

His whole body was covered by these filthy things from head to toes, even on his hair.

At the end...

After the impurities in his body were completely forced out, the burning sensation suddenly disappeared, and then the pain finally stopped.

Ye Xiao actually felt like he was losing weight at the moment.

He felt empty, but after a while, he suddenly felt relieved while he was still exhausted.

He was nearly in a coma.

However, he knew that he couldn't lose his attention at this very moment. The impurities that were covering his body had to be cleaned out as soon as possible. It was from inside his body, and basically, they were part of his body. If he couldn't get rid of it in time, some of it might return into his body. That would make the whole process imperfect, which was the last thing he wanted to see.

Holding up his exhausted body and keeping his mind clear, he took a deep breath and felt himself recovered a bit. He hurriedly started to deal with the impurities all over his body.

He held his nose and washed his body. After that, he felt like he had removed a layer of his skin. At the same time, he felt himself extremely clean that he had never been before.

Clean from inside out.

He was truly pure and clean without any flaws.

He raised his hand and smelled on the back of his hand. He could actually smell some fragrant scent.

"This is truly... fantastic..." Ye Xiao was a bit narcissistic.

He had been rather smelly a while ago, yet now he smelled so good.

He felt like he had just come out of some smelly toilet and instantly smelled some fragrant flowers.

He also felt that the bone ablution was truly incredible this time. His bones seemed to be denser and stronger.

His whole body was refreshed.

"Isn't it amazing." Ye Xiao murmured.

He had never had any Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads before, but he somewhat knew what it could bring him. However, he had never expected such an amazing outcome.

The Bone Ablutionary Dan could clean people's bones and force out the impurities inside it, but it wasn't completely clean. It could only clean up more than half of the impurities. No matter what quality the dan bead was, it would never fully clean up the impurities within the body.

The impurities were a part of the human body after all. Those tiny filthy things had already grown together with the body and

became difficult to remove.

Only those who had reached an incredible level could fully remove the impurities by themselves.

People who could do that were almost as great as gods.

However, what happened to Ye Xiao this time had created history. The supreme dan beads not only had remarkable efficacies, they also had the ability to refresh the body.

Ye Xiao didn't know much about it. It was the first time the supreme dan beads showed up in the world after all.

When he cured Song Jue, although he had operated the East-rising Purple Qi and knew well about the Golden Mai Palm at the same time, he could never have made Song Jue recover in just one night without that Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead.

Different dan should be used in different issues. If Song Jue took a Breaking Limit Dan or Unblocking Mai Dan instead of Bone Ablutionary Dan, he wouldn't have recovered as much.

It was quite easy to understand. The Golden Mai Palm produced some gold materials in people's bodies. These gold materials were basically one kind of impurity for the body. So the Bone Ablutionary Dan was the perfect dan to help curing Song Jue.

However, not all the Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads could work

well on the Golden Mai Palm wounds.

The reason why Song Jue could be cured was mostly because the man who had use the Golden Mai Palm on Song Jue was not that powerful at that time. It gave Song Jue the opportunity to survive. If the man was a stronger cultivator, Song Jue might have died long ago.

Even though Ye Xiao had used his East-rising Purple Qi and the supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead on Song Jue, the impurity that was created by the Golden Mai Palm was only partly removed. There were still wounds deep inside Song Jue's body. That was because the dan bead had limited efficacy and surely Ye Xiao wasn't strong enough.

No matter what, what the Bone Ablutionary Dan Bead had brought to Ye Xiao this time was reasonable, yet at the same time, out of Ye Xiao's expectation.

There were certain benefits for Ye Xiao that things were out of his expectation.

After having a good rest, Ye Xiao decided to keep going. He immediately operated the East-rising Purple Qi. As soon as he operated it, he felt like there was a small sun rising inside his dantian.

That feeling only lasted for a second. When Ye Xiao wanted to feel more about it, it was instantly gone.

It was like what had just happened was just his misconception... it was something that had never truly happened.

After that, the purple qi that flowed between the sky and the earth rushed toward his body like tidewater. It kept pouring into the Spaces through his Jing and Mai... It was leading all the spiritual power of Ye Xiao to fiercely hit the entrance of the fourth level of the Earth Origin Stage.

At this moment, Ye Xiao raised his head and swallowed an Unblocking Mai Dan Bead right away.

All his spiritual power was rushing to the entrance of the fourth level again and again, however, he still couldn't break through.

The Jing and Mai of his body were suffering huge pressure because of how fast the purple qi was rushing in.

Ye Xiao was confident that he could eventually break through the limit sooner or later, because it felt much better than what he had experienced the last time when he had been trying to do the same thing in his previous life.

If there was a dan bead that could make it much easier, he would surely use it. And right now, he actually did.

After swallowing the Unblocking Mai Dan Bead, Ye Xiao clearly felt some fierce strength was added to the spiritual power that was rushing to the entrance of the fourth level. It was sharp like a

needle. It quickly formed inside the Jing and Mai, and then it surged.

After a while, it had reached the leading end of the spiritual power stream. It suddenly became the point... A sense of cold power suddenly appeared, and the sharp energy had broken through to the fourth level of the Earth Origin Stage.

It just slipped in.

A small little crack on the entrance to the fourth level showed up.

It seemed that there were some sort of energies spreading away from that crack.

It felt so good.

When Ye Xiao operated his spiritual power again and pushed them towards the entrance... it was like a dam filled with cracks as it immediately broke down.

The enormous amount of spiritual power rushed through and entered a new stage.

Ye Xiao's face was full of pleasure.

"The fourth level of the Earth Origin Stage. I have successfully broken through!"

The spiritual power was like tidewater flowing round and round inside his body, and he felt like he could fly up to the heavens.

It was a fantastic feeling of improvement.

He kept checking his own cultivation capability with excitement, but then he frowned and smiled bitterly.

The East-rising Purple Qi was actually still in the first level. The only difference was that the purple qi in his dantian was increased a little. Nothing with regards to the East-rising Purple Qi had improved.

...

Chapter 114: Getting Prepared; Accident

“Is this some kind of progress?! I have broken through the limits several times, but the East-rising Purple Qi stays unchanged all the time.” Ye Xiao smiled bitterly, “It seems that what I have achieved meant nothing compared to the East-rising Purple Qi. Those are nothing. Worthless. Should I be happy or should I be sad about it! Fine. I should be happy. I am happy...”

He used some kind of “[spiritual victory method](#)” to comfort himself. Good for you, Xiao Monarch!

...

The next moment, he returned to the Spaces again.

He looked at the Cosmic Hades in the Sky Space and frowned, seemingly lost in his thoughts.

The gelid qi that was produced by the Cosmic Hades had fully filled up the whole Sky Space and was about invade the other Spaces. That was not good and Ye Xiao knew that he had to do something about it. In other words, he had to absorb it again...

Thinking about the Cosmic Hades, he was thinking about the two crisis he was facing at the moment.

The inner crisis was an easy one. He could just cultivate the gelid qi again. He had done it before, so this time, it would be much

easier. However, how was he able to deal with the outer crisis?

Gu Jinlong was too strong for him. Thinking about how powerful Gu Jinlong was, Ye Xiao sighed again.

Now he had barely escaped from death because of a big lie. However, Gu Jinlong was still out there watching him. He wouldn't leave without the Cosmic Hades. He was like a ticking bomb that might explode at any time around Ye Xiao. Things between Ye Xiao and Gu Jinlong had to be ended.

Either Gu Jinlong died, or Ye Xiao would!

One of them had to die.

The point was that Ye Xiao couldn't do anything about Gu Jinlong. Poison, dan bead or anything else he could think of were useless. Ye Xiao didn't have the dan beads that could get Gu Jinlong killed!

He sighed and walked out of his room.

Song Jue was worried about Ye Xiao when he saw Ye Xiao's sad face.

Ye Xiao could only give some answers that didn't matter to Song Jue. After which, he disappeared among the people out of the house.

After a while, he was in some field outside the city. He was Feng Zhiling now, and he was running fast in the wild.

He was looking for a suitable location.

A mountain.

In case Gu Jinlong would ask, he had to make things look reasonable.

“Even a perfect lie won’t last long. You always need to make enormous efforts to cover up one lie you made. A tiny mistake will expose you and you will instantly lose, and that’s the time that you will die.” Ye Xiao smiled bitterly with helplessness.

After a while, he had found a mountain.

It was a mountain that looked like a tubular pen rack. It was tall and isolate. There was no connection between this mountain and the others. It was in a special location like all the other mountains were embracing it.

In fact, this mountain was named the Pen Rack Mountain!

It was sharp and high.

Ye Xiao looked around for quite a while and nodded with

satisfaction. He took out 99 pieces of spiritual jades from the ring. He didn't need to save any of them because they were given by Gu Jinlong. They were free.

He had moved around the mountain while placing the spiritual jades along the way. He didn't stop. He kept moving round and round from the bottom of the mountain to halfway up the mountain, placing the spiritual jades here and there. At the end, he had used up a little less than 400 pieces of spiritual jades on this mountain.

Now, he had finally set up a foundation, so he took out another 13 pieces of spiritual jades. He flew to the top of the mountain and positioned the 13 pieces of spiritual jades imitating the [Eight Diagrams](#) and the [Five Elements](#). Eight pieces were set in a bigger circle and the other five in a smaller circle inside. The two circles work in concert.

At the center of the two circles, he put ten pieces of spiritual jades!

He embedded the ten pieces of spiritual jades hard into the mountain and shouted, "Done!"

The next moment, something like clouds and fogs suddenly came. It suddenly covered the whole mountain. No matter where the Pen Rack Mountain was viewed, it seemed to have disappeared!

The whole mountain was invisible.

The Stars Covering Array!

That was the most difficult array art Ye Xiao could handle! Since he was too weak to fight against Gu Jinlong, he had to use whatever he had up his sleeves.

He checked the array he had assembled and nodded with satisfaction. And then he got down to the bottom of the mountain where the base of the whole array was found, and dug the ground to cover it.

He finally felt a bit relieved.

Now that he had such a big array as a cover, it wouldn't be too hard to fool Gu Jinlong when it was necessary.

[Using Gu Jinlong's spiritual jades to set up an array to fool Gu Jinlong, that... is heart-stirring somehow. Hahaha.] Ye Xiao thought, a satisfied smile surfacing on his face.

After doing all of that, there was one more piece of spiritual jade in his hand.

He had planned to use those spiritual jades to set a Weather Array to produce rain in the Water Space, but as he had to deal with Gu Jinlong as soon as he could, he stopped the plan. He didn't dare to use up all the spiritual jades at the moment, because he needed to have enough energy for the Stars Covering Array to continue working.

He decided to develop the Water Space after the things between him and Gu Jinlong got settled. Ye Xiao casually threw the spiritual jade in his hand into the Spaces!

When he was preparing to leave, he was shocked.

The gelid qi in the Sky Space suddenly overflowed!

Ye Xiao collected his mind and disappeared right away. He had immediately entered the Spaces.

He looked at the Sky Space and found that the spiritual jade, which was supposed to be in the Soul Space, was now on the surface of the Cosmic Hades.

The Cosmic Hades' release of gelid qi had been boosted. Ye Xiao had realized that the gelid qi was about to overflow, but he thought that there was still time before it would happen. Now that the Cosmic Hades was crazily releasing the gelid qi, the Sky Space had become too overwhelming for the other eight Spaces.

All of this was caused by that one piece of spiritual jade. The spiritual jade had become turbid within such a short time. Apparently, the energy inside it was rapidly decreasing.

After a while, there were some power falling down from the spiritual jade.

And then the whole piece of spiritual jade was turned into power!

The next moment, the Cosmic Hades immediately flew out of the Sky Space. It was flowing in the air outside the nine Spaces. It kept on releasing gelid qi. All of a sudden, the nine Spaces were shaking at the same time.

All the Spaces were covered by a layer of frost immediately!

Those plants inside the Wood Space were unable to bear it. Some of the leaves were starting to droop.

Ye Xiao was frightened.

[What the hell! What is going on! The Cosmic Hades is working with the Sky Space to overwhelm the other eight Spaces, yet now the Cosmic Hades itself is overwhelming the nine Spaces! The Spaces are totally in a bad situation. This is not good!]

He operated the East-rising Purple Qi immediately and tried what he had done last time; to absorb the gelid qi from the Cosmic Hades and reduce the pressure on the Spaces. However, when he was just about to get close to the Cosmic Hades, he felt a fierce absorbing power was aiming at himself! The Cosmic Hades actually tried to overwhelm Ye Xiao too. It was absorbing Ye Xiao's spiritual qi!

A small piece of spiritual jade had actually caused such a disaster.

Ye Xiao was astonished. He tried his best to defend as he slowly

stepped back. When he stepped back 20 meters away from the Cosmic Hades, the absorbing power turned weak. The next moment, he sensed an emotion of ‘sneering’ coming over him.

It was like someone was talking to him, ‘You are so lame and I don’t even want to bother absorbing you’!

Ye Xiao was safe now and he was sweating profusely because of anxiousness. He had never thought that there would be such a weird thing happening in the Spaces. [I just threw a tiny piece of spiritual jade into it! How could it bring me such a disaster?!

A tragedy caused by a spiritual jade?!]

And then he was astonished to notice that within such a short while, the nine Spaces were shaking more heavily and the frost covering them became thicker...

If he couldn’t stop this, the Spaces might actually break. If the Nine Spaces were broken, the Boundless Mind Space wouldn’t survive.

Ye Xiao made up his mind quickly and left the Spaces. He got into the Stars Covering Array and operated the East-rising Purple Qi in full range to absorb the gelid qi!

This time, the gelid qi was aroused in an instant. It was so dense. It was something Ye Xiao had never dealt with before!

He was not sure whether he could handle it this time, but he was sure that he couldn't just wait and see the fall of the Nine Spaces! He had to try!

The gelid qi was so fierce. Ye Xiao was capable in controlling gelid power and he had dealt with the gelid qi before, but when he came into contact with gelid qi now, he was instantly frozen. He became an ice sculpture right away!

...

'spiritual victory method' means someone keep telling himself everything is fine and feel relieved about it when things are not so good for him.

Eight Diagrams (八卦), also known as Eight Symbols, are eight trigrams used in Daoist cosmology to represent the fundamental principles of reality, seen as a range of eight interrelated concepts.

Five Elements (五行), It is a fivefold conceptual scheme that many traditional Chinese fields used to explain a wide array of phenomena, from cosmic cycles to the interaction between internal organs, and from the succession of political regimes to the properties of medicinal drugs. The "Five Phases" are Wood (木 mù), Fire (火 huǒ), Earth (土 tǔ), Metal (金 jīn), and Water (水 shuǐ).

Chapter 115: What A Coincidence, You Are Here

Ye Xiao was concentrated on operating the East-rising Purple Qi which was revolving in his Jing and Mai to absorb the gelid qi.

Ye Xiao could even hear the sound of it from the Jing and Mai.

Inside his dantian, the gelid qi was gathering with an amazing speed.

At the same time, the gelid qi was transforming to Yang Power inside Ye Xiao. Luckily, they were running at the same rate. Otherwise, he could have exploded or frozen because of the large amount of gelid qi.

The East-rising Purple Qi was marvelous in converting the powers of Yin and Yang. It created a cycle inside Ye Xiao's dantian and digested the massive amount of gelid qi. It decreased the damage and converted it into advantages.

Ye Xiao was extremely focused on operating it. He didn't dare to be reckless.

His body was covered by a lot of frost.

It was summer time though.

That was truly a scary scene.

While he was working so hard on converting the gelid qi inside the Nine Spaces, some of the gelid qi unavoidably fled outside, as a stream of cold current ran around the mountains.

And this cold current kept going out...

Ye Xiao had been sitting there for a whole day.

When he stood up, he still felt scared. His bones were making cracking sounds when he stood up. The crisis that was brought by the spiritual jade didn't lead to any real damage to him after all. The gelid qi inside the Nine Spaces was finally suppressed under his hard work. The Cosmic Hades had returned to the Sky Space at the end.

The Nine Spaces had finally returned to a stable condition.

There were always opportunities during a crisis. Ye Xiao felt that after what had happened, his East-rising Purple Qi had obviously improved.

He made sure that the crisis was over and got in to check the Nine Spaces. The frost on the Nine Spaces was gone, leaving only a few damages on the Nine Spaces. For example, the leaves of the plants in the Wood Space suffered frostbites. To fully recover them, a long time was needed. Even so, Ye Xiao could only rejoice that there was nothing worse that had happened.

If he stopped the gelid qi a bit later, those medical plants were doomed to die. Now their growth had only been slowed down. Wasn't that lucky?

How come the Cosmic Hades made such a disaster this time?

That was unfathomable.

It was just a small piece of spiritual jade. How come it could cause such a dangerous crisis?

Ye Xiao looked at the Cosmic Hades. He didn't understand anything at all.

[It is like I can't put this kind of energy crystal into the Nine Spaces.]

He tried touching the Cosmic Hades and surprisingly found that he could actually touch it physically.

It wasn't like the Pure Heavenly Crystal, which he could only watch, not touch.

[Oh...]

Ye Xiao tried to move it out a bit.

- Puff. -

The Cosmic Hades appeared on the mountain.

It actually got out!

Ye Xiao actually moved it out from the Nine Spaces!

Looking at the Cosmic Hades, which had just knocked out a pit on the floor, Ye Xiao was astonished.

He truly had no idea what was going on now.

The spiritual jade had made the Cosmic Hades turn regal...

And then the Cosmic Hades could be taken out from the Nine Spaces after that...

Ye Xiao kept thinking for a while but failed to figure out anything useful. He gave up thinking and moved away from the Pen Rack Mountain which was now completely covered by ice. He wanted to change the look of the mountain back to how it used to be. But before he could do anything, he noticed a figure coming over fast like lightning.

It seemed 'lightning' wasn't good enough to describe the man's speed. With just a blink of an eye, the man showed up in front of

Ye Xiao. - Shoot! -

Ye Xiao was surprised when he saw the man, he shouted, "Brother Gu?"

The man was Gu Jinlong indeed.

Gu Jinlong acted like he was surprised too and said, "Oh, it is you, Brother Feng. What are you doing here?"

Ye Xiao cursed him in his mind a hundreds of times, [You motherfxxker! You have noticed I am here. That's why you came!]

He was surprised that Gu Jinlong was that fast.

He had just taken out the Cosmic Hades for seconds and Gu Jinlong sensed it and came over from hundreds of miles away...

Luckily, Ye Xiao had set up the Stars Covering Array. Otherwise, he would be exposed right away.

[I have to be more cautious from now on. Nothing can be considered as too cautious when facing this prick.]

"I am delivering some medical materials to my master..." Ye Xiao said, "I just left my master and now I met you. What a coincidence. We truly have an affinity."

Gu Jinlong looked forward and felt some strange power. Even though he was experienced, he couldn't figure out what it was. He asked, "Brother Feng, is your master here?"

Ye Xiao nodded and pointed, "Yes. He is on this mountain, Pen Rack Mountain."

"Pen Rack Mountain?" Gu Jinlong looked to where Ye Xiao pointed, but saw nothing.

There were only some clouds and fogs.

Ye Xiao realized it and explained, "Brother, don't get me wrong. I don't know why it becomes so. After the Purple Lotus Decree Master came, the mountain became invisible. However, I can still get in. I grew up here. I can find it with my eyes closed.

"I see." Gu Jinlong looked at the fogs and said.

At the same time, he thought, [My capability was indeed far weaker than those big figures in the Qing-Yun Realm. The Purple Lotus Decree Master was about to go to his end, yet this array he casually set here could easily fool me. Impressive.

He is indeed a man who has fought against the Xiao Monarch. He is remarkable.

However, he is going to die soon... Humph.]

Thinking of that, he heard Feng Zhiling's voice, "Come. Brother Gu. Come with me. I will bring you to my master."

Gu Jinlong was planning to see his master, so he nodded, "I just want to ask for it. It is my pleasure to see the grandmaster of dan-making."

He stepped forward while saying that.

"Brother Gu, you should better follow me tight. Don't make any mistake." Ye Xiao was walking in front. He was truly like walking with his eyes closed. After a few steps, they disappeared in the fog.

After more than twenty steps, Feng Zhiling, who was leading the way, took one more step forward and instantly disappeared in Gu Jinlong's sight.

Gu Jinlong thought there must be some small arrays there covering things, so he followed on.

He was expecting to see Feng Zhiling after stepping over, but...

- Poof! - Things around him was changing. He felt a bit dizzy all of a sudden. When he came back to his mind and opened his eyes, he found himself back to where he talked to Feng Zhiling earlier.

He could only hear the voice of Feng Zhiling coming over,

"Brother Gu... Brother Gu? You... Where are you? Why don't you follow me in? Where are you?"

Gu Jinlong was speechless.

[I did want to follow you in... But... What was that?]

Gu Jinlong was confident that he had never taken any wrong steps. Yet what happened just now was the array was activated and sent him out of it.

He was thinking about what mistake he had made when he suddenly saw Feng Zhiling was moving out from the array. Feng Zhiling looked at Gu Jinlong and asked, "Why are you still here?"

Gu Jinlong frowned and smiled bitterly, "This array is truly weird. I was following you step by step. I am sure I didn't make any mistakes. But... I just got kicked out of it..."

Ye Xiao frowned, "Why? I have been in and out for many times and everything is ok... Hmm. How about this. You close your eyes and hold my hand. Let me lead you in."

Gu Jinlong nodded, "Great idea. Thanks, Brother Feng."

He grabbed Ye Xiao's hand and closed his eyes. They got back into the fog.

Gu Jinlong was so dutiful on this, but he didn't truly trust Feng Zhiling. He felt ok about it because in his eyes, Feng Zhiling was no better than an ant. That was why he wasn't afraid he would get sneak attacked by Feng Zhiling or something.

Ye Xiao was holding Gu Jinlong's hand. They were moving forward together. Things went well at the beginning, but after they took about twenty steps inside the fog, Ye Xiao took one more step and Gu Jinlong was confused again. He was still holding Feng Zhiling's hand, but he couldn't feel his body.

Gu Jinlong decided to follow him and took one more step forward again. Suddenly, things around him were changing again. He heard Feng Zhiling screaming, and the next moment, he was out of the array again.

This time, Ye Xiao was out too.

...

Chapter 116: He Killed Her!?

Feng Zhiling opened his mouth and rubbed his arms, "Ouch... What's wrong? My bones are about to break down. Brother Gu, you grabbed me so hard. My arm was going to be ripped off!"

Gu Jinlong kept his eyes wide opened. He was speechless.

[I grabbed you out? I broke your arm?

Was I that reckless?!

I swear to god I didn't grab you too hard. I was just casually grabbing your hand. It was the array that was grabbing your arm!]

Gu Jinlong stayed silent for a while and eventually gave up. He said, "I think that the Purple Lotus Decree Master must have set some weird spell on this mountain to keep it safe from anyone else. I think you are the only person who can get in and out of this mountain. I am afraid your master couldn't get out until he is done making supreme dans!"

Gu Jinlong imagined what himself would do if he were the Purple Lotus Decree Master. He also imagined what should have happened to Feng Zhiling's master. Well, Ye Xiao was glad that somebody helped him making up the story!

Gu Jinlong failed to get in so he just said, "I think I should just quit. I will go meet your master when there is a chance."

Ye Xiao tried persuading him to try again, "Let's try again, Brother Gu. Maybe you will just get it this time..."

Gu Jinlong rolled his eyes indifferently.

[Try again?

Try your ass, you fool! There's no way I can get in no matter how many times I try!]

"No need. I am bound not to get in this mountain." He held up the gloom in his mind and smiled, "Brother Feng, since you have already given your master those materials, he must be working on it right now. It may be interrupting if I just get in. Besides, there is this powerful array. I think I will just leave..."

He stood there with his hands on his back looking around at the mountains. Confusion flashed in his eyes, but it instantly disappeared.

He looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Brother Feng, may I ask you to look around that mountain over there with me?"

Ye Xiao looked at where Gu Jinlong was pointing. It was an average-size mountain. It was only about 300 meters high and about a dozen miles away from them.

Basically, it was within their reach.

Things on that mountain, they could see them clearly. The most obvious thing on that mountain was a big tree. The tree was so big and it nearly covered the whole mountain top.

"That small mountain? What for? There is just a big tree there. There's nothing worth looking for!" Ye Xiao was confused.

Comparing to the other mountains around it, that mountain was just like a hill.

"Heh heh. Brother Feng, you grew up here, so you don't think there is anything special." Gu Jinlong spoke sadly, "In fact, the reason why I keep coming to the Land of Han-Yang is because of this small mountain."

Ye Xiao was stunned and said, "What? What's on it that makes your care so much? There is nothing on it. All right then. Let me be your company. Maybe after a walk with you, I will learn something. I really want to know what is it that you care so much about."

Gu Jinlong smiled and started to move.

It was only more than a dozen miles away. It took only a while before they arrived.

Gu Jinlong stood on the foothill looking at the small mountain.

The expressions in his eyes changed fast. Eventually, they were filled with sadness. He said, "Let's go."

They walked so slowly onto the mountain.

The narrow paths on the mountain had been covered by wild grasses.

No matter where Gu Jinlong walked through, the grasses and the bushes disappeared right away.

He kept walking in silence.

Ye Xiao was following him and thought, [He looks sad. Was someone important to him buried in this place? Does he have a story about it?]

When they were about to reach the hillside, Gu Jinlong jumped off and reached the big tree. The crown of the tree was like an umbrella covering most of the mountain.

Under the tree, there was a small grave. It was lonely and desolate.

There was no gravestone; only a small mound.

Gu Jinlong started to clean the weeds that had grown around the mound. He used his powerful spiritual power to move the hidden

spring water to get through the tree. He also used his spiritual power to kill all the insects on the tree.

And then, Gu Jinlong kept looking at this grave that seemed to be very old. He was quiet for a long time.

After that, he sat down.

His head was down and he was quiet.

After a long time, he raised his head and murmured, "Brother Feng, thanks for your company. Do you want to hear a story?"

Ye Xiao said, "Sure. I am glad to."

Gu Jinlong bitterly smiled and said, "Long, long ago... There were two villages under this mountain... One was called the Li Village while the other was called the Gu Village. There was a young man in the Gu Village, named Gu Dalong. There was a girl in the Li Village, named Li Ming-Han. They grew up together like brother and sister. When they grew up, naturally, they were engaged and then got married."

"Li Ming-Han was the most beautiful girl within a hundred miles from the villages. Gu Dalong was surely flattered to have a wife like her. He cherished her like she was his life."

Ye Xiao immediately realized the implications of Gu Jinlong's words. [Gu Dalong must be Gu Jinlong. It turns out that the Land

of Han-Yang was Gu Jinlong's homeland.]

"One year after they got married, Gu Dalong met the most important man in his life, his master, a man who came from the upper world that got badly injured and fell to this land. Because of this man, Gu Dalong started his cultivation... He turned out to be a remarkable genius of cultivation... After his master fully recovered, he wanted to take Gu Jinlong to his sect for cultivation..."

"...at that time, Han-Er held on my leg and insisted that I should stay..." Gu Jinlong's voice became a bit like sobbing. He was a bit lost in thoughts too. He actually spoke out 'my leg' instead of 'Gu Dalong's'.

He didn't notice what he had said. He just continued, "I only want to focus on cultivation and obtain greater achievements, so I ignored Han-Er's sadness and left home. When I left, Han-Er was crying, 'I will wait for you... Please promise me that you will come back for me'."

"When I arrived in the Qing-Yun Realm, I was so concentrated on cultivation. It was such a wonderland for an ignorant fool like me... I was obsessed... When I started to think about the person who was waiting for me in my hometown, fifty years had passed!"

Ye Xiao sighed.

Although Ye Xiao hated Gu Jinlong a lot, he couldn't help but sigh for him.

For the girl.

Fifty years!

Waiting fifty years just for the guy!

She started waiting since they just got married.

Ten years after another ten years!

How many years did a normal person have?

A girl in the mortal world...

A love-struck girl spent her whole life waiting for a man...

"So I returned as soon as I could." Gu Jinlong said, "But when I saw her again, she was still waiting there... like she promised. But... I was still a young man at that time, the girl I missed had become a white-haired old woman in front of me..."

"I was so sad and I was in pain."

Gu Jinlong looked extremely sad when he spoke about that. Yet Ye Xiao noticed that there was a sense of viciousness on his face too...

"Fifty years of waiting, she finally saw you again. She got her husband back." Ye Xiao spoke lightly, "Her wait had come to an end after all... Oh."

"Yes. She got me back..." Gu Jinlong gritted his teeth, "But... She was so old and ugly by then..."

Ye Xiao turned around and looked at Gu Jinlong right away.

He couldn't believe what he just heard. [Unbelievable!]

A girl who had spent all her life waiting for you to keep the promise, and you actually called her old and ugly?

Old and ugly for what? Wasn't it because of you?]

"When I saw that old woman, I wanted to call her 'Han-Er'... But... I couldn't." Gu Jinlong closed his eyes and murmured, "And... When she saw me, she was so excited. She cried. The sound she made was so harsh. It was no longer the lovely sound of my Han-Er..."

Ye Xiao sighed and felt sad about it.

[After waiting for fifty years, she finally got her husband back.

She lost her youth. She lost her beauty!

That was so cruel for a girl...

But the crueler thing was that the man she was waiting for was such an asshole!]

"What happened next?" Gu Jinlong stopped talking, so Ye Xiao asked him.

"And then..." Gu Jinlong's face was twisting. He looked like a mad animal.

Ye Xiao was stunned. He felt that Gu Jinlong was about to say something horrible.

[No way...]

Ye Xiao really didn't want that feeling to be right. [Is a man really able to be so evil?!]

Well...

"...And then... I killed her..." Gu Jinlong's face was twisting. It looked like he was in enormous pain.

"You killed her!?"

Ye Xiao screamed out!

[He killed her!?!]

...

Chapter 117: Cruel and Unscrupulous!

She had spent all her life waiting for him and had been living a miserable life, yet he just killed her without any hesitation?!

Ye Xiao couldn't believe what he had just heard.

[How is it possible? How could he? Unbelievable!]

“Why?” Ye Xiao felt extremely angry about it. He could barely suppress it. So he asked, “Why did you kill her? She had been waiting for you her whole life... All she did in her whole life was to wait for you. It was the only hope that kept her living... Finally, you came back and she got to meet you once again. Why did you treat the woman who loved you so much like that? You didn't even comfort her, care for her, felt sorry for her... It was horrible enough that you didn't want her to recognize you. Why did you kill her?”

Although he had thought about it, he still felt that it was extremely ridiculous when he heard Gu Jinlong say it.

A man who had a bit of humanity would never do something like that.

That sentimental woman had finally met her husband again, yet she would have never thought that her husband was no more the man she loved; he turned into a mere cruel wolf.

What she got after waiting for her whole life was not a warm hug; it was a sharp sword.

There was nothing more cruel than this in the world.

Gu Jinlong closed his eyes and his tears stayed in his eyes. He shouted furiously, “Why couldn’t I kill her? In my heart, there was only the young and beautiful Han-Er who had a voice like an angel. That was the most beautiful thing I kept in my heart. Can you imagine how I felt when I came back and saw an old, ugly woman?”

“Her face was full of wrinkles. Her body was dirty. Her breasts were shriveled and droopy. And that harsh voice kept calling my name. Was she still my Han-Er? Was she? No! She wasn’t...”

Gu Jinlong shouted crazily.

Ye Xiao looked at him indifferently.

[She was old and ugly, so she was no longer Han-Er to you? Hadn’t she spent all her life waiting for you?]

For a man like that, Ye Xiao felt that furious was not enough to describe how furious he was at the moment.

“That was not my Han-Er. No. Absolutely not. Han-Er is the most beautiful girl in my heart. That ugly old woman was not my Han-Er.” Gu Jinlong spoke fiercely, “That old woman was just

desecrating my Han-Er. She destroyed the beautiful image of Han-Er in my heart. I killed her. I killed her without any hesitation. I buried her here. It was my Han-Er that was buried here, not that old woman. Absolutely not!”

Ye Xiao turned his head and looked at that lonely grave.

The lonely grave that stayed here for such a long time kept on telling a sad story.

Ye Xiao felt a certain coldness rising in his heart.

He had absorbed the gelid qi from the Cosmic Hades, so he had been confident that there would never be anything that could make him feel coldness in the world. However, that feeling of coldness was now freezing him from inside out.

It was not Gu Jinlong that made him feel that cold; it was the woman inside this grave.

She had been waiting her whole life for that memorable husband. She loved him her entire life and waited for him her entire life. What did she get in return?

Only a sword.

And a wolf who cruelly ended her life.

Ye Xiao suddenly felt that the world was big. It was so big that everything seemed to be so small...

If Han-Er still had consciousness after death, what would she think?

Ye Xiao didn't want to imagine it. He couldn't. He felt both pain and coldness just thinking about it.

He was living his second life and he had always been a brave man. He did what he wanted and took responsibility for it. There was hardly anything he didn't dare to imagine. Yet now he didn't dare to imagine the thought of a dead person.

At this moment, the eagerness he felt to kill Gu Jinlong had increased a thousandfold.

He actually hated Gu Jinlong more because of what had happened to Han-Er than what had happened to himself.

[He isn't a human.

He is just a wolf, an animal.

He has no humanity. He has no heart. He is a wild animal that makes people bristle with anger.

What a monster.]

Gu Jinlong stood up, he sadly looked at that grave and murmured, “Han-Er... How are you? I am back to see you. Brother Dalong is here to see you...” While he was speaking, tears started to drop down from his eyes.

Ye Xiao was stunned. He looked at Gu Jinlong and couldn't understand how could tears come out from such a shameless man like him.

He couldn't understand how shameless he was that he could actually come back here and call the woman ‘Han-Er’ and call himself ‘Brother Dalong’...

Didn't he feel any self-accusation?

Didn't he understand that from the day he had chosen the cultivation life, he was no longer Gu Dalong?

Gu Jinlong murmured and spoke, “Brother Feng, I am a sensitive man... I can't forget the day when Han-Er looked at me with a face adorned with tears. I can't forget her eyes and her beautiful hair. The purple dress she was wearing was a gift I gave her. That day, she was wearing it and it danced in the breeze... Her eyes, wet with tears, were looking at me... It was so sad and beautiful. I can never forget that scene...”

He suddenly cried out and said, “Every time when I think about it, my heart breaks...”

[My heart is broken now. Ok?

My heart breaks not because you are “sensitive”, you asshole, because the sentimental woman was so poor. Her heart must be broken into pieces.]

Ye Xiao sighed.

Gu Jinlong was lost in sorrow for a long while before he finally stood up. He looked at the grave and said, “Han-Er, I am leaving. I will come to see you again... Please take care of yourself in the heaven. Don’t make me worry...”

Ye Xiao saw him take out some [paper-money](#) and candles and lit them up sincerely. At this moment, he didn’t know how to describe the feeling in his heart.

To Ye Xiao, this man was totally insane. He was a lunatic.

Maybe when Gu Jinlong stepped on the cultivation life, he was still Gu Dalong. When he met Han-Er again, he was still Gu Dalong. However, the man who killed Han-Er was Gu Jinlong and Gu Dalong had died along with Han-Er at that moment.

Ye Xiao took over some incenses from Gu Jinlong and lit them up. He stucked them in front of the grave with sincerity. He bow to the lonely woman who was inside this lonely grave for thousands of years.

He spoke in his mind, [Your name is Han-Er, Li Ming-Han, right? ... I promise I will avenge you. I will kill this monster for you. I will do it not only for me, but also for you, for your life that was wasted waiting for him.

I am going to kill Gu Jinlong no matter what.]

Ye Xiao made a vow in his heart.

He had never been so eager to take someone's life.

The eagerness in his heart was so strong that he nearly couldn't suppress it.

After he finished speaking in his mind, the wind suddenly howled in the quiet sky. The fallen leaves and grasses were blown up to the sky.

In front of the grave, there seemed to be a whirlwind. A lot of leaves and grasses were circling in front of Ye Xiao...

It was like the woman's spirit was answering him...

When the wind stopped and everything calmed down, a small mound showed up in front of Ye Xiao.

Gu Jinlong looked at Ye Xiao and spoke with gratitude, "Brother

Feng, thank you. You incensed for my Han-Er. I knew it was right to be your brother...”

Ye Xiao forcibly smiled, “It’s ok, big brother.”

Gu Jinlong raised his head and felt the breeze on his face. He smiled and said, “Look, Han-Er is happy... She is happy that I am here to see her. It didn’t waste her life waiting, did it...”

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes with disdain and was speechless.

Gu Jinlong was lost in thoughts and then he said gently, “All these years, I have never told anything else about this to anyone... I must have looked stupid in front you.”

Ye Xiao said, “I didn’t realize you are a sentimental man.”

That was full of irony.

Gu Jinlong was so moved now, so he actually didn’t get the irony in Ye Xiao’s words. His tears dripped down on his face and said, “In my life... My biggest flaw is being sentimental...”

Ye Xiao swallowed.

He nearly puked out because of that sick words.

[How can a man be so shameless?]

Gu Jinlong was speaking as if his cruelty was because he was sentimental.

That was truly indescribably shameless.

When they left the grave and got to the foot of the mountain, Gu Jinlong seemed reluctant to leave. He walked a few steps and looked back, as if he was so unwilling to leave...

People might have thought that he was truly a sentimental man.

Ye Xiao took a deep breath to suppress the anger inside of his heart. He was afraid that he would let it explode all of a sudden.

They left the mountain and went back to town together. When they reached the city gate, they took separate ways.

Gu Jinlong had invited Ye Xiao to the salesroom before they left each other, but Ye Xiao didn't have the mood to do so.

He felt nauseated about Gu Jinlong's "love story". He didn't want to stay with him any longer.

Since then, Ye Xiao's cultivation was obviously improved.

To improve further, Ye Xiao threw one piece of spiritual jade, sometimes two, into the Space every now and then. It was for activating the furious mode of the Cosmic Hades. He wanted to achieve big progress in cultivation through the dangers.

Every time when he did so, he was in great danger. Yet he was always smiling when he was doing it...

That smile was a representation of a cold and murderous desire.

...

Paper-money (纸钱), in China people burned papers that are made to resemble money as an offering to the dead.

Chapter 118: What's Wrong?

The next few days, Ye Xiao focused on cultivating. He naturally didn't go out and make any trouble. The world wouldn't stop running just because of his absence. Many things had happened.

The king had finally decreed that Prince Hua-Yang should prepare his army for the battle in the south.

The Crown Prince's side had been quietened down. It was as if he was waiting with patience.

Ye Xiao knew that the Crown Prince was obviously waiting for his death.

He had been hit by the Melting Bone Palm for over seven days...

But it was not enough for the wound to be activated!

The wound was still hidden, waiting to explode.

Therefore, Ye Xiao was still vigorous. He showed up a lot. Naturally, he had to squeeze some time during his cultivation to show up in front of people. He really felt that time was not enough for him, yet he still had to spend time showing people he was still doing ok!

Guan Zheng-Wen secretly came to check on Ye Xiao once. When

he got back, he said, "Ye Xiao looks fine. But his eyes have turned a bit blue. I think... the wound was about to show effect."

Hearing Master Guan's words, the Crown Prince and the Crown Princess felt relieved.

The Crown Prince said, "In fact, I have this feeling that... it is quite a waste about this Ye Xiao."

He showed pity for Ye Xiao and it made the Crown Princess become mad.

However, they thought Ye Xiao was going to die soon under the wound of the Melting Bone Palm with a horrible look.

The Crown Princess was furious, but she didn't stick on it too much.

The Mu Clan's men had never showed up in the Capital again these days. They tried everything in order to apologize to Master Bai and the House of the Chaotic Storm.

However...

The House of the Chaotic Storm was such a mystery. No matter what the Mu Clan did, they just couldn't get in touch.

During these days, Zuo Wuji hadn't shown up. It was said that he

had been studying at home all the time. He was studying knowledge from all aspects at full stretch... However, he had sent someone to give Ye Xiao several bottle of Sunny Liquor.

Well, the Sunny Liquor had a sunny name. In fact... it was the same as Viagra. Since Lord Zuo himself was impotent, he just gave them all to Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang.

Lan Langlang was surely happy to have them. He was so happy as if he found out some priceless treasures.

Ye Xiao was different.

Because Ye Xiao was chaste!!!

Eh-hem. Ye Xiao was truly chaste. He was even a bit too chaste. He had been a virgin since he had been born in his previous life. How could he possibly know how to use this kind of thing? He had no idea what this liquor was for. He knew who to share pleasure though, so he asked the kitchen to prepare some food and invited his Uncle Song to drink the liquor together.

So his friend gave him some liquor as present, and he shared it with his Uncle Song. It was quite reasonable, wasn't it?

Ye Xiao thought so. And he also did so.

Song Jue was happy that Ye Xiao had prepared him a treat, so he came.

Because of the Golden Mai Palm, the boozy Song Jue had quitted drinking for over a dozen years. Now that he was asked to drink some, he thought he needed to get drunk.

When the meals were all prepared, Ye Xiao took out the Sunny Liquor and showed it to Song Jue proudly.

"Look! Uncle Song! Fine liquor!"

Song Jue was stunned right away.

[My nephew prepared a full table of tasty foods for me. That's great. But how come he would bring up some liquor that enhances male capacity?

I am kind of alcoholic, but I really am not so into that kind of alcohol!]

Song Jue's face was twisting. He wanted to say, "I don't think I need that..."

Yet he couldn't say it. He stared at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was confused, "Uncle Song, what's wrong? I thought you love drinking? Why are you still holding your cup? Come on. Put it down and let me fill it up."

Song Jue held the cup tight and said with a strange face, "Xiao-Xiao, you want me to... drink that with you?"

Ye Xiao answered with certainty, "Of course. I have heard it is a fine liquor. Normal people don't have the luck to drink it. Zuo Wuji had it because of the connections his grandfather had. He only had a few bottles and he sent them to me right away... Thank god this guy is very loyal and always remember to give me things. I know you love fine liquor a lot. How can I forget to share it with you? Uncle Song, drink as much as you can."

Song Jue's face kept twisting. He didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

It was thoughtful words Ye Xiao had just spoken, yet Song Jue felt uncomfortable!

It was indeed good stuff.

Normal people couldn't even see it.

However...

[Don't you know what it is for? Really? You are a foppish young lord who had been fooling around a lot. How can you not know about it? I don't remember you are that chaste...

Since when do I love this kind of liquor? When?!

You little bastard, you are cursing me, aren't you? What do you want to say!

You want to get kicked, you should just tell me so!]

Song Jue thought that he himself was shameless enough. However, he just couldn't sit here and drink this kind of liquor with his nephew. If his big brother got to know such a "glorious thing" of him, he would be completely beaten up to death...

Well, what if his big brother was too angry so he kicked Song Jue's dxck to death... That was the true tragedy that Song Jue feared!

To avoid such tragedy, Song Jue turned Ye Xiao down and explained something like he was not feeling well recently, so he couldn't drink it and thanks for asking and so on...

Ye Xiao was surprised that Song Jue actually didn't drink. So he filled up a cup of liquor for himself instead...

Song Jue looked at him indifferently and thought, [Well, show me you are joking with me. If you really drink it, that's fine. If you don't drink it... that means you are fooling with me!

Then I will beat you up.

Well, I may not be able to beat you up, but I will die trying!]

Of course, Ye Xiao didn't know anything about what Song Jue was thinking.

In fact, he had been fond of drinking in his previous life. Looking at the crystal liquor inside the cup, Ye Xiao felt that it was attractive somehow. It smelled so good that Ye Xiao truly wanted to drink it up. He wouldn't get seriously drunk, but he would have several cups.

He casually ate some food and then drank it up under Song Jue's stare.

Song Jue immediately grinned.

He was a bit of a gloat, [Is he... not so well in that thing? Or is he really unaware of this liquor? Anyway, this cup of liquor he had will make him suffer for some time...]

Even an impotent man needed only a little bit of this liquor.

Yet Ye Xiao drank up so much at once!

[I want to see what you are going to do later! I won't allow you to go out for whores! Drinking so much of that... will only make you suffer for one night. That's all.

You bastard actually tried to make me drink that?

You deserve it tonight!]

Ye Xiao clicked his tongue after that drink and said, "It tastes so good, but there is slightly some flavor of medicine. It is good anyway. Are you sure you don't want some, Uncle Song?"

Song Jue's face was dark as he affirmatively shook his head.

He stared at Ye Xiao with a strange look.

Ye Xiao shook his head and said, "Well, if you don't want it, I am not going to save it. It is truly some priceless liquor. That boy truly has some treasures for me. I kind of like it."

And then he took up the whole big bottle and raised his head. He started to drink it all...

- Cooroo... -

Song Jue was astonished while looking at him!

He was so shocked that he couldn't react at all. He totally forgot to stop Ye Xiao.

When he realized that, Ye Xiao had already drunk half of the 2.5

liters of liquor.

"Oh shxt! You fool! Don't drink it. You can't drink it like this!"
Song Jue's face was twisted as he kept stomping the floor.

[Oh damn it! That's not cool...

It turns out he doesn't know anything about this liquor...

Look at how excited he is...

What the hell! What should I do!

Bad things are going to happen!]

Ye Xiao put down the bottle and wiped his mouth. He curiously asked, "I can't drink it like this? Why? What are you talking about? Do you think I am wasting it because I drank too much at a time? Don't worry. I have several bottles. If you like it, I will send the rest of the bottles to you and let you enjoy them all alone. How about that, huh?!"

Song Jue was stunned.

[What the hell... Drink them all? How do you know I like this kind of thing? Bullshxt. You are going to know why soon!

[How can I frankly explain such a thing?](#)]

He coughed and said, "I am not so into it. Don't send me anything. This liquor... You can't drink it like that anyway. You shouldn't drink that much at a time... You will know it soon..."

Ye Xiao was indifferent, "Uncle Song, you are a good man, but you are a bit narrow-minded. You don't feel well today so you can't drink. That's fine. I have a lot saved for you..."

He raised his head again and finished the rest of the liquor right away.

He wiped his mouth and said, "Good!"

Looking at that, Song Jue was totally stunned. He had lost his language at the moment.

[Good? You will feel even better later...

Will he get sick after drinking that much of this kind of thing?]

As expected, after a while, Ye Xiao's face became strange. It turned red. He murmured, "What's wrong? Why is it so puffy... I don't feel well..."

Song Jue found him both funny and annoying. He said, "Well, Xiao-Xiao..."

"Something is wrong..." Ye Xiao felt an urge in his head, and then he felt his private part turning hard like steel... He kept his legs together and took a deep breath, "What's happening to me..."

...

It seems Song Jue was quite a traditional Chinese, so he felt it embarrassed to speak frankly of anything about sex.

Chapter 119: Everything Is Ready for the Kill!

Ye Xiao had spent his whole previous life cultivating the Pure Yang Martial Art, but he apparently knew that his private part would turn big and hard sometimes. Yet it was the first time it happened to Ye Xiao because of some liquor.

Moreover... he felt it rather difficult to suppress the urge.

Song Jue said, "Xiao-Xiao... What you drank... is a top quality male-strengthening liquor..."

Ye Xiao was stunned.

And then he jumped up high.

"Male-strengthening liquor? What?" Ye Xiao screamed out.

[I have been a virgin in all my lives... Apparently, I don't need that shxt.

This is a huge joke...]

Song Jue said, "Ah? You... No way... You... You didn't know that?"

Ye Xiao bowed like a prawn trying to cover his "outstanding part", "What are you talking about... I... I haven't done that thing ever... How could I know... Oh no... This... It feels so weird..."

[Ne... Never done that thing... ever?]

Song Jue was surprised. He said, "You, you, you... You are still a virgin? A virgin chicken?"

Ye Xiao showed disdain, "You are talking superfluous words... Ahhhooo..."

Song Jue was about to faint. [A virgin drank 2.5 liters of male-strengthening liquor?

What should we do?

How do I save this stupid little virgin...]

He angrily said, "No way. You used to fool around with those girls... What did you do then? You are not a baby now. How could you not know about such a kind of thing?"

That was absolutely not some proper thing that an uncle should talk about to his nephew. He actually blamed Ye Xiao for not having sex...

Ye Xiao groaned and moaned. He knew that he had showed

something that may expose his true status. He said, "I was just talking about life... about dreams with them..."

Song Jue opened his eyes as he stared at Ye Xiao for a while, and then he spat out and angrily shouted, "What did you say? You spent all night to talk about life with those girls... And about dreams?"

Ye Xiao nodded, "Yes, of course. What else could I do..."

Song Jue was stunned again for a while, and then he turned furious, "Why the fxck didn't you tell me earlier... You fxcking... You, you, you... Fxck! You are a saint..."

[Staying with a girl all night only to talk about life and dreams... Isn't it something only a saint would do?

Well of course it could be because of impotency. But look at this guy's little tent there. He is absolutely not impotent.]

"Well... What now?" Song Jue furiously said.

[I don't know what to do now.

If he is a randy goat, things would be much easier. I can just throw him into some brothel. But he is still a virgin. He doesn't know anything about doing that kind of thing...

Well... That is not cool.

Such... Such a waste...]

Ye Xiao was moaning. He murmured, "Hey, hey. Don't worry... Let me have a cold bath and get this thing done..."

Song Jue watched him leave bowing like a prawn.

And then he heard a sound from the pool... - Splash. -

[Finally, this young lord had his lesson today...] He hurriedly followed up and shouted, "Somebody come... Go get more water from the well..."

The 36 blood guards came...

Song Jue knew that the water in the pool wouldn't work...

That night, the sound of water in the House of Ye didn't stop.

One bucket after another of ice cold water were splashed on Ye Xiao. He put his head into the water first, and then he poured it on his own body.

- Splash... -

- Splash...-

- Splash splash splash splash...-

The guards, who were all experienced men, were watching their young lord being embarrassed. They watched him pour the water and noticed the 'tent' on his pants. They were holding themselves trying not to laugh out...

Some of them just threw aside the buckets and sat on the floor laughing out like hell when they were carrying the water. They just couldn't help it...

That was so hilarious.

One of the guards got close to Song Jue and spoke in a low voice, "Chief, that's not a tough task, is it? ... Simply go to the brothel and everything will be fine... Right? Our young lord, he is an expert on that, isn't he?"

Song Jue stared at him and said, "Bullshit. Do you think I am fool? He is an expert, huh? Expert my ass. He is just a little virgin... Do you know how he got all this? He didn't know what kind of liquor he drank, yet he still took in a whole bottle of it. How could an expert not recognize that kind of liquor..."

The guard was surprised. He returned to his position, and then after a while, he started to laugh. Apparently, he just figured out how hilarious it was.

[A virgin? He is a virgin... Hahahaha...]

He looked at Ye Xiao's "tent". That was huge...

[That... is not some ordinary virgin... That's a big-cxck virgin... That's huge...] He was laughing, but then he stopped all of a sudden.

He lowered his head and looked at his own. Suddenly, he felt sorry about himself...

They had been busy for the whole night.

Dawn was about to come.

Ye Xiao started to feel that the urge inside him was reduced a bit. He shouted, "All right. All right, everybody... Fxck this shit. I have spent every minute that I should have spent in my entire life washing myself in only one night... I think I have lost a full layer of skin."

He just finished talking and people started to laugh again...

After this special night, Ye Xiao never dared to have that kind of liquor in his whole life again. He didn't really need it, and it was so embarrassing for him now. That was the biggest disgrace he had.

However, he had stored the rest of the liquor that was given by Zuo Wuji. He wouldn't drink them anymore... He had made some changes on those bottles of liquor.

He was planning to make some trouble by using that liquor, but it turned out that Ye Xiao had finished something great with that liquor... That was a story after a long time after all.

Because of this special night, Ye Xiao went to the Zuo Wuji's house and beat him up seriously.

He just beat him up without saying anything.

Zuo Wuji felt that he did nothing wrong and was innocent. He just didn't know what was wrong with Ye Xiao...

When he got to know the story about all that, he nearly died laughing... And that was the story that Zuo Wuji liked to say the most for the rest of his life.

Every time he narrated it, he felt so proud of it.

He always said, "Do you guys know the Xiao Monarch?... Hahahaha... He drank up a full bottle of the male-strengthening liquor that I gave to him and he got so 'filled with man spirit'. Hahahahaha..."

And then whoever was listening to him would respect him...

Well, that was what would happen when he became the Prime Minister Zuo.

The next two days after that special night, Ye Xiao went out of town a lot.

Song Jue didn't know what he was up to. He tried to follow Ye Xiao twice, yet he always lost Ye Xiao somehow...

Apparently, he was not qualified to stalk Ye Xiao.

Song Jue felt embarrassed, so he could only say something like, "I am gonna beat you up you little shit!"

However, when Ye Xiao returned, Song Jue didn't dare to say anything. He was too embarrassed.

He used to be quite a great cultivator in the old days...

But now, he couldn't even follow the trail of a teenager. He had been misled to a toilet once, and to a brothel the other time...

He could catch up with nothing.

Obviously, he was not that good now. He was too embarrassed to say anything about it...

Gu Jinlong could feel something everyday, "Feng Zhiling came to town today", "Feng Zhiling left town now", "Feng Zhiling..."

He was satisfied because he felt everything was under his control.

He felt even pleased when he thought that Feng Zhiling didn't know he was under control...

He thought that he had successfully fooled Feng Zhiling, and Feng Zhiling trusted him so much. He believed that the supreme dan beads and the Cosmic Hades would be in his hands soon, and Feng Zhiling would still trust him. Gu Jinlong was so happy about it.

He smiled a lot because he thought about all this a lot. That was some kind of smile with confidence, self-obsession, pride, satisfaction...

Every time Wan Zhenghao saw his smile, he would immediately walk away.

He felt scared about that smile on Gu Jinlong's face...

He felt like he was about to shit his pants whenever he saw that smile.

If he had the chance to see the smile on Ye Xiao's face, he would

understand that there was never only one pervert in the world...

The smile on Ye Xiao's face could only be more unbearable than Gu Jinlong.

Now he was on a tall mountain around the Pen Rack Mountain. He was setting up another array. He was smiling. Hmm... That was a smile of a scary psycho...

This time, he was setting up a Disappearance Array.

He was sure that Gu Jinlong could break down this array if he wanted to.

On the mountain, Ye Xiao spent days and dug a ventilated cave that was connected with tunnels.

It was a spacious cave.

He had put some decorations in it and even painted some lotus on the wall...

After that, he checked around the whole place again and again.

After he made sure that everything was perfect, he nodded while looking at the cave.

Chapter 120: Gu Jinlong is Coming!

At the end, Ye Xiao piled up some big stones in the corner of the cave and put some weapons behind those stones...

- Pah pah pah... -

"All done!" Ye Xiao clapped his hands and looked around the super trap he had just set in front of him. He was satisfied, "Now I will just wait for Gu Jinlong, that bastard, to fall in front of me."

On the other side, Gu Jinlong was sitting inside the salesroom.

He suddenly opened his eyes and stood up.

What he sensed had suddenly made him excited like he had never been before.

[That's it!

That's the spiritual energy I left touching me.

The Cosmic Hades has been found.

That's it! The tiny stream of gelid energy is impossible to fake.

I know Feng Zhiling is outside the city. My ring won't lie.

Finally, the Purple Lotus Decree Master shows up and the Cosmic Hades is found!]

- Poof! -

Gu Jinlong moved up and suddenly turned into a rainbow.

- Shoot! -

That rainbow rapidly flew out through the window. After only a second, he was outside the city already.

That was the movement, Rainbow Rush.

His speed could even distort the air.

However, he was suppressing the shaking of his movement. He didn't want to show himself, so he was trying not to be discovered.

Even if the Purple Lotus Decree Master was about to die, Gu Jinlong didn't dare to be reckless facing him.

He knew that a tiny mistake could lead him to failure.

It was a man who had fought against the Xiao Monarch in the old days he was facing now after all.

And the Xiao Monarch was able to slaughter most of the men in the three factions.

At this moment, Gu Jinlong was extremely cautious. He tried to move as fast as he could towards the point that kept transmitting the spiritual vibration to him.

While he was getting closer, the vibration became heavier.

The feeling of the Cosmic Hades was clearer.

It was like the Cosmic Hades was waving its hand to him.

Apparently, the Cosmic Hades was quite close to him now.

Gu Jinlong calmed down and tried to sense it further, and then he moved slowly towards it with cautions. He was about to get to the Pen Rack Mountain, where Feng Zhiling's master was supposed to be in.

[Hmm. It seems that the Cosmic Hades is not in the Pen Rack Mountain.]

He didn't stop. He went over the Pen Rack Mountain and moved ahead. Suddenly, a tall big mountain surrounded by cloud and fog showed up in his sight.

It looked like the cloud was devouring down the mountain.

Gu Jinlong was surprised and pleased when he looked at the mountain.

"Disappearance Array it is!"

[The Purple Lotus Decree Master actually set up a Disappearance Array in his own place. Humph. Nobody in the Land of Han-Yang can break this array indeed. However, that is excluding people of the Qing-Yun Realm. That means I can break it.] Gu Jinlong was so happy about it.

"The array he has set in the mountain of the dan-maker is so mysterious and firm. I couldn't break it indeed. This array here is not an easy one either, but I can absolutely break it. I guess there are two possibilities about him. First one is that he didn't have enough material to set up two good arrays... The second one is that he was so injured that he couldn't set up another powerful array again."

"According to how people described him, it is unlikely that he would face the situation of lacking materials. Such a wealthy man, how could he not have enough materials for only some arrays? So... I guess he must have been at the end of his days now. He must be dying now. That's why he kept on leaking out the breath of the Cosmic Hades."

Gu Jinlong was smiling in a cruel and happy way.

"I think the Purple Lotus Decree Master is doomed to die in my hands."

He then got close to the mountain and started to break the array.

Although he was assuming the Purple Lotus Decree Master was dying, he didn't dare to break the array in a forcible way. He was afraid that the dying man would escape with the Cosmic Hades if he noticed someone was breaking in.

The Purple Lotus Decree Master was an experienced man from the Qing-Yun Realm after all. He might do something great even when he was about to die the next moment.

While Gu Jinlong was trying to break the array, he couldn't help praising it.

[The Purple Lotus Decree Master is a great guy indeed.

He was actually able to set up such a fantastic array even when he was dying...]

Eventually, he had broken through the last part of the array.

Gu Jinlong stepped forward and then laid down on the floor immediately. He was in the middle of a small road... If someone was looking up on the mountain, he would be discovered.

Gu Jinlong was down on the floor moving like a snake. He slid into a bush beside the road. He silently moved along the road on the floor towards the top of the mountain.

He looked like a big lizard, ugly but fast.

He could feel the Cosmic Hades getting closer.

It was close to him now.

About a hundred meters away from him, before he saw the mouth of a cave.

The breath of the Cosmic Hades was coming from inside that cave.

He was confident that the Purple Lotus Decree Master was inside the cave too.

Gu Jinlong even stopped his heart beat and pulses right away.

Things were always easy to go wrong when they were close to success.

Gu Jinlong knew clearly about this.

[I can't be too happy about it.]

[I have to be cautious.]

[I have to be careful.]

[I can't be reckless before I get the Cosmic Hades and kill the Purple Lotus Decree Master.]

Gu Jinlong kept warning himself. He was getting closer and closer to the cave.

He was extremely cautious.

There was no sound from the cave.

Gu Jinlong felt everything was proceeding as planned and reached out one of his hand to climb up to the cave.

He was smiling now.

He had confirmed one thing at least. The Purple Lotus Decree Master must be very weak at the moment. Otherwise, he would be discovered easily. He felt right about all of this.

He was confident that he would get a lot of benefits this time.

There must be so many treasures with the Purple Lotus Decree

Master that he wanted.

Suddenly, a cool and merciless voice sounded from inside the cave, "Who's there?"

The voice was full of horror.

Gu Jinlong was steady. He was happy and he couldn't help smiling.

The voice was horrible and scary indeed, but it was a voice of a weak man.

Normal men might be unable to bear the threats inside the voice, but for him, it was nothing but a boisterous sound of a dying man.

"The Purple Lotus Decree Master?" Gu Jinlong didn't hide. He stood up and stepped into the cave casually. He said with a sneer, "I am Gu Jinlong. I am here to visit you. It is a wonderful opportunity to see the well-known Purple Lotus Decree Master of the Qing-Yun Realm become like a homeless dog. Hahaha, hahaha..."

He was laughing loudly and impolitely. He had slipped into the cave quickly.

His sword flashed and suddenly, his sword, the Breeze Sword, became like a thunder moving around the space.

"Gu Jinlong!" A scream came out from deep inside the cave. It was filled with both surprise and fear.

Gu Jinlong rushed into the cave like a lightning, and he saw a man rushing to the other side of the cave at the same speed. He was also as fast as lightning. Gu Jinlong was highly cultivated with his eyes, yet he could only see a shadow of the man's back. The man rushed out of the cave all of a sudden and disappeared.

That man only left a fierce sound coming over to Gu Jinlong, "Gu Jinlong, I know you are from the Sunlight Sect. You took advantage of my perilous state. I won't forget this. When I recover, I will go wipe out every single living thing in the Sunlight Sect at once. I will take all you people's lives to avenge this insult today!"

The sound of this 'Purple Lotus Decree Master' was getting weaker and weaker. He was even coughing at the end.

"When you recover? Do you really believe that you have the chance to get away from me today?" Gu Jinlong followed up. The Purple Lotus Decree Master was his first target at the moment. He had to take him down.

When he was about to rush out, he suddenly stopped.

He saw something with his sharp eyes.

There was a dark-cyan metallic object inside the cave.

It was the Cosmic Hades.

That was the thing that he wanted the most.

Compared to this priceless treasure, the Purple Lotus Decree Master meant nothing.

He didn't expect that the Purple Lotus Decree Master was so weak that he just escaped from the fight today. He had decided to fight hundreds of rounds for the Cosmic Hades today. Now he was relieved that he didn't need to. However, he still had regrets. He was too cautious. If he could have been braver and attacked earlier, the Purple Lotus Decree Master would have surely died in his hands. Now he had escaped.

[Purple Lotus Decree Master escaped from me... So be it. I still have Feng Zhiling to get to you.

There will be lots of chances to kill the Purple Lotus Decree Master in his current state.]

...

Chapter 121: Wow! It Attracted!

[The Purple Lotus Decree Master wants to recover soon, so he will definitely come for the supreme dan beads someday. I will have the chance to kill him after all. He will get worse and worse as time passes by. Things will only get better for me.

Besides, if I killed that dan-maker, he will lose his only chance to recover himself... Well, surely that is my last option. I won't kill that old man unless I have no other choice.]

Gu Jinlong only cared about the Cosmic Hades that was in front of him. His eyes were full of wishful lights!

He could feel the gelid aura of the stone in such a short distance. It made him more excited!

"That's it! That's it!"

He murmured. He was so thrilled that his body trembled, "This is... This is the No. 1 treasure in the myth! Now it is finally in my hands!"

He walked slowly toward the Cosmic Hades with a full face of obsession.

He saw some spiritual jades on the surface of the Cosmic Hades shining with some strange glows. He thought that the Purple Lotus Decree Master must be so flurried that he left these things.

Gu Jinlong was only looking at the Cosmic Hades. He couldn't care less about some spiritual jades.

They were nothing compared to the real treasure he was looking at.

"The main martial art of the Sunlight Sect, Yin-Yang Strength Art, is a difficult but wonderful martial art. Normally, it needs 3000 years to reach the small achievement, but with the Cosmic Hades, I can reach the big achievement in only three years..." Gu Jinlong raised his head and laughed, "Once I finish cultivating the Yin-Yang Strength Art, I will be invincible in the Qing-Yun Realm! Who dares to violate my order in the Qing-Yun Realm then?!"

"Invincible! No one will dare to violate my commands! Hahahahaha..."

Gu Jinlong was so pleased that he maniacally laughed while dancing.

He was always a dispassionate man who never showed his true emotions on the surface. However, he thought that nobody else was there, and even if there was, he wouldn't care. In the Land of Han-Yang, there was no one who could fight against him!

Now that the thing that he wanted the most in his life was right in front of him, he couldn't contain the happiness inside his heart!

Why would he suppress his true emotions now?

So he didn't even want to stay calm at the moment. He just wanted to let go of his heart!

"Once I finish practicing the Yin-Yang Strength Art, I will fear nobody! What No.1 Evil-woman? What Qiong-Hua Moon King? What three factions? What Ageless Palace? They are all garbages in my eyes! They will all become my servants! Hahahaha..."

"I will take charge of the entire Qing-Yun Realm! I am the invincible monarch! When I unify the Qing-Yun Realm, I will build a kingdom in the mortal world, and I will be the everlasting king! I will live forever and rule the world forever!"

"Hahahaha... Every land in the world will be my land! All the capable men in the world are all my underlings! All the men should die! All the girls should be under my crotch! Hahahahahaha..." Gu Jinlong's pupils became bigger. While he was speaking, he became crazier and crazier. He was expressing the happiness he had at the moment.

He laughed like he had gone mad!

All of a sudden, he raised his head and yelled at the sky, "Han-Er! You used to ask me why I cultivated! You asked me whether cultivation was better than our happy life! You asked me whether it was worthy for me to give up everything for cultivation! Hahaha... I can answer you now!"

He yelled like a beast, "Cultivation is my way to be the monarch! It will help me rule the world! It will make me the king of all mankind! I cultivate for this moment! For now! For doing whatever I want!"

"Han-Er!" He kept yelling, "I did it!"

"In the history, I am the only one who deserves to be called the dragon among mankind!"

"I am the true dragon!"

"The three realms are all mine! MINE!"

He laughed like crazy.

He didn't noticed that the spiritual jades on the Cosmic Hades stopped shining now. They had become dim.

The Cosmic Hades was spreading some strange feeling of attractions. It was glowing.

It seemed to be creating some phenomenon that could drive people crazy. It was influencing Gu Jinlong's mind at the moment!

It made him lose his mind! It made him mad!

However, he didn't notice that.

He had checked the cave very carefully earlier. There was nobody else here, so he was completely relaxed!

The thing he wanted the most in his life was now in his hands. He was satisfied and extremely happy about everything.

He kept shouting while he was walking to the Cosmic Hades. His eyes were filled with a certain fervor. He reached out his hand to touch the Cosmic Hades. His eyes were already filled with tears because he was so happy...

"All that I want in my life... The glory of my whole life... Will begin from now, from here. I will be the monarch of the three realms for the rest of my life. And the beginning of all that is now and here..." While speaking, he had placed his hand on the Cosmic Hades that he had been dreaming of.

He was so gentle. He acted like a husband on his first night with his wife while reaching his hand towards the Cosmic Hades.

Unexpectedly, the next moment, he suddenly screamed out, "Ahhhh!!! What... What the hell is going on?"

The moment he touched the Cosmic Hades, the 99 spiritual jades laying on top of it all fade out immediately and became dust falling to the floor!

At the same time, from inside the Cosmic Hades, there was an extremely strong power crazily dragging Gu Jinlong over!

It was like a powerful demon grabbing his food with all efforts!

Gu Jinlong tried everything to resist, but the enormous power of his, which was enough to crack a mountain and fill up a sea, suddenly didn't work anymore!

He was totally unable to defend...

- PAH! -

He firmly stuck on the Cosmic Hades!

The cold glow that the Cosmic Hades had been transmitting suddenly increased!

The Cosmic Hades tightly attracted Gu Jinlong.

At the moment, it was like the most powerful magnet in the world!

Gu Jinlong was like a tiny piece of metal that got stuck on a magnet!

He was struggling with his eyes full of fear. He tried everything

he could to resist it. He kept running his martial arts and operated many methods. But he couldn't get rid of it. He couldn't even move a finger!

The stone suddenly produced such a huge power that attracted everything. He couldn't resist it even with the capability of the third level of the Dao Origin Stage!

While the attracting power of the stone increased, even Gu Jinlong's hair, eyebrows, eyelash and fine hair were moving closer to the stone and sticking on it!

He felt that the spiritual power inside his body was activated and was about to rush into the stone.

"What the hell is this? What's happening? Oh no..." Gu Jinlong was scared. His eyes were stuck on the Cosmic Hades now. He was extremely scared.

He used whatever he could to unleash all the strength he had just so he could resist the stone. By doing that, it became worse.

No matter what he did, his spiritual power would be instantly absorbed!

After a short while, the attracting power increased several times. Now he didn't dare to move in the slightest.

At the moment, a figure flashed at the entrance of the cave. A

humble and honest voice shouted, "What?! What is wrong?"

It was Feng Zhiling's voice!

Gu Jinlong was like hearing a song from a wonderful land. He was so happy as he shouted, "Brother Feng, help... This stupid stone got me stuck..."

Ye Xiao entered the cave and saw the strange scene. He felt relaxed immediately. He nearly laughed out. In his heart, he was happy, [Oh yeah! It really stuck him...]

Yet on his face, it showed lots of emotions except happiness. He acted like he was shocked and got close to him quickly, "Brother Gu? Why are you here? What's going on?"

Gu Jinlong moaned, "I operated my special martial art to find my family treasure and got a reaction from the Cosmic Hades. So I came for it. When I came here and found it... I was so happy so I wanted to take it back as soon as possible. But some tricks had been set on it. That's why I am stuck on it now... I can't move even a single bit. Do something. Drag me off..."

Gu Jinlong was truly an outstanding man. He could make up such a good lie within such a short time. He was trying to make Feng Zhiling feel sorry for him and save him.

Ye Xiao was an even better actor. He was "surprised" and spoke with concern, "That cold thing had some tricks on it? You are

framed? You can't move? Why? Is it really that powerful?"

Gu Jinlong was worried and disgraced at the same time. He said with anger, "I was reckless so I fell into the enemy's trap! I know very well about my family treasure though. I know how to solve this. I just need a small favor of yours. Reach out your hand to grab mine. As long as you pull my hand off the stone a tiny bit... That will be fine."

To pull his hand off? Impossible.

Even Gu Jinlong, who was the most powerful man in the Land of Han-Yang, didn't have the capability to fight against the attracting power of the Cosmic Hades. Feng Zhiling was just an 'ant' compared to him. It was impossible for him to pull anything off the stone!

If Ye Xiao's hand touched Gu Jinlong's hand, within a second, Gu Jinlong would be free and Ye Xiao would be stuck on the stone instead!

...

Chapter 122: Trying Everything To Kill You

This horrible method to get rid of a trap might be a myth in the Land of Han-Yang, but it was normal in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Gu Jinlong knew it clearly.

Now that he was firmly stuck on the Cosmic Hades, if Feng Zhiling was stupid enough to give him his hand... Things would be different. He might have the chance to get away from all this.

He had to sacrifice Feng Zhiling now...

Even though Feng Zhiling had a huge potential to benefit him in the future... it would never be more important than his own life.

Gu Jinlong was thinking about letting Feng Zhiling die for him.

[Friends are just be pieces to be used and betrayed. Now I will use Feng Zhiling to save my life. I am just using him in advance.] Gu Jinlong didn't feel anything wrong about doing such a thing.

He could kill his wife who had been waiting for him for fifty years; it was surely quite an easy job for him to let a man he just met die for himself.

Gu Jinlong was confident that Feng Zhiling would give him his hand as Feng Zhiling was always an honest and humble man.

He decided that for the rest of his life, he would mourn for Feng Zhiling, the guy who died for him.

However, after the talking, he found that Feng Zhiling was still standing still. He didn't move a bit. He didn't even want to...

"Why don't you move?" Gu Jinlong couldn't turn his head, so he could only shout to the Cosmic Hades with anger.

"Hey, hey, hey..." Ye Xiao sneered and said blandly, "Gu Jinlong, what do you want me to do?"

Gu Jinlong was shocked. He felt that things were not as good as he imagine. He felt cold all in a sudden and said, "You... You..."

Ye Xiao sneered, "I have made such a great effort to set up this perfect trap for you to fall into it like a pig waiting for my dissection. And now you are asking me to help you? To die for you? Do you really think that I don't know what would happen if I touch you?"

"And you dare to urge me? Well you must be thinking 'oh, Brother Feng, I will always remember you and your kindness to me'. Right?" Ye Xiao laughed, "Hahahaha... Gu Jinlong, you are so naive and pathetic."

Gu Jinlong nearly spat out blood. He said with anger, "You... You, you, you... What are you talking about... What the hell is

this?"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Well. I think I will just cut the bullshitting part. You urged me to do something, didn't you? I am going to do something then."

While speaking, he picked up a broadsword he prepared earlier and struck it onto Gu Jinlong's head with full efforts.

He was shouting, "I am doing it..."

Gu Jinlong was scared and screamed, "Please don't... MERCY..."

At death's door, even a superior cultivator of the Dao Origin Stage like Gu Jinlong would be begging.

"Mercy my ass." Ye Xiao shouted and hit on Gu Jinlong's head.

"AHHHH!" Gu Jinlong shouted with fear.

"Ahhh!" Ye Xiao shouted with surprise.

Gu Jinlong felt his head was heavily hit. He was scared of death, so he screamed like his soul had left his body and had gone to hell.

Ye Xiao felt that the broadsword wasn't hitting on a man's head; it was like hitting on some extremely hard steel. His hand was

shocked and the skin chapped.

- Kuang!- The broadsword broke into two pieces.

Oh how hard Gu Jinlong's head was...

Gu Jinlong realized this and laughed. He stopped feeling scared and said, "I have cultivated my body for more than five thousand years. Even though I can't operate my spiritual power to strengthen my body, it is still hard like steel. Feng Zhiling, you are too weak. You can't kill me. You have nothing to do but wait for me to get away from this. I swear I will kill you no matter where you run! I am the blessed one! What could you do to me? Hahahaha..."

The broadsword didn't do any harm to Gu Jinlong. That made him arrogant. He laughed loudly. He was no more begging.

Ye Xiao grabbed another sword and swung it towards Gu Jinlong's neck.

- Shoot! -

The head was the hardest part of a man's body. The broadsword broke upon landing on its target. That's reasonable somehow. However, the neck was the most important part of the body. It contained all the main vessels and veins of the body, not to mention it was soft. Ye Xiao thought that hitting the neck might work.

However, it was the same result. - Kuang! - The sword broke into two pieces.

Ye Xiao sighed inside his heart. He was still too weak at the moment. His enemy was like a meat sticking on the board waiting for him to slaughter. Yet he actually couldn't kill him.

He was a bit terrified. He didn't stop. He kept hitting Gu Jinlong's body with different weapons, even the private part. He wanted to kill this man so much.

Suffering all kinds of strikes on his private parts, Gu Jinlong was disgraced and shouted with furiousness, "Feng Zhiling, you kept insulting me like this. I will kill you, you bastard. I am going to rip you into pieces. I am going to imprison your soul for thousands of years. I am going to make you suffer for an eternity..."

Ye Xiao listened to Gu Jinlong's rubbish. He didn't change the expressions on his face, yet in his mind, he was more and more astonished.

In fact Gu Jinlong's body was too hard that Ye Xiao would never be able to hurt him a bit. Ye Xiao knew it. That was why he used the Cosmic Hades for this hunt.

He knew that the Cosmic Hades had a special characteristic. It could not only attract and stick Gu Jinlong's body, it could also absorb the spiritual power Gu Jinlong was using to defend it. It seemed that things didn't work like Ye Xiao had planned. It only

worked halfway through...

[Gu Jinlong is unable to move now. He is a dead meat to me now. If I can't kill you even in this situation, this will be the biggest joke of my life.]

The Cosmic Hades was extremely powerful at the moment. It was attracting Gu Jinlong now. However, it had a limit. Ye Xiao didn't know how long it could keep Gu Jinlong stuck.

If Gu Jinlong's power couldn't be fully absorbed, Gu Jinlong could get out of it sooner or later.

If that happened, it was Ye Xiao's dead end.

Gu Jinlong's throat, neck, head, eyes, ears, back, waist, legs and crotch...

Ye Xiao was hitting all those parts with different kinds of weapons. Gu Jinlong just stood there. No matter what struck him, he was unharmed.

His clothes was however teared into pieces. He was nearly naked at the moment. His body was solid. There were only some thin marks on the skin. There was no serious injury at all.

He couldn't move. He could only curse.

He didn't truly get hurt, yet he still felt the pains. He felt shameful whenever his crotch was hit...

The Cosmic Hades didn't relax. It kept attracting Gu Jinlong like crazy...

Except for the overwhelming attracting power, the Cosmic Hades was transmitting the gelid qi. The extreme cold was spread out slowly. After a while, the whole mountain was frozen. All the green plants withered... The gelid qi didn't stop. It became a long ice dragon reaching out far away.

There seemed to be no end of it...

The mountain had become an ice mountain already.

It shined with crystal glows under the sunlight...

The entrance of the cave had been covered by ice already.

Inside the cave on the ice mountain, Ye Xiao was sweating even in such a cold situation. He kept on striking. He was trying everything that he could to kill Gu Jinlong.

All the weapons he prepared in the cave had become fierce whirlwinds striking on Gu Jinlong's body...

Cut, fall, stab, chop, drill... He tried lots of methods.

- Duang duang duang...-

There were many broken pieces of the weapons on the floor.

On Gu Jinlong's body, there were just some white marks.

All the weapons Ye Xiao had prepared in the cave were all broken. Gu Jinlong was still feeling good.

Ye Xiao flipped his hand and a needle suddenly appeared in his hand. He fiercely stabbed it to Gu Jing-Long's eye.

That was the last thing Ye Xiao planned to try. If this didn't work, he should better try to escape.

Gu Jinlong realized that Ye Xiao took out the black needle after all those other weapons, so he guessed that the needle was not something ordinary. He didn't dare to let it hit his eye, which was the softest part of the body. He heavily closed his eyes.

That was the only thing Gu Jinlong could do now, closing his eyes.

That marvelous sharp black needle firmly stabbed on Gu Jinlong's eyelid.

He screamed with pain, "AHHHH..."

...

Chapter 123: Why?

It worked?!

No, it didn't really. Although Gu Jinlong's eyelid was hit, it was rebounding heavily. The Demonic Needle had obviously made Gu Jinlong feel some vital danger.

However, even if Demonic Needle was so sharp, it failed to puncture his eyes.

Ye Xiao operated his martial arts in full effort. He focused all his powers on the point of that black needle and pushed it real hard. Both of them were screaming with anger.

Gu Jinlong was cursing. He shouted, moaned, endured, resisted...

After a while, Ye Xiao sighed and stepped back disappointedly.

However, it wasn't that bad. On Gu Jinlong's eyelid, there was a slight mark of blood. It didn't get through and failed to stab the eyeball though.

The Demonic Needle didn't shatter like the other weapons. It was completely unharmed as if it was still brand new.

At the moment, Gu Jinlong was coughing heavily. He still felt the

fear and shouted angrily, "I am going to kill you! I will kill you! I will definitely kill you..."

He clearly felt that the needle had threatened his eyeball. What happened just now had made him feel that his eyeball was like a rubber ball being pushed hard. If Ye Xiao had pushed it heavier, maybe it would really explode.

That was a close one for Gu Jinlong indeed!

He gasped.

He felt lucky.

[Thank god this prick is truly weak. I don't think he has reached the Sky Origin Stage.

Otherwise I am very possibly going to die here today in an ant's hand.]

It failed to deal with his eyes, so Ye Xiao started thinking about somewhere else. He grabbed Gu Jinlong's p*nis. He cut it, chopped it, stabbed it, punched it. Every move had made Gu Jinlong scream like he was being ripped. However, none of them had truly damaged him!

Gu Jinlong was full of deadly hatred because of the torture.

He had felt rather scared indeed, yet as time went by and as he survived everything Ye Xiao tried, he became fearless. He realized that this Feng Zhiling was totally unable to hurt him, so he cursed in a louder and louder voice, "... When I get out of this... I am going to kill your master... and you entire family... I will kill everyone in your clan... I... I swear to gods..."

Ye Xiao was furious hearing that. He took back the needle and grabbed a big stone beside him. He fiercely hit Gu Jinlong's head with that stone!

- Bang! -

The stone was smashed!

Gu Jinlong was covered with dust all of a sudden. He shook his head and shouted furiously again, "Feng Zhiling, wait and see... You little dirty stupid cunt..."

Ye Xiao was truly furious this time!

"You are nothing but a dead meat on my board! I am going to smash you, you little shit!"

If he couldn't kill Gu Jinlong now, he will be the dead one when Gu Jinlong got rid of his restriction.

Ye Xiao was a bit anxious.

- Boom boom boom...-

He had no other plans now, so he grabbed whatever he could to hit Gu Jinlong. Apparently, there were mostly stones around him. Within a while, about four hundred pieces of big stones had been smashed on Gu Jinlong's head!

The whole place was full of dust flying in the air!

Gu Jinlong was totally buried inside the pile of broken stones. His head was still out of those stones. He sneered, "Idiot. You are wasting your time. You can't kill me. I suggest that you should escape somewhere else and kill yourself. That is the best option for you... Just imagine. Once I get out of here, and you are still alive, you will never be able to kill yourself then! I will keep you alive and suffer! I will make you beg for death every single second for the rest of your life!"

He laughed and continued, "Let me tell you some good news. The bloody attracting power of this stupid stone is disappearing... I can feel it. The power is weakening... Do you know what this means? Hahaha... Feng Zhiling, your turn is over! You are about to embrace the last happy days of your life now! Are you excited about it? Or are you scared instead? Hahahaha..."

"You set up such a trap. That is truly something amazing. To be honest, this is the first time I become so fxxked up. When I was facing the Xiao Monarch, who was the strongest man in the Qing-Yun Realm, I was quite enjoying it. I played him within my

control. Today, I was actually fxxked up in an ant's hand. That means your hand! I am so terribly sorry about all this. But you can't kill me with you pathetic power! If you are a little bit stronger than this, maybe you might have already done it! However, the gods are on my side! You are just a stupid ignorant ugly toad..."

Ye Xiao was indifferently staring at the scumbag in front of him. In his heart, he was actually very anxious.

Like Gu Jinlong said, the Cosmic Hades' was about to lose its grip on Gu Jinlong...

Yet he was still unable to figure out how to kill Gu Jinlong.

Everything he had done were about to be wasted.

[How can I kill this monster?

With such a condition, if I actually got killed by Gu Jinlong, I am going to be the biggest joke in the history and the biggest fool in all of the realms...]

Ye Xiao didn't give up. He kept attacking even more fiercely and frequently...

Gu Jinlong was screaming and cursing at the same time.

Finally... the pile of stones shook.

Ye Xiao was terrified seeing Gu Jinlong's shoulder move a bit.

It was a slight move though. It didn't really get rid of the Cosmic Hades. But it had already shown the problems for Ye Xiao!

The Cosmic Hades was about to let go. Gu Jinlong could be released at any moment...

Gu Jinlong himself surely noticed that. He kept moving his shoulder up and down. He laughed wildly, "Feng Zhiling! Surprise... You didn't know you were actually unable to kill me, right? That's the will of gods! Even though you have done whatever you want, I have remained unharmed! The gods are always fond of me. You can trick me. That's good. Can you trick the gods?! Hahahahaha..."

Ye Xiao couldn't hold his anxiousness anymore.

He wanted to find something else to hit him again, but there was none. He wanted to take more big stones but realized that there were no more big stones around!

There was nothing that could possibly be used to hurt anybody!

Gu Jinlong was about to get away!

Ye Xiao didn't have time to find things outside the cave.

Was he going to fail this?!

Ye Xiao gritted his teeth and entered the Spaces. He tried to find something in the Spaces to hurt Gu Jinlong. However, he knew clearly that there was nothing fierce in the Spaces. There were only treasures and plants and spiritual qi! Hmmm... There might be something else. It was the egg that was glowing brightly at the moment!

Looking at the egg, Ye Xiao was angry!

[I have set up such a perfect trap and successfully caught Gu Jinlong. He is now a dead meat on my board. Do you know why I couldn't kill him? Because I am too weak! Why am I so weak? I spent loads of my time collecting resources and you goddamn egg took most of them... After all those resources, you still haven't hatched. Now I am going to die, you bloody stupid egg...

And you are actually enjoying such a leisure time here! Like nothing is happening to you! You asshole, what are you shining for!]

Ye Xiao was so angry when thinking about that. The egg seemed to sense Ye Xiao's arrival, so it shook a little.

It seemed like it was laughing at Ye Xiao.

[You shook?

You shook my ass!]

Ye Xiao was furious. He grabbed the egg. He didn't realized how amazing it was. He had failed to touch the egg before, yet now he had just grabbed it and held it in his hand...

He was so angry and he got out the Spaces immediately. He cursed fiercely, "How dare you laugh at me, you asshole! If I am going to die, you die first!"

Gu Jinlong was happy because he was about to get away. Suddenly, he found that Ye Xiao had disappeared. He felt strange about it. And then he felt the Cosmic Hades' power was becoming weaker and weaker. His other shoulder was able to move too.

Basically, he was still unable to move his body, but he could move his shoulders at least.

Gu Jinlong was rather pleased to see that freedom was coming to him soon. This was truly a vital crisis that happened to him. It proved that the Cosmic Hades was truly something marvelous. He decided to study deep about it once he acquired it. Maybe it could become his secret weapon that could bring him victory by plotting against his enemies...

As he was about to be free, he stopped cursing. Now he was calm and felt lucky that the Purple Lotus Decree Master wasn't around... Gu Jinlong was afraid that today would truly be his death if the Purple Lotus Decree Master came back...

In his thoughts, although Feng Zhiling couldn't kill him, the Purple Lotus Decree Master was definitely able to smash him!

[What is this? Isn't this the god's blessing?!]

Now Gu Jinlong started to imagine how he could kill the Purple Lotus Decree Master once he was freed. And then maybe he would kill the grandmaster of dan-making. However, he thought that the Purple Lotus Decree Master was the biggest threat to him!

[Feng Zhiling... Humph!]

Gu Jinlong was full of anger in mind, [I am going to keep him alive!

I will let him live and suffer for at least a hundred years!

I want him to beg for death every day, every minute, every second!

I want him to beg me!

How dare you plot against me? You think you can kill me?!]

Gu Jinlong was full of hatred in his heart. However, he didn't understand why Feng Zhiling wanted to kill him.

[That's unreasonable!

What I offered him were much more than what he needed already!]

...

Chapter 124: Smash You with an Egg!

[I never thought of breaking my promise at all. I am serious about helping him grow up strong...

As long as he works hard enough, I can even help him become the dominator of this world! I am with great sincerity...

Basically. it should be a better thing for him that I am alive!

No matter what, he has no reasonable motivation to kill me, but he still did it!

That's not wise at all!

This is so weird.

There must be something hidden behind all this. I have to figure it out. When I got to know everything about this, I am going to torture him his whole life!]

Gu Jinlong was furious and disgraced. He had offered a lot with sincerity, yet he was cheated. He felt extremely angry about this!

He felt like he had always been a fool!

He realized that Feng Zhiling kept on leading him by the nose as he planned to kill him. He was right about it though. That was

what Ye Xiao kept doing all these days.

Anyway, Gu Jinlong wouldn't allow this Feng Zhiling to live well any longer.

[By the way... How come he just disappeared just now?

That was some incredible move. I cannot move indeed, but I am still able to sense everything through my spiritual mind. However, I didn't even notice when and how he disappeared. How did he do that?!

Where could he go in this cave?]

Thinking about that, he suddenly realized something.

It was something obvious, but he didn't think of it because he was anxious!

It was in a gelid condition here in the cave!

The temperature was so low that even cultivators at the Sky Origin Stage wouldn't be able to stay here for long! Yet Feng Zhiling was able to stay and move casually inside the cave, even though he was apparently lower than the Sky Origin Stage. He was actually more casual than Gu Jinlong in such a gelid environment...

[That is the gelid qi from the Cosmic Hades! There is something strong!

If I am not that well cultivated, I couldn't keep myself safe under such an environment, and thinking about, I would have been a dead man already! That would help Feng Zhiling a lot! The problem is how does Feng Zhiling stay safe with his weak capability?]

While he was lost in thoughts, a figure flashed in his sight. Feng Zhiling was back in front of him again!

"Hey, hey... I am about to be free." Gu Jinlong looked at Ye Xiao happily and spoke cruelly, "Wait and see! Feng! I will get to your house! Your family... haha... all the people in your family, I will cut off the arms and legs of the men among them and make them beg for death. They will live the rest of their lives like worms. The women will be much luckier, I have to say. Hey, hey. I will kill those ugly ones immediately and sell those pretty ones to the brothel. I will make them serve for free there... Feng Zhiling, I will torment you for the rest of your life... Hahahaha..."

Ye Xiao sneered, "You? Maybe next life!"

He shouted loudly, "Even if I am going to die! I will draw you to death with me! Feel my last strike, you asshole!"

He raised the egg in his hand and fiercely hit on Gu Jinlong's head. - Bang! -

Ye Xiao was hopeless now. This was the last thing he could try.

He couldn't kill Gu Jinlong even though he had planned such a great scheme. He was disappointed and hopeless.

He had to try this one!

It was some kind of suicide attack anyway. It wasn't an action to kill his boredom!

This egg was the key section in the Space. He knew it long ago!

He could see that to hit Gu Jinlong with this egg, it might break the egg. Once the egg was broken, the Space might explode with it... However, if he needed to sacrifice the Space to kill Gu Jinlong, he would do it!

[Die together then! It is better than him killing me!]

Even if I am going to die, I am not going to let him live!]

The egg was smashed on Gu Jinlong's head rapidly.

Gu Jinlong laughed wildly and said, "Really? Again? Don't you feel tired? Hahaha... AHHHHHH!!!"

He suddenly screamed!

That was shocking and surprising!

Ye Xiao was stunned! He was astonished! He didn't expect this at all!

Gu Jinlong's tough head actually... cracked under the egg! The blood was splashing away! Something red and white kept coming out from his head!

It was like some soya sauce splashed on a tofu...

Such a solid head actually got broken by an egg!

The whole skull was broken!

Gu Jinlong's head stayed unharmed after being hit by all kinds of weapons!

Yet now it was broken by an egg!

That was a new explanation of the idiom, "[throw an egg against a rock](#)".

We all know it is silly to try to smash a rock with an egg, however, Ye Xiao was like throwing an egg against a rock this time... Yet in fact... The rock was cracked! The egg was unharmed...

Gu Jinlong was screaming like hell this time.

[What the hell is this?]

Ye Xiao was stunned!

He just wanted to try whatever he could try because he was hopeless earlier. He thought that the best outcome would be mutual death. However... he didn't expect to cause such a great damage to Gu Jinlong.

Ye Xiao came back to himself right away. It was useless to think of something unrealistic anyway. He wanted to finish the man in front of him first!

Since the egg worked, he decided to keep using it! He kept attacking, hitting and smashing with the egg!

"Smash you to death! Die! Die! Die under my egg! You mother fxcking evil son of a bxtch..." Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. While he was cursing, he raised the egg and hit it down again and again. Gu Jinlong was still stuck on the stone even though his shoulders could finally move. He was unconscious because of the sudden attack. His head was broken and his body was cramped. He was screaming at the beginning, and then his screams stopped...

Ye Xiao had hit him hundreds of times in such a short time!

For him, not a second should be wasted. A tiny bit later, maybe the result would be different!

Ye Xiao hit Gu Jinlong with the egg, from his head to his chest, and then it kept going down. He was aiming at some vital parts at the beginning, but after a few seconds, he just kept hitting no matter where it was. At the end, he kept on hitting wherever he could!

When he stopped, Gu Jinlong had finally become a pile of mashed meat!

The whole thing came to an end now!

Strangely, the superior cultivator of the Dao Origin Stage had actually been smashed to death by an egg...

He was truly killed by an egg. Ye Xiao was not responsible for all this; it was the egg. He was just helping the egg by swinging his arm. That's all!

The egg should hold the most of the glory in this battle!

[I truly don't know how to kill this bastard if it was not because of this wonderful egg!]

"Oh my... You truly are a nice egg..." Ye Xiao looked at the egg and felt both surprise and happiness. It was the feeling of escaping from the clutches of death.

When he was totally hopeless, the egg showed him hope...

On the other side, the Cosmic Hades had stopped releasing the gelid qi.

It returned quiet.

Ye Xiao sat on the floor and gasped!

He still couldn't understand how everything came to this.

[All those sharp weapons couldn't hurt him... Stones couldn't hurt him...

Yet an egg did...

How?

The smashed meat in front of me is real. That couldn't be false.]

Ye Xiao took a long breath out and felt exhausted all of a sudden.

It was the most tiring kill he had done in his lives. It was the most difficult and tiring one!

To kill a villain, Ye Xiao nearly got exhausted to death!

Even when he had smashed the man to death, he didn't understand why he could do so with an egg...

At the moment, from the smashed body of Gu Jinlong, there suddenly came a stream of white mist. The mist kept rising and formed a man's shape in the air.

The face was clear on it.

It was Gu Jinlong!

Ye Xiao was shocked and then he realized something. He actually forgot that people of the Earth Origin Stage were already able to cultivate souls! As long as the soul didn't perish or decompose, it would stay for a certain period of time. During the time, if it could find a suitable body to possess, the man could live again.

The stronger the man was, the longer his soul could stay. For the Xiao Monarch, if his soul was still unharmed, he could stay for several months. Gu Jinlong was only at the third level of the Dao Origin Stage, so his soul could only exist seven days.

No matter how strong the man was, when he possessed a new body, he had to start from zero.

Ye Xiao knew about all this clearly. He knew that he was unable to deal with the soul. However, even if Gu Jinlong luckily found a

body to possess, he wouldn't be a threat to Ye Xiao at least for the next twenty years. Instead, Gu Jinlong would need to be cautious not to be caught by Ye Xiao, because he would just be an ordinary Gu Jinlong who could easily be killed by Ye Xiao...

So, Ye Xiao didn't care about the soul. He just looked at him indifferently.

Gu Jinlong's soul stared at Ye Xiao fiercely and actually started to talk.

"Why?" Gu Jinlong was floating in the air. He didn't leave immediately.

He was confused and looked at Ye Xiao, "Why did you kill me? I trusted you so much and I was willing to help you! I gave you all those resources and I would give you more to help you become the grandmaster of dan-making, even the dominator of this world. With my support, you could reach that goal by only spending some time. But you ended it yourself..."

...

Throw an egg against a rock (以卵击石), means fighting a hopeless battle or fighting against overwhelming odds.

Chapter 125: The Soul Perished Because of an Egg!

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "Heh, heh. I don't really need any special reason to kill you. Gu Jinlong, now your mind is separated from your physical body. You are just a state of soul. You are never going to get back to the Qing-Yun Realm like this anyway. You can only try to find a fresh dead body who is dead for no more than four hours, so that you can possess it. If you are lucky enough, you will find it. Otherwise, you are going to vanish from the world."

"In fact, even if you find it, it is very possible that it won't be suitable for you to cultivate again."

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "Of course. You can get away from me as quickly as you can to find a body to possess. I know I am not able to stop you. However, I have plenty of ways to take care of you anyway. I am going to arrange people of the government to do a nationwide search. Once there was something strange like the dead becomes alive again, I will be informed and I will go deal with it. I will keep doing whatever it needs until I make sure you vanish among the living. When you get a new body to live again, you are just an ant to me, an ant which I can kill as easily as flicking a finger. Heh, heh."

He stared at Gu Jinlong with sharp eyes, "So, you are never going to make it."

Gu Jinlong shouted, "Why? Why do you know so much about soul transition and soul possession... Tell me. I just want to know why you so want me dead? Why do you have to kill me? There is

no reason for you to kill me. I can only benefit you. I have no negative effects to you. Why? And... Who do you think you are? What makes you so sure that those men of the government would listen to you?"

And then in the sight of Gu Jinlong's scared eyes, Feng Zhiling's face was slowly changing and twisting.

After a short while, a pretty young man weirdly appeared in front of Gu Jinlong. Ye Xiao said blandly, "I am the young lord of the House of the General. I am the Northern General's only son... So tell me, why do you think I can't make the government listen to me?"

Gu Jinlong's face looked like he was haunted by ghosts, "The young lord of the House of the General?"

[It is reasonable that the young lord of the House of the General can control the military force of the capital.]

At this moment, Gu Jinlong felt cold.

Ye Xiao smiled coldly and spoke blandly, "My name is Ye Xiao. I wonder... whether you recognize this name or not?"

Gu Jinlong was extremely astonished. His soul was trembling a bit as his face contorted to a point where it was barely recognizable. He was freaked out and screamed, "Ye Xiao! You are Ye Xiao?! You actually are?"

Ye Xiao smiled with his head awry, "What? You seem to have a very deep impression for the name Ye Xiao?"

Gu Jinlong showed a full face of fear that he couldn't suppress. He was like hearing some historic demon's name. He trembled and said, "You, you, you..."

He seemed to figure out something now. He was so scared that his soul was nearly vanishing because of it.

The two words "Ye Xiao" were the biggest nightmare deep in his heart.

Every time when he thought of it, he felt terrified.

Only by hearing this name, it reminded him the day when the Xiao Monarch fought against the three factions alone.

The Xiao Monarch fought alone with one sword, and the men he killed that day could pile up a mountain. The world came to darkness because of it.

Countless men from the three factions who were far better and much stronger than Gu Jinlong died one after another under the Xiao Monarch. The screams they made when they were about to die had been shocking Gu Jinlong's heart all the time.

All the superior cultivators of the three factions got together to hunt Ye Xiao down. It was a 30 thousand miles long hunting.

They would never stop until the Xiao Monarch died.

The men of the three factions splashed their fresh blood all the way down. The 30 thousand miles path was built up by countless dead bodies of the superior cultivators from the three factions.

At the end of the day, they eventually killed the demon. The Xiao Monarch was vanished, both his life or his soul.

However, that battle had severely weakened the three factions, and the three factions banded together after that day.

When people thought of that day now, they still felt terrified. When they dreamt about it at night, they sweated.

Even the reclusive senior superior cultivators in the three factions kept feeling regretful that they hadn't join the battle that day. Now their sects were weakened to a stage that was more than a thousand years ago...

At this moment, Gu Jinlong actually heard about this horrifying name again.

Ye Xiao.

Hearing the cold voice of this Ye Xiao, looking at his pretty face, Gu Jinlong seemed to see the Xiao Monarch sneering at him right now.

The last time he saw that sneer was when he did a fatal attack to the Xiao Monarch while he was exhausted.

At that time, the Xiao Monarch was almost at his end, yet he sneeringly spoke to Gu Jinlong while Gu Jinlong was stepping back, "Gu Jinlong, one day, you will know how the smile of the Xiao Monarch looks like."

Those words became a nightmare that haunted Gu Jinlong throughout his life.

After he made sure that the Xiao Monarch was dead, he finally got back to himself a bit.

[No matter how horrible he was, now he is a dead man. How could a dead man do anything to me anyway?] That was what he thought.

However, he would have never expected to hear about the name that he feared the most in his life... today.

"Are you... You... Are you..." Gu Jinlong was trembling. He looked at Ye Xiao in a blue funk.

"What are you talking about?" Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Are you

really that surprised? Have you forgotten my words? I will let you know how the smile of the Xiao Monarch looks like. Remember?"

When he finished this, Gu Jinlong screamed out and shouted in terror.

"Ahhh!" Gu Jinlong was freaked out, "It's you! It really is! You... You... You are alive... You are actually alive..."

Ye Xiao sneered, "Before you all die out? No way. I don't want to die before you guys."

Gu Jinlong was screaming. He rushed out of the cave immediately.

He just fled away like hell.

Now he knew who was standing in front of him. It was the legend of a generation, the Xiao Monarch. Gu Jinlong had lost the last strand of his fighting will now.

To stay alive was the priority he held in mind at the moment.

Under the horror, he even forgot that Ye Xiao didn't have the capability to kill a soul at the moment.

Ye Xiao looked at the soul getting away. He didn't stop him.

He knew that he was incapable to do so yet. He had to wait till Gu Jinlong found a body to possess. And then he would kill Gu Jinlong when he lived again. That was the only way he could make Gu Jinlong completely vanish.

However, something suddenly happened...

The soul... Gu Jinlong screamed out of nothing.

There was a sense of desperation in that scream.

While he was about to get out of the ice-covered cave, an enormous sucking power suddenly hit him.

In fact, Ye Xiao was stunned at the same time.

It wasn't because of the scream; it was because...

The egg that was taken out to smash Gu Jinlong and stained with blood was becoming clean and clear again. It twinkled again with a certain glow...

Moreover... the egg was actually floating in the air on its own.

It was just floating there.

Meanwhile, it created an extremely strong sucking power.

That power was different with the one from the Cosmic Hades earlier. It didn't work on the living persons like Ye Xiao, but it worked effectively on souls like Gu Jinlong.

Gu Jinlong was struggling and screaming in horror. He was being dragged bit by bit. He completely had no power to resist it.

And then he was dragged to the front of the egg.

The ivory strange egg suddenly emitted some dim white glow. The glow covered the whole of Gu Jinlong's soul.

The next moment, Gu Jinlong's face showed an extreme fear and desperation. He kept screaming, "Help... Please let me go... Help me... Help me please... Lord Monarch... Lord Monarch, please I am begging you... Help me... I will be your servant for the rest of my life and all my lives to come... Please help me... Ahhhh..."

"I swear to god with my soul... Lord Monarch..."

Gu Jinlong kept begging to Ye Xiao. It was a disgusting scene...

However, Ye Xiao had no idea what exactly happened just now... He couldn't hear a word from Gu Jinlong after all...

Even if he knew, he wouldn't want a servant like Gu Jinlong. He just watched it with a baffled expression...

Under the cover of the dim white glow, Gu Jinlong's soul started to melt...

The body, the arms and legs, the facial features...

His soul was melting in the white mist.

Gradually, Gu Jinlong's voice became weaker and weaker until it finally stopped.

In the air, there was only the dim mist flowing.

"That must be the soul of Gu Jinlong transitioning into pure energy..." Realizing this, Ye Xiao couldn't help sucking in a deep breath.

[The weird egg is actually so cruel and fierce? So fiendish?]

After a while, the egg shook. Suddenly, a gale came and the energy that was formed by the melted soul of Gu Jinlong moved around the egg.

Within only seconds, the energy disappeared.

The soul of a superior cultivator of Dao Origin Stage was actually melted and absorbed by an egg.

No trace was left.

Ye Xiao felt cold in the back because of fear.

In just a few minutes, Gu Jinlong had totally vanished in the world.

Even the soul was completely gone.

The soul had vanished and would cease to exist forever.

The egg slowly got down to the floor shaking. The glow around it started to become dim before it finally stopped. The strange pattern on its surface was sharply increased and became clearer.

Ye Xiao was totally astonished. He came over to the egg and stared at it, murmuring, "You... What kind of monster are you?"

[I don't understand... Gu Jinlong was actually killed because of an egg... And then his soul was completely melted and absorbed by the egg...]

...

Chapter 126: Getting Rich This Time!

The egg was unbelievable indeed, yet it was still an egg for now. It certainly couldn't answer Ye Xiao.

"You are just an egg. You are not something else... Why are you so hard?"

"You are just an egg. How come you can suck a superior cultivator's soul? Why?"

"What gave birth to you?"

Ye Xiao was so confused and curious!

[Even the legendary dragon egg... doesn't have this kind of power, does it?]

The egg stayed in Ye Xiao's hand quietly. The strange patterns on its surface was twinkling as if it was teasing Ye Xiao.

'Stupid little fool. Talking to an egg...

And actually asking questions to it... Was he kicked on the head by a donkey or something?'

The egg didn't have any response so Ye Xiao eventually returned it to the Spaces. He also returned the Cosmic Hades.

The next moment, he started to search the mashed meat in front of him.

Of course he wasn't a pervert who would prepare to make some human meat buns or grind the remaining bones to dust.

No matter what, this pile of mashed meat was no longer Gu Jinlong. It meant nothing!

After a while, Ye Xiao found out a vintage style ring from inside that mashed meat. He put it in his hand and then put it into the Spaces.

He operated the East-rising Purple Qi to incinerate the remanent soul fragments of Gu Jinlong.

Gu Jinlong was dead, so his spiritual mind had vanished. The restriction spell on the ring was now like a joke to Ye Xiao.

The Xiao Monarch had at least ten ways to break the restriction spell and open the ring.

"I have to check my spoils of war since the prick is dead now." Ye Xiao was thrilled.

[Gu Jinlong must have collected lots of treasures.]

"This is the first huge windfall profit. I guess for a long time, this should be the only resource I can get that belongs to the Qing-Yun Realm."

He murmured, "It won't be easy to get things like this from now on... Unless I can return to the Qing-Yun Realm."

After a while, Ye Xiao took out a vintage style space ring from the Spaces. It had belonged to Gu Jinlong, but now it belonged to Ye Xiao.

"Oh, the ring is actually made from the Heart of Stars... He came from a big sect indeed." Ye Xiao praised. The Heart of Stars was the best material to make the space ring. The ring that Ye Xiao used in his previous life was also made from the Heart of Stars.

There was an image of a sword carved on the ring. The sword went around the ring and there were a few words on it, '[I am the dragon of all ages!](#)'

Looking at the phrase, Ye Xiao puckered his lips and murmured, "You are the dragon of all ages, yet you became ghost when you met me!"

He casually wiped the ring, and the restriction spell on that ring disappeared. He opened the ring and checked inside its content... then he nearly passed out!

[OH MY GOD!]

He didn't expect that Gu Jinlong was that rich. He was extremely shocked by how rich the guy was.

The Xiao Monarch had always been mighty, but he had always been poor. Every time he got some cultivation materials, he just couldn't wait to use them all... He never had anything in store.

Now in Gu Jinlong's ring, there were actually so many materials that piled up like a small mountain!

Ye Xiao nearly passed out because of excitement. [I can't imagine just how much time I could save because of these things...]

Besides, all the things were sorted out and displayed clearly. Gu Jinlong was apparently a cautious guy.

"This guy must have brought all his collections with him... That's reasonable. A man like him wouldn't stop worrying no matter where he put his treasures. He would only feel good if all these things are in his hand!" Ye Xiao laughed, "But they all fell in my hands now..."

He started to check those things with his eyes full of greed.

There were a huge amount of low-quality spiritual jades, over ten thousand pieces, all in ivory color. There were tens of thousands of medium-quality spiritual jades, all in white color. There were also thousands of high-quality spiritual jades, all in light golden color.

Most surprisingly, there were actually two pieces of purple spiritual jades which were at the size of a man's palm. Ye Xiao had never seen such kind of spiritual jade even in his previous life.

"Could these be the supreme spiritual jade that only exists in the myth?"

Ye Xiao held them in hand and felt a dense stream of pure spiritual power coming over him. All of a sudden, he felt unable to breath because he was surrounded by the pure spiritual power!

How dense the spiritual qi was!

Ye Xiao was surprised, "These are definitely the supreme spiritual jades. That's quite a dense stream of spiritual qi..."

He checked on the spiritual jades and then continued to check on the other things.

On his left, there were medical materials piled up tidily. Every one of them was in high quality. Most importantly... all these medical materials were sorted by prescriptions. The materials that were in the same prescription were tied up together. There were bundles of them being together...

"That's really thoughtful. Gu Jinlong truly deserved some praise for this!" He grinned, and then found that there were some other things in the space ring. There were some strange metals, rare dan

beads, and even... martial art books...

Ye Xiao went through all of them and grinned from ear to ear.

"I am going to be rich! I am going to be truly wealthy this time!"

Moreover, there were actually many other space rings inside this space ring. They must have been robbed by Gu Jinlong from some poor men...

Looking at all these, Ye Xiao was surprised again. Inside those space rings, there must be many things, even though their contents wouldn't be as abundant as the space ring of Gu Jinlong! Whoever had a space ring in the Qing-Yun Realm was never some ordinary man. Besides, Gu Jinlong put all these rings inside his own ring, which meant that there must be something good in those rings!

Ye Xiao was overjoyed!

He was going to be crazily rich this time.

However, he suddenly thought of something. He clapped his head and spoke with disappointment, "Oh! I really was a fool..."

Looking at these rings, he realized that it was such a waste that he never had collected any rings in his previous life even though he had killed so many people back then. After he killed somebody, he would always just turn to leave.

"How come I didn't do it this way?" Ye Xiao was annoyed, "I wasn't that stupid, was I?"

Yet he forgot about one thing. In his entire precious life, he was being hunted for eighty percent of his lifetime... Even when he killed someone, how could he possibly have time to take the ring? He had to run for his life...

In fact, he wasn't that hurried. At least he had taken the Purple Lotus Decree Master's ring... He was very pleased about it though, wasn't he? Now he was actually moaning about it. He must be too happy now...

"I have thought about getting real rich today when I got out of home! Hahahahaha..." Ye Xiao murmured with pleasure and then stood up.

When he was about to leave, he realized that the whole mountain was covered by ice!

If he wanted to get out, he had to get through a layer of ice that was over ten meters thick.

It wasn't such a difficulty for Ye Xiao at the moment. He operated the East-rising Purple Qi and used its pure Yang Energy. After a while, he had already got off the cave and the ice there was melted. He got down and reached the ground that was also covered in ice.

Looking at the scene, he gasped in admiration, "This is so beautiful!"

There was an ice mountain in his sight under the sunlight. It was like an enormous-sized diamond shining in colorful and vivid glows!

The lights were like rainbows hanging in the sky!

At the same time, it breezed. Ye Xiao's sleeve fluttered. He was breathing in the fresh air and suddenly felt like he was in another world! He couldn't even believe what he had experienced back in the cave just now!

He actually killed an invincible enemy while he was at the Dao Origin Stage!

He had kill Gu Jinlong, who was at the third level of the Dao Origin Stage!

That was truly an amazing and magnificent feat!

It was a miracle that no one would believe!

No matter what kind of scheme or method he used, the man who should be regarded as powerful as gods eventually died in Ye Xiao's hand!

That was the first powerful enemy Ye Xiao had killed in his present life!

And the first old enemy that he had in his previous life!

Ye Xiao slaughtered his strong enemy and stood upon the ice mountain, praising and looking at the amazing scene before him. Yet he didn't know that in the whole Chen-Xing City, people were all in a fever at the moment.

A historical sight suddenly showed up in the Chen-Xing City!

It was an amazing scene that had never been recorded in the history!

About 150 kilometers away from the capital, an ice mountain suddenly appeared, even though it was a hot summer at the moment and people would sweat without even moving a bit!

Within only six hours, a big ice mountain suddenly showed up!

The ice covered up a thousand miles!

Countless light streams were in different colors shining all over.

The entire city was brightened up by a mixture of different lights.

When Ye Xiao was working so hard on killing some scumbag, this amazing scene had shocked everyone in the capital already!

That was too amazing and too obvious to cover!

The summer was never hot again. The temperature suddenly dropped down.

That was something everyone could clearly sense. It was abnormal. People were all confused about it. They didn't know what was happening.

While the temperature was dropping down, even though people all felt comfortable during the start, they suddenly felt that the coldness had become terribly freezing!

It became so cold within seconds. That was unacceptable.

It was summer at the moment. No one would ignore such a weird change.

They kept guessing. [Could there be some huge grievance that made the gods bring the snow to us in the summer? Otherwise, why did the weather suddenly change?!]

Soon, people eventually discovered the culprit behind the change of temperature; it was because of the ice mountain outside the city!

The news suddenly shocked everyone in the capital. Everyone knew about it within an instant!

It was a piece of strange shocking news that everyone knew!

When Ye Xiao finished Gu Jinlong, there were already many people and forces coming over.

...

Dragon in Chinese is Long.

Chapter 127: A Wonder of All Ages

Everybody wanted to see such a historic wonder after all.

When something marvelous happened, whoever arrived earlier had a bigger chance. Everyone had the same view. Nobody wanted to be left behind.

In the Royal Palace, an officer reported to the king, "Your highness. There is a marvelous scene that suddenly happened. It is a hot summer at the moment, yet outside the capital, there appears an ice mountain which freezes the land over a hundred miles away. The ice is so cold that it will never melt. That's a wonderful scene. It must be a good sign. It means the gods are blessing our kingdom... I think..."

All the men in the Royal Palace kept praising the king.

"It must be the reward from the gods for our beloved king who is always hardworking and cares for his people... He is the one true king of all ages..."

"Long live the king!"

"What a wise king!"

"The king... will unite the whole land and rule forever..."

The king had been curious about the strange ice mountain. After the officers described it as a good sign given by the gods, he became thrilled. He immediately gave an order that to prepare and bring him towards the ice mountain. He wanted to see the god's blessing with his own eyes.

Thus, the whole Royal Palace was busy everywhere.

As the king was going to leave the Royal Palace, everyone in the palace should surely be working on it.

Within the coming short period of time, papers from all over the kingdom flew over to the king like a big crowd of ravens...

All of a sudden, there were praises everywhere...

Ye Xiao didn't expect that the trap that he had set to take care of his enemy had actually brought about a marvelous sign to the Kingdom of Chen.

The ice mountain didn't melt even a bit even though the weather was so hot.

The mountain would stay forever.

It would become a wonder of the whole Land of Han-Yang.

The ice mountain was formed because the gelid qi that was

emitted by the agitated Cosmic Hades blended with the mountain. The Cosmic Hades became agitated because of the spiritual jades it absorbed. That gelid qi was in an extent that was already out of the limit of the Land of Han-Yang, so it wouldn't be influenced by the weather in the Land of Han-Yang. Thus, summer or winter, the ice mountain would remain forever.

Luckily, although the gelid qi was an extremely cold energy, it didn't spread with no limitation. As the Cosmic Hades calmed down, it stopped spreading. If there were enough spiritual jades to keep it agitated, the gelid qi would definitely become a disaster for the Land of Han-Yang.

If the gelid qi spread out widely and became a disaster, Ye Xiao would surely try whatever he could to solve it. The gelid qi emitted by the Cosmic Hades was something above the capability of the men in the Land of Han-Yang. However, it was a different situation to Ye Xiao since he had the East-rising Purple Qi. He had been using it to absorb the gelid qi several times, so he was quite experienced with it now.

The Cosmic Hades had absorbed a huge amount of spiritual power from the spiritual jades. Although it had emitted an enormous amount of gelid qi, if Ye Xiao wanted to expel all of it, he could finish it in about three years.

However, Ye Xiao didn't want to.

It was already too shocking to create such a huge ice mountain. If he made it disappear... If he got caught working on it, that was not a good thing for him.

Ye Xiao sighed with praise for the wonderful view and then prepared to return home. This time, he was truly exhausted. When he got halfway down the mountain, he met lots of people walking in lines from all directions...

"Oh my god! Why are there so many people..." Ye Xiao was scared.

Some of those men realized that they were heading to an ice mountain, so they couldn't get there without their upper garments.

So they either went back home to get some clothes or bought some clothes nearby.

Some businessmen surely seized the chance to take out all the overstock clothes from last winter... and sold them on the way... Actually, it was a very effective decision and their clothes were sold out quickly.

Ye Xiao was stunned by what he had seen.

Apparently, he had underestimated the curiosity of mankind...

It had only been six hours since the Cosmic Hades emitted the gelid qi...

In such a short time, there actually appeared such a great change in the city.

He looked back to the ice mountain. The whole place was snow white.

[I think I am too eye-catching with my black clothes.]

It was better earlier than later to get away from all of this. Ye Xiao immediately sat on the ice floor and stretched his leg...

- Shoot shoot shoot... -

He actually got down the mountain fast by sliding...

He didn't feel anything strange about it though, except a little pain on his butt...

Those who were closer to Ye Xiao acted like they found a new land and shouted, "Wow look! There is a man sliding down from the mountain..."

Ye Xiao cursed, "You have some bloody sharp fxxking eyes, prick!"

He had to change position, so he rolled over and let his face touch the floor.

And then he heard someone saying, "Wow he is unbelievable! He actually slides with his face down... He was sliding with his butt on the floor earlier. The clothes is broken on his butt... Now with his face down, his butt is out. What a pale and tight butt it is..."

"Damn it!" Ye Xiao was embarrassed. He was speechless about all this. [This fxxking fool really has some extremely sharp eyes.

The marvelous ice mountain is right in front of you and why do you keep noticing me?

Besides... My butt is out, so be it... Why do you need to comment about it...]

He murmured in mind.

[People all have butts and they look the same. The difference lies between the faces. As long as I keep my face covered, nobody will recognize me. I doubt you could recognize me with my butt... No matter how sharp your eyes are...]

He bore the embarrassment and kept sliding down.

While he was about to reach the bottom of the mountain, a tree covered by ice suddenly appeared in front of him... getting right between his legs...

With his face to the floor, Ye Xiao didn't notice it at all... He just slid...

So...

- Puff.-

The tree had an extremely close contact with his crotch... They crashed fiercely...

- Pah. -

The tree actually broke...

"Ow, Ohhhh... My..." His face suddenly twisted. He was now suffering a pain he could describe as something worse-than-death... He was still sliding down though.

- Puff. -

He hit on another tree again. The tree didn't break this time, yet he was rebounded. After several rebounds, he finally got to the valley.

He huddled up his body and twisted his face like a prawn. His hands kept rubbing his crotch... And he ran away from that place being tormented by pain.

While he was moving, he kept gasping.

[Damn it... That was a tough hit...]

People kept coming over from all directions. Ye Xiao wouldn't want to expose himself for sure...

If he was seen and recognized, he would have to spend the rest of his life being laughed at, rather than laughing...

So he kept moving with his face covered by his hands. On his way, he actually grabbed a robe.

Well, it was robbing indeed, but it was also a proper explanation that he was borrowing it though...

It was a robe seller who was bargaining with his costumer. They were both getting emotional.

"I mean, you are too evil-minded, aren't you? Not to mention it is summer now, even if it is winter, this robe should be sold on three silver chips. Now you actually want 45... Do you even have conscience? The gods are watching you!"

"Humph! I sell it and you buy it. We get a deal, so be it. I never cheat... Winter is winter indeed, while summer is summer. A robe that should be sold in winter now is sold in summer. That is how much it should take you. You are damn right about the gods. They are watching. It isn't your call to say whether it is a fair price or not. The gods made such a place with such a temperature. That

means it is the gods' will then. To obey the gods will, do you understand..."

"You... You... You are disgraceful... How can you be so shameless..."

The customer was just a normal man. He was limited in experience and short for arguing. How could he possibly argue against the experienced business man?

The customer had been exasperated, but suddenly, he felt a wind blew around him and the robe seller got struck on his face. - Pah! - The seller's body rolled in the air for several rounds until he fell down back to the floor.

The robe in his hand was already gone.

A voice was coming to him, "You stupid fool! I didn't make the ice mountain for you to make your fortune! If you dare to do this again, I will take your miserable life away!"

The voice came far away from there, but it was so clearly heard.

The man who spoke was invisible though.

Ye Xiao was rather embarrassed at the moment. He was nearly naked, so he felt the urge to find something to cover his body. The bad robe seller was unlucky. That hit on his face was made by Ye Xiao because he didn't like what he did to his customer. In fact, he

was quite gentle already because he just wanted to give that man a lesson. If he truly wanted to punish the man hard, that hit on the face would have broken the man's head already...

The man was scared and stunned. After a while, he kneeled down and kowtowed, "I was wrong. I was wrong. Please forgive me, god..."

When he returned to his business, the prices of his robes had become fair. For the rest of his life, he would never dare to raise the prices again.

Because of that, his robes were sold out the fastest. He also got a title of Good and Kind Seller of the year. His business became bigger and bigger. After a few years, he had earned billions. After that, he had put the word "integrity" in his heart as his motto.

In his spare times, he always murmured about the amazing experience with god. He kept telling people that what he had now was all granted by god. If the god didn't give him a strike on the face, he wouldn't have realized the motto he should have in business.

...

Chapter 128: Dinner in the Palace of Hua-Yang

Ye Xiao was wearing an unbecoming cotton robe. When he was arrived at the gate of the city, he operated his martial art to clean up the smell of blood and bloodstains on his body. Finally, he sighed in relief.

He noticed that there were a lot of girls around the gate. The smell of their perfumes came over to him in a tangy way. It was a female travel group getting out of town. They must be heading to the ice mountain. They actually travel in groups.

In fact, this group of girls was obviously built up by Su Yeyue's sisterly friends. Some of them were the main officers' daughters, while some of them were princesses of the royal clan. There were girls from noble houses and also daughters of wealthy men... Anyway, there wouldn't be any girls from poor families or ordinary houses in this group.

Ye Xiao was like coming across some snakes and scorpions. He hurriedly hid aside.

If he got caught by these girls, he would have to go with them as company. That would truly be some shitty luck to him... He just returned from the ice mountain and he didn't want to go back.

[I must be mad if I go back there again.]

It was more than enough for him to experience that memorable scene in his life.

That group of girls passed by Ye Xiao on their dangling sedans. They actually lined up in a very long cue. Around them, there were guards from their houses walking and staring at people on the street, like all men around them were perverts...

Ye Xiao kept hiding in the crowd and looked at the big group of upper-class girls dangling away. He felt like missing someone.

In this group, there should be one girl he was familiar with. So if he felt like missing someone, that someone must be the girl... Su Yeyue, Lady Su.

[She is always fond of joining big events. Why isn't she in the group?

That's weird.]

Ye Xiao looked more carefully and found that there was indeed no sedan from the Palace of Hua-Yang.

He felt that it was strange.

Usually, when something like this happened, Su Yeyue would be very eager to join such event with her group of sisters...

One of the reasons why he was so hurried in leaving the mountain was that he didn't want to be recognized by Su Yeyue. If he came across her, although he was disguised as Feng Zhiling...

Su Yeyue was too familiar and concerned about Ye Xiao. He wouldn't want to risk being exposed. Besides, he just got out of a life and death battle, so he was both mentally and physically exhausted. He wasn't in a stable condition, so he couldn't be sure if he would be able to cover himself well in front of Su Yeyue...

[How come she doesn't join her group this time?]

Humans were the kind that never stop looking for trouble.

He had just prayed not to get caught by the girl or that the girl could stop joining this event for just one day. However, when she really didn't show up, he actually cared about her...

He felt like he had missing something important.

He was lost in thoughts and then suddenly, his expression changed. He murmured, "Oh no."

He speeded up like a shooting star to somewhere inside the city.

He had realized the reason why the girl didn't attend this event. It was the day that Prince Hua-Yang would go join the battle the next day. So today, they must be preparing to have their family dinner. It was the dinner before Prince Hua-Yang went to the

battle. It was the last union of the family before he would go to war.

Even if Su Yeyue was free to get out, she would definitely be staying at home with her father.

At the moment, the night was about to come and the sky was about to turn dark.

It was in the Palace of Hua-Yang.

The palace was quite different than it usually was. There were colorful lights hanging everywhere.

The gate of the palace was usually shut, but now it was widely opened.

There was a long spear on the left of the gate and a grand broadsword on the right.

The weapons, instead of the guards, were actually guarding the gate when they were about go out for battle.

From the gate, there were two lines of broadswords leading the way to the middle hall. Every broadsword was about one meter long without the hilt.

The edge of the swords was glistening.

The broadswords were emitting some cold aura under the colorful lights of the whole palace.

Every man who passed by the broadswords could clearly see their face inside it.

Along with the full sight of the shadows of the swords, there was also that fierce killing intent coming over.

If some cravens occasionally passed the gate of the Palace of Hua-Yang, they would be so scared and get sick.

Whoever walked along there steadily were all soldiers and generals.

None of the maids were arranged to serve in front of the house. They were all having a day off. Some of them were resting in the backyard, while most of them had gone home.

Today, who greeted the guests and served in the house were all vigorous soldiers who had been through hundreds of battles.

These soldiers all moved fast. Their eyes looked so different from those who usually greeted the guests in the house.

They were like eagles that had been starving for so long, and now they were finally out there searching for their preys.

There was a sense of fever on their faces.

There was a bloodthirsty look in their eyes.

Because... they were about to go to war.

The flag of the Prince Hua-Yang would fly all around the battle.

These men's blood would be splashed on the battlefield, the most perfect place for them to die.

Their lives would be like the beautiful night blooms. Even though they only bloomed in a flash, this flash was enough to make them hold no regrets.

The clarions had a gloomy tune all of a sudden.

They should only use this kind of clarions in battle. At this moment, they actually kept blowing clarions responding to each other.

After the first clarion, there sounded another one not too far away. The clarions went on and on with the same rhythm...

After a while, there sounded lots of clarions from all directions spreading out of the city.

The street in front of the palace was proclaiming a curfew.

All the streets and roads around the palace had been cleaned up long ago.

The ten thousand soldiers were standing along the two sides of the road with their weapons in hand.

In front of the palace, there was a crowd of soldiers. Inside the palace there were lots of generals. Around the palace, there were so many soldiers.

In fact, there were about 20 thousand soldiers throughout the palace at the moment.

Except for the sound of footsteps and some gasping sounds, there were actually no other sounds.

Not even a sigh or a cough.

Everything was so quiet, portraying a deathly stillness. That was rarely seen.

Outside the city, the army was also in silence. In the big camps, all the soldiers were sitting still silently.

They had their weapons in their hands and just sat there.

Every twenty men sat around one table.

The liquor and the food smelled so good.

Both the generals and the soldiers didn't move at all.

It looked like there were hundreds of thousands of statues staying there silently.

The clarions kept going on and on.

Some of the soldiers looked so young. It must be their first time to go fight in a battle.

At the beginning, there were some fear and some excitement in their eyes. However, when the whole world around them were covered with this silence...

In their eyes, the fear and excitement were all gone. Each and every one of them felt both serenity and fervor at the same time. Their blood was burning under the silence.

It had nothing to do with romance today.

It had nothing to do with women today.

It only concerned about men. Men from the military of the Kingdom of Chen.

It was a celebration of the men from the military.

Countless fully armed soldiers were coming from all over the city.

All the lights in every street were lit up at the same time.

There were 16 men coming out of the gate from the Palace of Hua-Yang. They stood on both sides of the gate like the wings of a wild goose. They walked in the same pace. These 16 men looked exactly the same.

They were the men who greeted the guests.

Yet they were not just ordinary guards. They were the outstanding generals of the eight experienced troops in Prince Hua-Yang's army.

From the north, the orderly footsteps resounded. The men were not yet to be seen, but the sound of their steps had filled the whole place with their vigor.

[People from the north are coming.]

The generals couldn't help thrusting their chests forward.

Everyone was looking at the same direction.

The next moment, a flag suddenly showed up from the corner of the street. A vigorous troop marched over with orderly paces.

The man in front of the troop was almost 3 meters high, he was the one raising the flag. Each of his step forward was vigorous.

"We are the two dragons, two tigers and a lion who were designated by the great Northern General, Ye Nantian, to guard the capital. We represent the great General Ye and the 560 thousand brothers in the northern army to congratulate Prince Hua-Yang. We hope that when the royal sword of Prince Hua-Yang swings, the enemies in the south fall down. We wish you all the success and hope you gloriously return safely from the battle!"

The man's loud voice was like steels crashing against each other. It was steady and firm. The congratulatory speech was like a battlecry filled with vigor.

Following his words, the four men behind him shouted at the same time.

The fifty men behind these five generals stayed silent though. Their eyes were sharp with a solemn aura.

- Chin! -

The next moment, the fifty soldiers drew out their swords at the same time, making the sound of metals.

The two dragons, two tigers and one lion were part of the ten generals in Ye Nantian's army.

Ye Nantian had ten generals. They took turns to go to battle every half a year. This time, it was these five staying in the city, and next time, it would be the other five. It was kind of a tradition.

At the moment, the five generals who stayed in the city came to felicitate Prince Hua-Yang.

There were not many people in their troop, yet when they got together, they were like an army that could wipe out thousands of enemies.

...

Chapter 129: The Gathering of the Iron Troops

It was in front of the Palace of Hua-Yang.

The 16 generals who worked as greeters saluted at the same time and shouted in chorus, "Thank you, General Ye! Thank you, the northern army! Thank you, brothers! Please come in!"

The five generals of the northern army stepped forward with big strides towards the 16 greeting generals. Both side reached their hands to gently bump on each others' fists. They were all expressionless though.

And then the five general passed through the 16 generals and stood behind them. They joined the greeting team to greet the incoming guests together.

The fifty soldiers who had been following the five generals lined up in two lines. - Shoo! - They marched to the location beside the greeting soldiers of the Palace of Hua-Yang.

So, there were 55 five men joining the initial greeting team.

They neatly stood side by side, and it looked so orderly and harmonious as if what they were doing was the most natural thing in the world.

From the east, there came a continuous sound of orderly footsteps once again.

There was also a troop marching over with the flag raised high.

"The Eastern General's troop..."

And then the sound of footstep sounded from the west.

"The Western General..."

There was no one coming from the south though.

The main general in the south was the Northern General, General Lan. He was leading his army in the south fighting the battle.

All these men who came today were all warriors who had been through hundreds of battlefields.

However, no one had ever seen them in the capital.

In the peaceful city, among the feasting and revelries, these warriors who would rather bleed than weep had long been forgotten.

The most meritorious man with the highest glory was even less

well-known than the hottest prostitute of a big brothel.

They had been devoting themselves, staying and waiting in the city silently.

When there was a battle that requires them to fight... When it suddenly needed people to fight, they were like divine troops from the heavens coming from everywhere to gather together here.

They were still full of men's vigor. Their blood was still burning.

They only showed their fierceness to the enemies.

They had never shown their spirit of "I will bite away some flesh from you even if I am going to die".

Only at this moment, when they were preparing for a battle, would their extraordinary vigor would be seen.

When they walked on the street as simple civilians, even when sometimes they got mocked and teased, they just bore it silently. They had been bearing it all till this moment. When they revealed their arms, they could shake the whole world.

Now, it seemed that everybody who was supposed to be here had arrived.

When they were all going to enter the palace, all of a sudden, a

voice shouted from the south, which supposed to be nobody, "The Southern General's troop is here to congratulate Prince Hua-Yang. We wish you the glory of victory!"

The voice was from a guy who had used up all his strength shouting.

The voice became hoarse like someone had cut the guy's throat. People who heard it shared the same feeling.

They looked to the direction where the voice had come from.

They saw a small man wearing a suit of armor with a broadsword in his hand walking over with big strides.

The guy was serious and careful.

His face turned red, and in his eyes, a surging passion was just about to be ignited.

All the generals widely opened their eyes at the same time while staring at this guy. In their eyes, they were filled with admirations.

The guy who was coming over was the guy no one would have ever expected to come today. No one had even thought that he would actually come today.

Even if the king of the Kingdom of Chen, Chen Xuantian, came

and wanted to go with the army to attend the fight, it wouldn't be more shocking than the presence of this guy today.

Because in everyone's mind, this guy was nothing but a foppish young lord who had absolutely nothing to do with the military.

Who was this guy?

It was...

Lan Langlang.

The son of the Southern General.

The Southern General's men were all in the south. He was here alone representing the southern army.

Although there was only one man from the southern army, as the son of the Southern General, he made up for everything.

At the moment, the vigorous figure of a man who had no fear to the threats of swords and spears had instantly made all the iron men forget about the ironic title "lord in the town".

No one had thought that Lan Langlang would come. As the impossibility became reality, people could only think of one phrase.

The tiger would never beget a dog son.

They seemed to have truly discovered Lan Langlang, the only son of the Southern General.

"Bravo!"

"The Southern General truly has a tiger son! He truly has guts!"

Some generals with brawny faces shouted at him.

Lan Langlang was angry and shouted loudly, "You are all talking bullshxt! I can prove my guts!"

The generals laughed wildly. They didn't take it seriously, and they just shouted, "Look at you, stepping over bit by bit. You truly haven't disgraced your father's honor. We are talking bullshxt indeed. Come in for some drinks!"

Lan Langlang was fearless. He raised his head and thrust his chest forward, and then he walked into the palace with big strides.

Although something unexpected happened, it was a pleasant thing. The generals felt relaxed and then followed him in.

These had been all the people that these generals felt worthy to greet. They were like brothers.

There would be some princes, officers, even the envoy of the king coming later. However, the generals would never wait and greet these people.

At this very moment, something happened all of a sudden.

A white figure was coming over as if soaring. He shouted, "One more from the Northern General's troop. I wish Prince Hua-Yang the greatest success!"

People all looked around.

They saw a young man in white wearing a snow white robe with a cyan waistband. He was tall and straight, and his features were becoming more and more obvious as he walked over to them.

His was handsome and he was smiling. He acted gently and elegantly.

He was the son of the Northern General.

Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao had finally come. He had returned to his house and changed his clothes in an unbelievable speed. And then he rushed over here.

He had felt his blood boiling while he was on the way.

The lines after lines of soldiers made Ye Xiao understand how the military life looked like, how a soldier was like, and how home and country meant to people.

Lan Langlang was a surprise to everybody, and Ye Xiao was definitely another one. People couldn't believe what they saw. They couldn't believe Lan Langlang would come, and they would have never expected Ye Xiao to come at all.

The "three lords in town" should all be foppish black sheep, yet it seemed the ironic title of them were about to be removed because of their honorable behaviors.

People were surprised, but looking at their expression, there was more of admiration at the moment.

In the northern troop, the two tigers, two dragons and one lion had their eyes lit up with pride.

[The son of our beloved great general... has come!]

In everybody's sight, Ye Xiao acted vigorously and casually. He was full of confidence that made people feel comfortable. However, there was one flaw out of the perfection; the cyan hair bundle was a bit askewed...

But the next moment, the feeling in their minds disappeared.

Because when Ye Xiao stepped on the street on his own, he had walked step by step firmly and vigorously. Although he was walking alone, it felt like there were thousands of men marching forward behind him.

There were especially the fierceness of a soldier and the aura of invincibility perfectly showing up on him.

Under the glows of the swords beside him, he actually walked as he exuded an aura like an arising king stepping over the land of the whole world.

"Bravo!"

Some generals had never seen him before. At the moment, when they saw this young lord walk in such a vigorous way, respect surged in their hearts as they shouted acclaims.

The five generals of the northern army were shaken a bit.

All of a sudden, their eyes moistened, and the tip of their nose turned sour.

They had an extreme feeling of comfort.

They would always rather bleed than weep, yet at this moment, they actually couldn't hold their tears.

They had heard about how foppish and useless the young lord was.

They had sighed that it was the most pathetic thing in the world that a tiger begot a dog son...

Now it all seemed to be a rumor for them.

Only men knew well about men.

Only a tough man understood how a tough man should be.

In their mind, the son of their great general definitely deserved to be a man.

He looked a bit too young though.

But he already had an indomitable spirit.

The walk and the look on his face... were more than enough to make these iron men understand.

Ye Xiao was never a coward.

The son of the great general was indeed a son of a great general.

He didn't disgrace the great general.

He didn't disgrace the northern army.

The five generals cupped their hands and saluted at the same time, "Young General."

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and said, "You've all had a long day, my uncles."

The five generals nearly wept because of being called "uncle".

[The son of the great general has finally grown up and become sensible...

He has finally become a real man...]

And then everyone entered the Palace of Hua-Yang.

Well, not all the men outside had entered the palace. The palace was spacious indeed, yet it was still not big enough to hold such a great amount of people.

Under the lead of a group of soldiers, the dozens of men including Ye Xiao, who had arrived late, took their seats in the main hall beside the generals who had already been there since a while ago.

The generals' seats were in the main hall, while the others are arranged in the side halls.

It separated the generals and the others with such an arrangement.

Prince Hua-Yang was vigorous and willful at the same time.

In the Kingdom of Chen, there would never be another person who dared to arrange the seats like him.

After a while, the crown prince, the second prince, the third prince and the officers... kept arriving one-by-one. The person who represented the House of the Minister was indeed Zuo Wuji. When he was trying to get in the main hall and sit with Ye Xiao, he was refused.

He would never get flattered here.

Son of the Minister Zuo. So what? There was no privilege.

Even though he was one of the "three lords", since he wasn't a man of the military, he had no right to enter the main hall.

"Get the hell out!" A tough general fiercely glared at Zuo Wuji and yelled at him while Zuo Wuji pestered him to stay.

...

It means there will be no laggard among the children of a brave or talented man.

Chapter 130: Brothers Drink the Liquor of the Warpath!

Zuo Wuji twisted his lips and got out of the main hall embarrassedly.

He was extremely submissive though!

In fact, he didn't dare not to be submissive!

He knew that these men were all those who was about to enter the war. If he stayed any longer messing up with them, it would be an easy and unaccountable thing for these men to beat him up and even make him a cripple...

They might hesitate to beat him up in the usual days, after all, he was the young lord of the House of the Minister, and they might give him a slight respect for it. However, since now was a time of war, he had suddenly become an insignificant fart to them; in fact, they saw him as even worse than a fart!

These murderous men feared nothing at this moment!

...

A long and loud clarion suddenly resounded through the night sky!

Everything became silent at the same time!

The next moment, thousands of clarions sounded everywhere loudly and abidingly at the same time!

The ponderous war drums began to sound too.

The drums carried the rhythm like the god of thunder befell, leaving a tremendous pressured inside everyone's heart!

And then the unique and resonant voice of Prince Hua-Yang resounded along the wind in the air spreading away in the night!

"Tonight! With my brothers! We will drink the liquor of the warpath together!"

All the camps were silent!

Yet every man's face turned red all of a sudden because of excitement!

"Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of men! Drink before the warpath!"

"Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of life and death! Alive or dead, drink it up!"

“Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of willingness! No grudge on the battlefield!”

“Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of trusts! We look after brother’s parents!”

“Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of parents! Don’t weep, dads and moms!”

“Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of wives! The old and the children are under their care!”

“Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of enemies! There is no mercy in the battlefield!”

“Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of homeland! Let our blood boil for it!

“Liquor of the warpath is the liquor of men! [Warriors love the taste of it!](#)”

The voice of Prince Hua-Yang was loud and sonorous, resounding in the night sky!

Even the stars in the sky seemed to be shaking because of its fierceness!

Hundreds of thousands of warriors were all standing straight up!

Their eyes were all filled with a ferocious glow!

The same words reverberated in everyone's hearts!

“Liquor of the warpath!”

That was the meaning of it!

“Liquor~ of~ the warpath!”

Prince Hua-Yang suddenly shouted loudly again!

After that, the shouts of the hundreds of thousands of warriors burst out in the silence of the night!

“... The liquor of victory!!!”

All the soldiers shouted at the same time at the top of their lungs!

At the moment, the whole capital was covered by the dust that was aroused by the huge clamor!

Ye Xiao was shocked. He felt like there was something cold fleeing on his back. His blood was boiling and he couldn't stop it!

That was pageantry!

That was men!

That was soldiers!

That was war!

The resounding and loud voice of Prince Hua-Yang appeared again, “Today~ we drink up the liquor~ of the warpath!”

“We march forward and never look back!”

All the soldiers shouted together!

“They day when we come back with victory!” Prince Hua-Yang shouted to the sky.

“We drink the liquor on the victory banquet!”

The soldiers shouted together!

“GOOD!”

Prince Hua-Yang shouted, “Brothers! Raise your cup! Let’s drink them up! For the blood we will splash together!”

All around the palace, everyone raised his drink at the same time and knocked it over!

Everybody's face turned red!

Everybody's blood was boiling with excitement!

"My drink is bottom-up! You?" Prince Hua-Yang stood up and yelled.

"We have drank up!" All the soldiers shouted.

"Drink your fills!" Prince Hua-Yang laughed.

And then his voice resounded loudly, "Men should drink up his liquor of the warpath. Men should cut off the enemies' heads in the long battlefield. Men should die with a smile on his face while fighting in the battle. [Live or die, men should never let the drink down!](#)"

It was the Palace of Hua-Yang!

It was the military camp!

It was like raging flames had suddenly exploded!

“Brothers! Bottoms up!”

...

After drinking with all his brothers, Prince Hua-Yang got down from his seat and entered the main hall!

Everyone was looking at him with profound respect! They had a fever for him! They were as though looking at the god of battlefield befalling!

Even Ye Xiao felt extremely respectful to him!

He realized that Prince Hua-Yang truly deserved the title, War God of the Kingdom!

Just his rallying was already the most powerful he had ever seen!

It was only about drinking the liquor, and it wasn't even the formal departure ceremony. He had already made his men agglomerate like an iron plate!

They were like an invincible stream surging forward!

Who else in the world could do the same?

Just the loyalty he received was something that could rarely be

gained in the world!

Ye Xiao could imagine that when Prince Hua-Yang was leading these warriors who were in such a fever in the battle, it would most definitely be a marvelous scene!

It would be a merciless massacre, wouldn't it?

What a great general!

What a strong army!

How could they possibly lose the war?

In front of everybody, Prince Hua-Yang walked to the table. His face was cold and vigorous like iron. His eyes were sharp as he glanced around every general's face.

“Brothers!” He raised his drink.

“Great general!”

They stood up at the same time, “Success and glory!”

“Thank you, my brothers! I hope that we will come back with victory and glory as your kind wishes! We will slaughter every man in the enemies' troops with no mercy!” Prince Hua-Yang drank up

the liquor.

“Prince the mighty!” They shouted in chorus.

The sound they made nearly broke the roof.

Prince Hua-Yang laughed and then sat down to his seat. The atmosphere suddenly turned ‘alive’ after what he did.

Like it suddenly exploded. - Boom! -

“Drink!”

“Drink it up!”

“Stay or get drunk!”

“Die drinking!”

“Whoever doesn’t get drunk is a pxxsy!”

...

In the main hall, it was like lighting up a whole bucket of fuel.

The atmosphere suddenly “fired up” crazily.

The smell of liquor was everywhere. The forthrightness of men was shown thoroughly at this moment!

These experienced soldiers yelled and laughed. After a while, there were already nearly twenty empty liquor buckets broken on the floor! The food was remained untouched, yet everyone had already drank up four bowls of liquor.

The ones who were not very good at drinking had already become dizzy. They secretly operated their martial art under the table...

The ones who were crazy about drinking held their bowls with liquor moving around and yelling.

It was a tidy and orderly group of serious men earlier, yet at this moment, that was all changed.

When these men got together at the table, they would never care about seniors and juniors. They just had fun and drank.

They were well aware that the situation was bad in the south! The enemy that made the Southern General helpless was not something easy to deal with! It must be an extremely formidable adversary!

Once they got there, they would be in hell and they would very likely die!

This time, no one could assure that they could survive the fight. Maybe many of them would never show up again!

Since so, they just had fun and drank in their last gathering!

They didn't talk about it, yet they had prepared to accept it. And they kept making their brothers drink!

Everyone was thinking the same thing, [Even if I can't come back this time, I have had a good drink with my brothers today! We must drink our fills! Drink till we puke!]

[Even if we puke, we will still continue drinking!]

[When we win the battle and return, there must be many drinks awaiting us! But if we cannot return anymore, the last revelry should be this one!]

They were making enormous noises at the moment. It was like an extremely busy market. There were fine liquors everywhere though.

...

“Hey Qiao! Come over! Come over here! Screw you, man. You broke my shoulder last time. Now drink it up and we are even!”

“Even my ass! You kicked me in the crotch, remember? I kept holding my crotch in my bed for half a month. You nearly made my wife a widow, you scumbag! I am the generous one who didn’t bother about it!”

...

“Hey Song Laoqi! You prick! You stole my gold for gambling... I formally inform you that I don’t give a fxxk now. Don’t hide from me now! By the way, did you win or lose though...”

“Nonsense... I never stole your gold! I just took two pieces of jades from you last time. It took me a long time to make up my mind to take those, and unluckily, I took two pieces of shit jades. And I have nearly lost everything that night. That was the bad luck your stupid jades brought to me...”

“What?! You fxcking stupid shit! It was you! You nasty shit! It was you who took my jades! I was wondering how they disappeared all of a sudden! You better give them back to me...”

“Oyee! Oyee! You just said you don’t care now. A gentleman only talks... I am absolutely unable to give them back to you. Not even if you beat me up to death... Those two shitty jades were long gone...”

...

“Zhao Laoda! You bastard! I am going to curse you badly today!”

“Go ahead! You can’t kill me by cursing anyway. When you finish, everything between us should be over. Do you understand?!”

...

“Tan Shiyi! You fxcking beat me and I lied in my bed for a long time just because you want the job of mine! You actually brought that many people to fight against me! Listen carefully now, your group fight against my group, or my group fight you...”

“Humph! You? What kind of good men could you possibly bring? You can merely bring some useless losers. You are lucky I have been assigned far away from you... Otherwise, I would beat you up and make you a cripple! You have nothing but a dirty mouth! I will take whatever I deserve from you!”

“Fxck you!”

“Fxck you and your whole clan!”

“Oh yeah? Show me what you got then! Drink till one of us puke out and get down!”

“Do you really think I would be scared? You are going to be the one who will puke!”

...

The raws:

- “出征酒，男儿的酒！男儿征前饮一口！”
- “出征酒，生死的酒！生生死死这一口！”
- “出征酒，无怨的酒！战场搏杀没有仇！”
- “出征酒，托付的酒！兄弟我家看白头！”
- “出征酒，父母的酒！双亲高堂莫泪流！”
- “出征酒，妻的酒！顾老看幼靠你手！”
- “出征酒，敌人的酒！生死搏杀莫留手！”
- “出征酒，家国的酒！卫我家国热血流！”
- “出征酒，男儿的酒！将士爱喝这一口！”

The raws:

- “男儿当喝出征酒；烽火万里斩敌酋；横卧沙场应含笑；生死不负这一口！”

Chapter 131: The King His Majesty

The generals who looked decent a moment ago were now opening their collars and stripped to the waists. They shouted and cursed loudly with their necks flushing!

They stopped acting politely now. Dirty words kept coming out from their mouths. Their ancestors and parents were having a hard time today as they kept being abused by these guys. They just shouted some bad words to whoever they saw. After they shouted at each other, they just raised the bottles and drank up!

And then one of them might say, "Nice!"

"Nice your stupid ass!"

The other one shouted at him, and then another round of abuse began. Then they drank again, and then they found someone else and did it again. There were so many of them anyway. It would be easy for them to find someone and begin another round.

They talked about everything in the world, except their departure. They talked about the sea and the land, the south and the north, the sky and the earth, stories in the past and relations in the present, strange stuffs and weird people... They just talked about everything.

There were many of them who had fought against the enemy they were about to meet in the battle, so they told everybody about it.

While one was telling about it, the other was listening to him attentively.

Yet everybody knew that no one was really drunk when he was talking about this!

The one who was talking would never say anything inaccurate, and the one who was listening would never forget a bit after that!

They would remember their brothers' experience and be cautious about what their brothers had learnt from their sufferings!

The friendship between these soldiers was shown during the feast. They were telling each other their most important experience.

They trusted their brothers who were surely trustworthy to them.

"Listen. You will meet Zhao Heihu sooner or later when you are in the battle. That bastard is so strong. It will be like he was having fun fighting against you. Don't be reckless. He can easily kill you in seconds!"

"Bullshit! If you think he is so strong, tell me what he got then..."

"Well! That Zhao Heihu..."

"Oh I see. So he surely could make you cry like a baby. I remember it then. I am not afraid of him at all. You should see how I am going to kick his ass and make him cry like a baby..."

"Urh. I will see how you escape from the battle and cry like a baby in front of me. You will get to know how strong he is when you get to him..."

"Cry your stupid ass. Don't think I will be the same like you!"

"Damn it... How dare you... Zhao Heihu is going to kill you for sure!"

"What if I kill him?"

"If you kill him, I will call you my grandfather!"

"Great! Deal! Wait and see you little prick! When I come back with his head in my hand, you better call me grandpa! Hmm, no. I will come back with him captured alive and kill him in front of you. I want to see you convinced!"

"Look how you brag! Even the cows could fly according to you! I bet you can never do that!"

"Bullshxt! Do we have a deal? I kill him or capture him and you call me your grandpa?"

"Deal!"

"Deal is a deal!"

"If you can do that, I will not only call you grandpa, I will also give you the best liquor I have saved for decades!"

"Great! Hahahahaha... I am going to win this..."

...

"Men of the northern army, stand up! Let's make some challenge to the men of the Hua-Yang army!"

Ye Xiao had actually stood up on a table. His pretty face was red and his eyes showed that he was a bit dizzy. His body was groggy and he yelled with his arms waving!

"Alright!" Those from the northern army stood up and shouted, "Who dares to take the challenge?"

Prince Hua-Yang's men shouted right away, "Damn! They actually dare to challenge us in our own place! Brothers, take your bottles and go get them! Make them drunk! Make them puke!"

"Wooooowwww..."

The other side, Lan Langlang was shouting, "I am challenging you all by myself..." He didn't even finish talking, yet he had already been caught by several big guys. They grabbed his hands, and shoulders, then they opened his mouth, pouring two bottles worth of liquor in it.

Lan Langlang suddenly felt the world spinning. He swayed and then crawled his way to the bottom of the table.

He was apparently too naive. Ye Xiao had a bunch of people helping him, and Lan Langlang was himself alone, yet he actually wanted to challenge all the men there like Ye Xiao did... He absolutely deserved to be fuddled...

"You little fool. You really don't know the immensity of the heaven and earth, do you? You actually wanted to challenge us all... We won't be taking it e it. We pick our opponents too... Hahahaha..." Some experienced soldiers looked at Lan Langlang who was hiding under the table, completely intoxicated from the liquor.

It seemed that Prince Hua-Yang hadn't stopped laughing tonight. He moved around the crowd with his cup in his hand and drank so much.

Suddenly, he grabbed Ye Xiao's collar and made him nearly lie down on the table. Prince Hua-Yang said with a heavy smell of alcohol, "Listen, kiddo! Listen carefully now! During my absence, you must take good care of my daughter. If she ever feels unhappy

about you, I don't care who your father is, I will cut your pxnis and send you to the royal palace to be a eunuch!"

The generals shouted with laughter, "Wow wow... Woooo... The father-in-law is going to cut the son-in-law's pxnis off. Hahahahaha..."

Ye Xiao was embarrassed and he could only answer, "Please don't worry."

"Humph!" Prince Hua-Yang let go of Ye Xiao and suddenly put the bottle on the table heavily as he shouted loudly, "Silence! I have something to speak!"

And then the whole place suddenly turned silent. Everyone was quiet!

People were all looking at this War God of The Kingdom!

"There is one thing that I can't stand! Those bastards from those stupid countries kept messing with us trying to take our territory! When they do so, I lead my men and beat them up seriously!"

Prince Hua-Yang shouted loudly, "But there is another thing that is more unbearable! While we are fighting in the battle, our families are bullied here in our hometown!"

"My brothers fight in the war splashing their bloods! They are true heroes! They are true men! They are warriors! Whoever dare

to mess with their families, I am going to rip their heads off! I leave my word here. During our battle, if anyone dare to mess with our families, I will make him suffer a fate worse than death!"

His eyes glanced at the side halls with coldness and he shouted loudly, "I don't give a shit who he is! Royal house, noble clans, lords. No matter who he is, even if he is the king, if he dare to mess with my brothers' families, I will kill him! Kill his whole clan! I swear to god!"

An aura of extreme fierceness spread out along with his voice.

Everyone knew that those were not empty words.

"Prince Hua-Yang the mighty!"

The generals shouted together!

At the same time, a voice was smiling, "What is this liveliness all about... I have to take a drink too. Hmmm. Brother Su, you are so vigorous with those words. Kill his whole clan... That's always my line to say. Hahaha..."

As this voice reverberated, there came a middle-aged man who was in yellow clothes. Behind him, there were several soldiers who seemed to be helpless.

Prince Hua-Yang was shocked when he saw the man. The others were all shocked too.

And then all of them kneeled down and said, "Long live the king!"

The man who suddenly interrupted them was the king. The ruler of the Kingdom of Chen!

Chen Xuantian!

It was Ye Xiao's first time to see the king himself.

He was about forty years old. His eyes were sharp and he had a square face. He looked like the crown prince a little bit, but the distinguished vigor he carried was something the crown prince was not yet able to achieve!

The king walked in big strides, as if a dragons or tiger. He just walked into the hall casually and it showed the scene of the sovereign descending upon the world!

He was extremely different from the crown prince. The crown prince was extremely far behind him!

People in the hall including Prince Hua-Yang all kneeled down, except Ye Xiao. He was still standing on the table like a big frog in a small pond.

Surely, Lan Langlang didn't kneel either, because he was drunk under the table. However, what he did was more than kneeling

though; he sprawled down on the floor!

The king saw Ye Xiao acting so specially, so he was a bit surprised and smiled, "Who is this..."

Prince Hua-Yang kicked Ye Xiao down off the table. - Puff. - Ye Xiao fell on the floor. Prince Hua-Yang spoke with anger, "You bastard! Do you want your property to be confiscated..."

And then he turned over and talked to the king, "This little fool is the son of Ye Nantian... Ye Xiao!"

The king was a bit shocked when hearing this. He laughed with his eyes half-closed and said, "Oh I see. So it is you. He was the 'midnight snack' we are talking about."

The crowd burst into laughter after his words escaped his lips.

Apparently, that was something everybody was talking about...

Ye Xiao was embarrassed, yet he had to come over and said, "Greetings, your highness."

"Oh." The king reached his hand and dragged him up, "There is no highness here tonight. There is only an old general here coming to join the feast with his brother and share the farewell dinner with all the warriors!"

And then he looked around and said, "Get up now, all of you."

"Thank you, your highness."

Everybody stood up, but they were somehow restrained. The atmosphere was no more in heat. No matter what the king had said, he was still the king to everybody...

Whoever dared to say "fxck" while the king was there, must have lost his mind!

...

Chapter 132: What a King

People in the royal family were most untrustworthy. People would rather believe the existence of the ghosts in the world than the words that came out of those royalty's mouths!

That was wisdom.

The king smiled and said, "Fine. With my presence, you will very likely feel restrained. Fine. I will leave after several drinks. I don't want to be the uninvited guest."

And then he sighed and said, "Brothers who have fought with me side by side in the battle are now distant to me... Oh. What a shame..."

He pointed at someone in the crowd and said smilingly, "Meng Laowu, don't hide behind others! You shared one tent with me. I remember there was a midnight when you had loose bowels, you shitted your pants in front of my bed. Don't you remember that? Damn it! You kept saying you were disgraced in front of me. Did you think you were any better before it... Now you actually stopped talking to me. Maybe your bald head was even worse than your useless pxnis..."

Meng Laowu was a big guy with a bald head. There were some scars on his face. He rubbed his head and murmured, "You highness, how could you say that... If you didn't secretly make me take some cathartic, how could I shit my pants... And now you have seen how embarrassed I was..."

What he said immediately made everybody laugh loudly!

The king was laughing too. He said, "And you... You, Han Lao-San, Song Lao-Qi, Bai Xiao-Jiu. And you, you... You bastards. We agreed to catch some fish, but when I jumped into the water naked, you ran away with my clothes! I kept covering my crotch and stayed there until the night came. When I just arrived at the barrack, you motherfxkers actually lit up all the torches and shouted. You actually made me naked under the light and let everybody know I am giving some good show... I was so embarrassed! Did you actually forget about that?"

He stared at them and acted like he was angry, "You ungrateful bastards!"

The king kept telling the old stories of them and the atmosphere from before returned a bit.

Some of them said, "Your highness, you can't blame us on that one... You can't just tell the story about you being naked. It was in the desolate north. There wasn't even a female rabbit, yet you secretly made us take some philter... We have been staying in the cold water for a whole night to get over it. What we did to you was quite a kind respond already..."

The king laughed, "You lazy shameless fool. You dared to get me naked those years, yet now you are too scared to drink with me. Are you really that of a coward?"

The king had made these men recall their deep memories. They suddenly felt cozy about it. They started to shout, "Come on then! Drink!"

In the old days, they would have probably said 'do you have the guts to drink it up then'!

Yet now they truly didn't dare to speak out this kind of words!

"Make it a bottle then! Screw the cups!" The king was heroic and he raised a big bottle, "I will either make you die drinking or make you puke!"

"Wait, wait, wait... Your highness." Meng Laowu got over and said, "Just in case. I think I have to check your bottle. It could be a bottle of water. We all know you. You always play a scheme while drinking. We are vulgar men, but we are not fool. We can be fooled once, but never again. We remember things anyway..."

People laughed loudly when

they heard him. They shouted together, "Good point! Good words! Go on! Check the bottle!"

Meng Laowu checked the bottle and found that it was really a bottle of water. He was shocked, "Well, your highness. So many years have passed and you still do this. I am admiring you..."

The king rubbed his nose and was embarrassed, "You son of

bxxch. How dare you disgrace me like this. I am not gonna forget this..."

"Punishment! Punishment! That was so over. Hahahaha..."
People started to shout together.

Behind the king, there was an old eunuch with a white face. He was holding his belly laughing and gasping at the moment. He spoke brazenly and weakly, "Oh your highness, it is so funny here. What you said truly made me laugh to death... I felt like I got impotent immediately..."

The generals and the king who had been laughing together were now quiet. They looked at the old eunuch for a while. And then the king finally spoke, "You... Got impotent?"

The old eunuch wiped the tears on his eyes and said happily, "Yes... I felt like I got impotent at once..."

"Puff!"

The king spat out the liquor he had just drunk and laughed. The generals all burst into laughter that seemed to shake the heavens.

[A eunuch... actually said that he got impotent...

That was brilliant!

Does he still have that thing down there?]

Because of this joke, the embarrassment that restrained them was finally gone. The king was so into these generals. He shouted and laughed. He started to rub his hands and rolled up his sleeves. He kept drinking with one old friend after another.

Ye Xiao sensitively noticed something. When the king rolled his sleeves, he tapped on the old eunuch's shoulder casually.

[It seems he means sorry by doing that? Maybe it means... What is it?]

Ye Xiao felt respect.

[This king is truly out of my estimation.]

No matter what the king meant by tapping on the eunuch's shoulder, it made Ye Xiao feel respect. The first time when he saw the king, what the king did was favorable to Ye Xiao.

The king had kept Ye Nantian in this place for twenty years by a promise, yet he had a son like that. It seemed that things between Ye Xiao and the king were bound to be discordant after this night...

As the king who ruled the whole kingdom, he actually still valued the stories with his old comrades and put down his figure like that. He laughed and shouted together with these generals. Although it was during the feast before they join the battle, and it was possible

that the king was trying to win popular support, it was still not an easy thing to do for a king!

Besides, Ye Xiao felt that when the king was talking, he was sincere. At least while he was staying with these old friends, he didn't treat himself as the king who was in a higher position!

And the joke about that eunuch was apparently something that was planned to finally relax the crowd. A eunuch who could stay beside the king was never a fool like that.

The eunuch must have a huge power as he was the closest one at the king's side. He might call himself servant, but even the queen and the crown prince didn't dare to treat him as a servant!

Such a man was willing to sacrifice his dignity to help the king doing what he wanted.

While the king tapped on the eunuch's shoulder, Ye Xiao felt that the king was a good person somehow.

That tapping was a comfort and also a praise!

Watching the king having fun among all the generals so closely, Ye Xiao realized why people like Prince Hua-Yang, the War God of the Kingdom, would be willing to serve the king!

He understood why his father, Ye Nantian, who was a remarkable heroic figure, would agree to make the promise of

staying for twenty years!

If a king could behave like this, even if he was acting, it was enough!

That was enough for a king to conquer everybody.

That was something Ye Xiao could learn!

Thinking about the crown prince who kept doing dirty business, Ye Xiao only had one feeling: the dog son of a tiger.

"Ye Xiao! Ye Xiao!" The king shouted, "You little prick, come over here! You father is not here tonight, so you are going to drink up this bottle of liquor for him. I am going to see how the alcoholic rice ball looks like..."

Meng Laowu rubbed his head and asked, "Your highness, that Ye boy drinks and he may puke. But what's that to do with rice ball?"

The king laughed, "Don't you know he was the 'midnight snack'? A midnight snack that was soaked with liquor, what else could it be if it isn't alcoholic rice ball..."

Meng Laowu thought for a while and said, "That's not a reasonable explanation. '[Midnight snack](#)' isn't '[rice glue balls \(yuan xiao\)](#)'. He is not going to be an alcoholic rice ball anyway!"

The king was stunned and then he turned perverse, "Ok. The midnight snack that night was the rice glue balls. How about that? It has to be!"

Meng Laowu nodded quickly and spoke with flattery, "You are the king with golden words. What you say must be the truth..."

People were booing around him all of a sudden!

In fact, the five generals of the northern army felt proud at the moment!

[Even though our great general isn't here, the king never forgot about this! The king never forgot about him!]

Ye Xiao was smiling bitterly. He said yes to the king and thought, [Damn it. Everyone knows my nickname, Midnight Snack, and yet I am going to have another one like 'rice ball' or something. Damn it, this is bad luck!] He had to go over to the king. So he walked over, nipped his nose and drank up that whole bottle of liquor for his father.

The officers sitting in the side halls watched the king playing around in the main hall. They all showed strange expressions on their faces.

When the king was still a prince, he concealed his true status and got into the army. They all knew about it.

Yet they had never thought that the king actually valued these generals so much...

...

Explanation:

We all know midnight snack in Chinese is ye xiao. While there is one kind of food, the rice glue ball in China, which is called yuan xiao in Chinese. So the king apparently mistakes ye xiao (midnight snack) with yuan xiao (rice glue ball).

Chapter 133: Superior Cultivator, The Eunuch

There were surely somebody gloating, [The king is again inveigling these fools to sacrifice for him...]

However, they also knew that even if the king didn't do so, these men would still be willing to die for him. Anyway, the presence of the king tonight certainly made difference though.

After this special night, the strong and fierce army that was like an iron plate had their loyalty reach unprecedented heights.

These men were not only the most loyal underlings of Prince Hua-Yang, but also the loyal soldiers of the Kingdom of Chen. As long as the king and Prince Hua-Yang were on the same side, they wouldn't have a problem with it.

That was very important.

At almost the end of the night, Prince Hua-Yang's family came out to toast. Their appearance had brought the night into a new fever.

At this moment, something happened.

The king looked at Su Yeyue who was just out for the toast and asked, "Is this the girl, Yeyue? Look how she grows... Dingguo, is

she engaged to anyone yet?"

Prince Hua-Yang smiled, "You highness, how could you forget it. My girl and Ye Nantian's boy had been engaged long ago."

The king answered with a "hmm" and then went on the revel with the generals again.

In fact, this conversation made Ye Xiao feel that there was something wrong. However, Su Dingguo's answer had closed the topic anyway.

This War God looked unceremonious and forthright and he seemed to be drunk, but in fact, he was smart.

After a while, the King and Prince Hua-Yang went to the study room to have a private conversation.

Ye Xiao noticed that the old eunuch was left in the hall. He didn't join the generals. He sat at the corner and drank alone. It seemed he was quite good at drinking.

It was busy and crowded all around. It nearly made everybody's blood boil. Yet he just sat there calmly looking around with an indifferent face.

How could a man like this say something like "I have become impotent"?

It was simply unreasonable.

Yet it happened. There must be a reason why he had to say those words.

Ye Xiao got rid of Su Yeyue and went to the eunuch silently.

"You are drinking alone. That is too sad and lonely. Let me drink with you." Ye Xiao raised the bottle in his hand.

The eunuch looked up slowly and stared at Ye Xiao's face with his dim eyes. He smiled weirdly and said, "The son of the great General Ye. The first of the 'three lords in town'... Good. It must be destiny that ties people together. Let me drink with you then."

His voice didn't sound girly like normal eunuchs. It was just a bit soft and cold. It seemed there was still a slight sense of 'man' inside it.

Ye Xiao looked at him up and down as he was drunk at the moment.

The first impression of the eunuch was an old man. His body was stooped and his hair was turning white. He was in advanced age.

While Ye Xiao looked closely, he found that this old man didn't really look that old.

The skin on his face was smooth and exquisite. His eyes were dim though, yet there was sharpness hidden deep within.

Ye Xiao tried to check the eunuch's cultivation capability with his spiritual mind, yet he got nothing in return.

His spiritual mind brought him the information about a dead man. There were no signs of life.

That was weird. The eunuch was right in front of Ye Xiao vividly.

The only explanation was that the eunuch's cultivation capability was too strong. It was way over what Ye Xiao's spiritual mind could read.

Then the problem showed up now.

The eunuch was a servant who had been staying with the king all the time and was treated as a lackey. He didn't look strong at all, yet he was actually a hidden world-class superior cultivator?

"May I have your name please?" Ye Xiao kept drinking and chatted with him.

"Oh, it is my pleasure to be asked. My family name is Wang." Eunuch Wang smiled blandly. He was still humble.

"[Wang Gonggong](#). Please have a drink." Ye Xiao gave him a new bottle.

"You are standing on scruples, Lord Ye." Eunuch Wang waved his hand and refused it, "I truly cannot drink anymore. I am not good at drinking really."

Ye Xiao acted like he was badly drunk and grabbed his hand, "Come on. It is just one more cup."

Eunuch Wang kept refusing him with determination.

Ye Xiao didn't force him. He let go of his hand and laughed, "It is a good chance to get drunk today. Why do you keep resisting it. Fine. I will find someone else."

Then he just left.

The eunuch looked at the back of Ye Xiao and his eyes lit up. That was a sharp and scrutinizing look. He thought with confusion, [The Vanishing Martial Art... should make me escape everybody's notice at anytime in any place. I should be absent in this world... How come this Lord Ye could easily find me among the crowd? And he actually wanted to have a drink with me. Is it just because he have sharp eyes?"]

When Ye Xiao turned around, his eyes lit up too.

He was aware of something now.

When he grabbed the eunuch's hand, although for a short while, he had clearly felt the strong power hidden inside that arm. It looked flaccid... but it would burst with extremely strong power when it needed to.

The toughness of his skin was also astonishing.

Ye Xiao could roughly reckon the true power of this Eunuch Wang.

This eunuch was at least much stronger than the man in the Crown Prince's Palace, Guan Zhengwen. There was simply a huge gap between them.

This eunuch should be the king's "life insurance". He must be the king's most trustworthy guard. He was at least a cultivator at the superior levels of the Sky Origin Stage.

And he should be one of the best at the Sky Origin Stage.

He had almost broken through the level limit of this world.

Except for the sick Gu Jinlong, who was from the upper realm, the superior cultivators that Ye Xiao had seen in this world including Guan Zhengwen and Ning Biluo were all under this eunuch's league. Even the mysterious Xiu of the Heavens seemed to be weaker than him.

People were still drinking and laughing in the hall. The eunuch was still looking around calmly with cold eyes. The king and Prince Hua-Yang were having a private conversation in the study. Su Yeyue dragged Ye Xiao out of the hall.

They came to the the backyard, the garden.

"I mean... You are not drunk, are you?" She was looking at Ye Xiao thoughtfully.

"Absolutely not." Ye Xiao waved his hand, "Look how good I am with drinks..."

"Oh no. My mother told me that ninety percent of the people who keep telling people they are not drunk and how good they are at drinking are, in fact, drunk." She said twitching his mouth.

"Heh, heh... What she said is correct, but it is taking a part for the whole though. Besides, don't forget the ten percent. Why can't I be one of the ten percent?" Ye Xiao explained.

"That's worse. The rest of the ten percent all passed out already." She said.

Ye Xiao kept arguing embarrassedly, "That's not true. I am not drunk. I just had a little bit of that liquor, and you took me out of it. How could I possibly get drunk? My drinking capacity is outstanding though..."

"Fine. Alright. I believe that you are not drunk. Stop bragging then..." She was apparently unhappy. They walked among the flowers for a while silently before she spoke in a low voice, "I don't know why... But I don't have a good feeling about my father's departure. He has been through many battles before. But I have never felt how I feel now..."

Ye Xiao comforted her, "Don't worry. He will be fine."

Su Yeyue frowned, "I am serious. I never had this feeling before when my dad was going to battle. It was like he was just going out of home for a while and hanging around... And then he would just come back. But this time, I have a totally different feeling. Completely different."

She stopped and then continued, "And my mom. She was wakened by a scary dream the other night. She has been troubled for quite a while now..."

Ye Xiao had a bad feeling when he heard this.

[That is not normal.

Is there going to be any accident in the battle this time?

They are women in Prince Hua-Yang's family. He has been to battles for so many times in his life, yet his daughter and wife had never felt scared before. How come they feel it this time?

What does this mean? What is this sign about?

Is it just some imaginary fears? Are they just too worried this time?

No, absolutely not.]

Ye Xiao believed one thing. A person always had a strange foreboding for their closest kin. It was hard to explain, but it was true.

Most importantly, that foreboding was always right.

Now, Su Yeyue was confiding her worried to him. That made him feel more depressed.

"I don't dare to tell anybody about this... Not even my mom." Su Yeyue looked at him, "Xiao-Xiao, what do you think... Is anything bad going to happen?"

...

In Chinese, people call eunuchs "Gonggong".

Chapter 134: The Inauspicious Feeling

"No. It is going to be fine." Ye Xiao comforted her. Yet an inauspicious feeling was aroused in his heart too. Although he didn't know why, that feeling was real.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "Who is the bodyguard of the prince?"

"The Leopard." Su Yeyue said.

Leopard was the nickname of the bodyguard.

"Is he dependable?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Absolutely! Uncle Leopard has been fighting by my father's side through fire and water. He has been through many battles by my father's side. He has always been loyal! He could give up his life for my father! He is the most trustworthy man in my family. We never treated him as an outsider." Su Yeyue nodded, "What did you ask this for?"

"I am a bit disappointed. What I need is not a man who will die for your father. I need someone who can survive for your father." Ye Xiao took out two jade bottles and put them into Su Yeyue's hand. He spoke quietly, "I have made a dan bead for your father... It can save one's life. It brings people back from death. However, I don't think he will take it for himself... This time, you give these two dan beads to that Uncle Leopard secretly. Just tell him that these are something that can save people's lives... Ask him to keep

it a secret. If something bad happens... Put them into the prince's mouth... There are only two of them. Use them only on the prince. Do you understand?"

Su Yeyue heard that and her eyes lit up. She was a bit cheered up now.

She knew how amazing the supreme dan bead Ye Xiao brought to her house the other day. Now he gave her two this time. She surely knew how important these dan beads were.

"Wow! Thank you! Xiao-Xiao, you are so nice!" She grabbed Ye Xiao and hugged him immediately. And then she kissed him on the cheek, and very quickly, she blushed.

Ye Xiao was kissed. That was a marvelous feeling. He couldn't help but feel a certain burning sensation rising up inside his heart. The aftertaste of that soft kiss made him feel like he had taken some of "that" kind of liquor again. A private part of his body suddenly turned up...

"When my father returns with victory, I will let my mother tell my father..." Su Yeyue's face was all red with her hands grabbing the lower hem of her clothes. Her voice was like the sound of an ant that nearly couldn't be heard, "To arrange our wedding... By then... Xiao Xiao... Promise me you won't tease me..."

"Wedding?" Ye Xiao was shocked.

He was lost immediately.

He was sure what the feeling in his heart was though. He felt a bit sad, a bit terrified, a bit guilty and a bit helpless.

He didn't feel an expectant nor surprised feeling though.

In his head, there appeared a high-hearted figure with snow white clothes.

There were piteous eyes staring at him through the mist.

It was like she asking him, "Ye Xiao, why can't you marry me?"

Years ago, these words were like thunder striking into Ye Xiao's heart.

"You obviously love me. Why can't you marry me?"

It was obvious.

The high-hearted girl like the moon in the sky who could make everybody else look like vulgars actually laid down her figure and asked him that. Ye Xiao could feel her determination.

Apparently, she had given up her self-pride.

However... How could he get married when he was cultivating that kind of martial art?

When he turned his back to her, he could hear two drops of tears falling onto the floor.

- Pak dak. -

And then the five words that had been haunting him sounded.

"Ye Xiao, I hate you!"

At this time of the day, these five words and the way that white-dressed girl speak those words were still lingering in Ye Xiao's dreams every now and then.

...

He was lost in thoughts so he didn't even answer Su Yeyue.

"Do I want to marry Su Yeyue?" Ye Xiao asked himself in his heart.

She was vivacious and pretty. Her body and her face were both in the top range in the Qing-Yun Realm.

However, Ye Xiao was inconsistent, tangled and resisting.

In fact, he did like Su Yeyue.

But he knew that this kind of emotion was not about the relationship between lovers! It was more like the kind to a little sister.

He was dotting on her like a brother to his sister.

But if there was no other girl in his heart, he would agree to marry Su Yeyue though. At least he won't refuse it.

He was a virgin. He didn't know anything about things between lovers at all. It was possible that he sleepwalked to his marriage.

When he thought about "marriage", "wedding" and "wife" now, he didn't think of Su Yeyue.

He would think of a girl dressed in white. And he would think of the pain and the sorrow...

At the moment, when he heard what Su Yeyue said, he didn't feel happy. Instead, he felt troubled.

He was lost in all kinds of emotions. The only thing he could be sure at the moment was that he didn't really love Su Yeyue!

At least not now.

"Nerd. Why don't you say anything?" Su Yeyue lowered her head and squinted at him. Her eyes were full of love. She said, "Do you like me that much to become a nerd?"

Ye Xiao smiled embarrassedly. He rubbed his nose and didn't know what to say really...

What could he possibly say anyway. He couldn't say he love her. That was lying to her. He didn't want to do that. He couldn't say he didn't love her either. That was hurting her. Looking at her sincere face, he just couldn't do it. He actually didn't know what to say, as nothing would be appropriate at the moment...

While he was feeling embarrassed, the king came out. Prince Hua-Yang was with him. It seemed they had talked about something, and then they just left with Eunuch Wang...

They actually gave Ye Xiao a feeling of sneakiness.

"Hmm. The king came out secretly too..." He finally had something else to say. So he changed the topic. It worked perfectly on Su Yeyue overtime.

Su Yeyue twitched her lips and saw her father coming over. She hurriedly hid the bottles in her clothes. She knew that these supreme dan beads would never be used on Prince Hua-Yang if they were in his hands...

"Wait there, you two. Ye Xiao, don't leave after the drink." Prince Hua-Yang told Ye Xiao with a low voice. Then he turned around and entered the hall.

In the hall, along with the return of Prince Hua-Yang, it became boisterous again.

"Why is my dad unhappy all of a sudden..." Su Yeyue asked worriedly.

She knew her father so well.

Ye Xiao casually answered, "I am afraid... It must be the private conversation earlier."

"Private conversation? What was it about? Oh... Is there anything wrong with the battle?" Su Yeyue got nervous.

"Hey... How could I know. It must be something bad to us though!" Ye Xiao answered.

After a while, there were people leaving.

The officers were all gone.

The generals were all drunk. At the latter half of the night, the last several generals finally left.

Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji were carried back to their places. These two lords were like sheep falling into a crowd of tigers... It took only a short time, and they were already so drunk. The food weren't all served yet, but they were already lying under the table...

The Crown Prince had looked around before he left.

Apparently, he was looking for Ye Xiao. He saw Ye Xiao today, yet he found the young man was quite important in the northern army's eyes. Guan Zhengwen had said that Ye Xiao would die in a few days. If Ye Xiao really died, it might bring something bad to the Crown Prince himself though!

The Crown Prince's eyes were full of concerns.

Yet he didn't see Ye Xiao and he just left...

In fact, even though he had seen Ye Xiao, he would just talk to him and try to make it look like he had nothing to do with Ye Xiao's death. That's all.

"Ye Xiao, come over here." Prince Hua-Yang showed up on the stairs.

He didn't even look drunk at all.

Ye Xiao got over with Su Yeyue hurriedly.

He thought Prince Hua-Yang wanted to say something, but he just stood there, staring at them for a while. He didn't say anything right away.

After the princess came out, Prince Hua-Yang started to talk, "There is one thing you two must remember. You too, my lady."

The other three nodded seriously.

"This time, if I win the war, it will be fine. But if anything bad happens..." Prince Hua-Yang looked at the princess with cold eyes, "There will be no funeral for me. [Yue-Er shouldn't observe mourning](#) Don't follow any traditions. Yue-Er and Xiao-Xiao will get married as soon as possible! And then sell this palace and all of you live in the House of Ye."

The princess was shocked. She raised her head and looked at Prince Hua-Yang nervously.

Princess Hua-Yang wasn't an ordinary woman. She had noticed that there was something wrong when she saw her husband's face. She had prepared for bad news, yet when she heard what Prince Hua-Yang said, she was still astonished. Was the situation really that bad?

Prince Hua-Yang's words didn't seem like the talk before departure, it was like his last words in his life!

Su Yeyue covered her own mouth before she screamed out.

Her slim body was shaking. Her eyes were filled with disbelief as she looked at her father, as if a thunder struck the lands in a sunny day!

...

In ancient China, people observed a three-year mourning period after their parents' passing, during which they lived in seclusion and hardly ever went out.

Chapter 135: The Man on the Wheelchair

“Keep quiet!” Prince Hua-Yang spoke seriously with a low voice, “Don’t show anything!”

The princess’s face turned pale at once. She covered her mouth immediately, yet her tears couldn’t stop from silently flowing on her cheeks.

She looked up at Prince Hua-Yang’s face. Her face was full of apprehension and reluctance.

“Are they the main force of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng?” Ye Xiao tentatively asked, “And there is another kingdom helping them, isn’t it? Yet... Even so, this battle should be an easy win for us. Why are you so nervous? You are already thinking about failure!”

Prince Hua-Yang sighed and spoke blandly, “Yes. We will most certainly win.”

And he actually just walked back into the house and said nothing else.

Ye Xiao looked at his back and said quietly, “Well then... Did the House of the Chaotic Storm decided to make a move?”

Prince Hua-Yang stopped and then quickly paced into the hall. He spoke blandly, “When things happen, your house will be the safest place. It is our last shelter! Ye Nantian’s strength is more

than enough to keep you safe even if the whole world is against you!

I can see that Xiao-Xiao had improved a lot. He is no longer that little stupid foppish lad. I am happy. From now on, Yue-Er has a man to rely on. I can drop down my concerns about it now.

It is late. Tomorrow is the day we leave for battle! Ye Xiao, you should go now.”

Prince Hua-Yang asked Ye Xiao to leave.

His big figure had disappeared in the hall.

His voice still resounded though, “The House of the Chaotic Storm, I can finally fight against you properly! I would like to see how you make the chaotic storms work with me standing against it!”

Ye Xiao stood still for a while before leaving.

He didn’t know that after he left, Prince Hua-Yang and Princess Hua-Yang with their three sons and daughter, Su Yeyue, just sat in the house for a long while silently.

At the end, Prince Hua-Yang just said one thing, “If I die in battle, no matter what happens, don’t even think about revenge!”

...

When Ye Xiao got out of the palace, it was already midnight.

On both sides of the street, there were soldiers standing there like sculptures.

He was walking. Although he was already an experienced cultivator, when he was surrounded by all these friendly soldiers, he actually felt safe.

“Homeland... Home and country...”

He murmured.

In his previous life, he didn't really understand anything about homeland, simply because he was an orphan. He had no home. Besides, the Qing-Yun Realm was a realm where only cultivation matters. There were only factions, sects and clans. There was no country. That's why he couldn't acknowledge anything as homeland.

At the moment, this world was quite important in his heart. It was a strange feeling to him.

There were so many men willing to die for this world!

When he was nearing his house, he heard the sound of wheels

moving on the ground.

It seemed there was a carriage coming over, yet it wasn't certainly the sound of a carriage.

Ye Xiao stepped aside and kept his eyes half-closed observing the corner of the road.

The sound was turning clearer. After a while, there was a wheelchair showing up. There were two people dressed in cyan who were pushing the wheelchair. There was a girl with a wonderful body beside them. Her face was covered by white silk.

On the wheelchair, there was a man in white.

A young man in white clothes!

The man in white was handsome. His eyes were like stars and her eyebrows were like swords. If he could stand up, he must be a young spark!

However, he was actually disabled!

The wheelchair was moving towards Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao felt relieved immediately. He thought himself about to be mad. Since Gu Jin-Long died, there basically weren't anybody who could easily hurt him anymore...

He sneered at himself and walked ahead again. When he was passing by the wheelchair, he saw that the man in white was looking at him.

They looked at each other.

The wheelchair suddenly stopped.

The man in white looked at Ye Xiao gently and actually spoke first, “It is already deep in the night. Brother, you walk alone. You must be in a good mood.”

Ye Xiao felt that his eyes were crystal clear. They were even full of sincerity. That’s all. Apparently, this man in white was extraordinary, yet he was still a mortal person. He was absolutely not a man in the cultivation world.

Ye Xiao smiled gently, “My house is nearby. I am just hanging out around for a while. But you, you are on a wheelchair. You should take care of yourself.”

The man in white looked at Ye Xiao and said, “Thank you. But I have been crippled since I was a child. I am never going to be recover anymore. I come out late at night everyday, because I don’t want to see anybody or be seen by anybody. That’s all.”

Ye Xiao nodded.

[I wouldn't want to be seen if I were a crippled man with a handsome face.]

“May I have your name please?” The man in white asked.

“Ye.” Ye Xiao answered.

“That's quite a coincidence. My given name is Ye too.” The man in white smiled gently and his eyes blinked.

“Hmm. [Like the Ye of Shu-Ye](#)?” Ye Xiao was interested.

He wanted to leave right away though, but the man in white gave him a feeling that he didn't want to leave. It was a weird feeling like something was going to happen.

The man in white was so polite and elegant. Ye Xiao had a good impression of him.

“No, [it is the Ye for Ye-Se](#). It pronounces the same with yours though. That's a shame.” The man in white smiled, “May I ask your name... Is it ‘Xiao’?”

Ye Xiao looked at him and said, “Yes, it is. Do you know me?”

The man in white laughed happily and said, “Not really. Yet I have heard a lot about you. Because my name is the same with yours. I have always been interested in meeting you in person. I

want to see how do you look like. Now I finally met you, yet I didn't know that we will meet this deep in the night."

And then he smiled with his eyes half-closed and said, "Lord Ye, tonight is the night of my name."

Ye Xiao frowned. He felt that this guy was not an ordinary figure. It seemed that this guy was thinking about something, yet Ye Xiao couldn't comprehend anything just from looking at his face.

The words "tonight is the night of my name" seemed to mean something though.

Ye Xiao was thinking and he said with a low voice, "Your night?"

"Yes indeed." This Ye guy confirmed. His pale hand was tapping on his knee.

"May I have your name please?" Ye Xiao asked.

"My name is Ye Xiao too." The man in white spoke gently, "[Xiao... for Jiu Xiao Yun Wai.](#)"

Ye Xiao suddenly felt uncomfortable. He turned immediately indifferent and spoke blandly, "Brother Ye, you have a good name."

"Brother Ye, your name is better!" The man in white spoke with

his eyes blinking with some weird expressions, “Xiao (笑) is the best word in the world!”

Ye Xiao said, “Oh? Why?”

The man in white spoke gently, “Laughing under the firmament. Laughing at the whole martial world. Life needs laughter. Heroes need no tears.” He smiled softly, looked at Ye Xiao’s face and said gently, “Laugh upon the seas and the mountains; laugh above the land; laugh at all the heroes in the world!”

Laugh at all the heroes in the world!

The last few words made Ye Xiao’s heart beat heavily. He laughed and asked, “I feel that my name is really a good one now. You are out on the street late at night. I don’t think you have anything urgent at home. How about you and me, we go to the Spring Breeze House for a couple of drinks? It is on me.”

The man in white shook his head slightly and said dispiritedly, “My legs... I really shouldn’t drink any liquor. I am afraid I have to refuse your kindness... It is late now. Let me pick another day to visit you.”

Ye Xiao said, “Why another day? Why not just come to my place tonight and let’s talk through the night?”

The man shook his head bitterly, “I really want to... But I have someone watching over me...” He pointed at the girl beside him

and said, “Well. My wife is worried that something wrong would happen to me at night. So she insists to come with me. Since she is here, I really can’t go anywhere as I wish.”

Ye Xiao kept inviting, “It doesn’t matter. Ask the lady to come with us. My house is not a big one, but there are still several spare rooms.”

When he was speaking, he glanced at the girl’s face. He intentionally showed an erotic expression in his eyes.

That was a look that was full of urgent libido. It was flagrant, but he acted like he was trying to cover it.

It made people feel that he was planning on something evil, so he invited them to his house. He must be attracted by the man’s wife.

The girl in white silk humphed and spoke between the teeth, “It truly is late. We should go home. Otherwise, your mother will get angry again.”

The man in white smiled bitterly and said, “See. She stopped us. Lord Ye, we will meet again soon.”

“Alright then. Let’s pick another day.” Ye Xiao seemed to feel pity. He stared at the girl’s face again and spoke like he didn’t want her to leave, “Brother Ye, don’t forget to come play with me someday. Make sure you bring your lady. If she doesn’t come, I will be rather disappointed... Hahaha. You will always be warmly

welcomed...”

...

Shu Ye (树叶) means the leaves on the tree. So it's 叶 in Chinese.

Ye Se (夜色) means night view. So it's 夜 in Chinese and it means night.

Jiu Xiao Yun Wai (九霄云外) means the land of nowhere. So it's 霄 in Chinese and it means clouds.

Chapter 136: One Sight Dreaming

The man in white smiled gently, "Absolutely. Brother Ye, farewell."

"Take care." Ye Xiao stood on the street, looking at this man who had the same name with him, leaving slowly on the wheelchair. A weird feeling was aroused in his heart again.

Professedly, he was looking at the butt of the man's wife though.

He looked like he wanted to rip off her clothes immediately.

The girl under the white silk was suppressing the hatred inside her heart. She was holding herself not to get back and smash the foppish prick. She stepped forward and pushed the wheelchair.

Finally, they were gone on the next street.

Ye Xiao eventually felt relieved. He felt some cold sweat floating down on his back.

[Who is this man in white?

He had actually brought me such an uncomfortable feeling!]

Ye Xiao couldn't understand.

Yet he knew one thing. The man and the woman who was pushing the wheelchair and had been silent all along were absolutely superior cultivators in the Sky Origin Stage!

Both of them!

After they disappeared, Ye Xiao didn't dare to follow them.

Because he knew that if he started to stalk them, they would notice at once and instantly kill him!

Besides, the phrase the man said had alerted him!

It was that "Ye Xiao" who said that.

"Laughing under the firmament. Laughing at the whole martial world."

There was only one person who deserved this line and always kept it as a sign!

It was the Xiao Monarch!

Ye Xiao!

When he heard the phrase, all the hair on his body were lifted at

once!

Who on earth was this man? Why did he know that phrase?

Why did he said that to Ye Xiao?!

[This 'Ye Xiao'... couldn't be his real name!] Ye Xiao thought, [He was obviously mocking me... Damn it. I have no idea who he is at all...]

When he was back to his room, he found something astonishing. During such a short time, he actually forgot how that man in white looked like at all!

Ye Xiao always had a good memory that he even thought to be the best in the world. He was gifted with an extraordinary retentive memory!

However, he had just seen that guy's face and now he actually couldn't remember it. That was weird!

That was ridiculous!

Ye Xiao tried so hard to recall it, yet no matter how hard he tried, the image turned blurry. He couldn't recall even a bit of that guy's face. Even the faces of the three other people were becoming blurry too.

"That is weird!" Ye Xiao had heard about this kind of thing before, yet he had never experienced it; nor people who caused it!

Ye Xiao was alerted. It was impossible. People's memory might fade away while time passed. Sometimes, people would forget things that they had just seen. Yet after looking carefully on something, people would never forget any of it during such a short time!

Besides, there was one stranger thing. The women in cyan were behind the wheelchair all the time. Ye Xiao had noticed their strength, but he hadn't paid much attention on their faces. In fact, he had looked at the man in white for quite some time. The strange thing was that the image of the man in white was the first that faded away in his memory. That was contrary to common sense.

There must be something wrong with it!

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts and then he had an idea. He thought that he must have been struck by some special trick. It made a short period of his memory disappear.

That was something impossible in the Land of Han-Yang, yet it was not rare in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Initially, Ye Xiao didn't thought about it. He had never learned anything about it, and he had never been struck by it before. That was why it took him a while to figure it out!

"That was the... One Sight Dreaming in the myth?" Ye Xiao murmured.

One Sight Dreaming meant after people saw something, they would suddenly feel that they had just woken up from dreaming. It made people forget things.

That was some rather evil martial art.

So who were those people? Why did they know such a martial art? Were they natives of the Land of Han-Yang or were they from a higher realm?

What were they planning at this important moment of the Kingdom of Chen? What were they after?

Ye Xiao somehow felt that this meeting was rather important for himself though!

That was his instinct.

He didn't want to lose the memory that might impact the result of the war, but he didn't know anything that could deal with it. He was helpless at the moment and he was lost in thoughts. He operated the East-rising Purple Qi immediately.

He surely wasn't able to solve the problem. The only thing he could depend on was the No. 1 martial art in the world, the East-rising Purple Qi.

In fact, Ye Xiao knew that since he was weak, even though his martial art was powerful, he couldn't be sure that it could save his memory from the effect of the weird trick.

He kept operating it for ninety-nine rounds, and then he confirmed that the East-rising Purple Qi was not almighty. The images were still blurred. They didn't come back to him. However, it wasn't totally useless though. The images stopped becoming more blurred.

It finally stopped.

However, it was impossible to recall their looks. He could still remember the conversations they had. That was enough for him though!

Ye Xiao was sure that even though he had forgotten the face of that man, once he saw him again, he would recognize him through his voice.

"That's scary!" Ye Xiao took in a deep breath.

When he was lying in bed after he was home, he was thinking about another possibility. [If I attacked that 'Ye Xiao' like I was making a joke, what would have happened?]

That man had given Ye Xiao a rather weird impression.

He must be dangerous, yet he didn't give Ye Xiao even a bit of hatred or hostility.

It seemed whenever Ye Xiao saw that man, he would feel pleased. He was a bit pleased even thinking about him.

Although Ye Xiao didn't have a clear image of him and knew that it was most possible that the man was an enemy, he just couldn't hate him. He would like to even spend more time with that man.

That was like some natural-born attraction of personality.

[Who on earth is this guy? Where is he from?]

Ye Xiao frowned. He tried so hard pondering about, yet still failed to come up with a clue.

He just had this feeling.

[This guy... must be my biggest enemy!]

It was an unreasonable thought that just popped up inside his mind.

However, Ye Xiao trusted that thought or instinct.

...

On the other side, after seeing Ye Xiao, that man kept his eyes closed as he sat on the wheelchair. Not until they turned around the corner, did the man finally spoke, "Go."

The woman in cyan lifted the wheelchair immediately. The girl in white moved ahead. - Poof! - They just disappeared.

After a while, it was a place inside the city.

The two of them showed up again like ghosts in the bamboo forest surrounded by those mountains.

And then they moved slowly into the bamboo forest.

The man in white didn't say anything.

While they entered the bamboo forest, two men in cyan bowed and then disappeared at once.

The girl in white moved to the back of the wheelchair and pushed it forward slowly. The man started to talk, "Wan-Er, what do you think?"

Wan-Er frowned and said, "This Ye Xiao... is very annoying!"

She thought of how Ye Xiao stared at her from bottom to top. That was the look of a brazen prick! Even though it looked like Ye

Xiao was trying hard to restrain himself...

That was enough to make Wan-Er feel disgraced and annoyed.

This man in white was Master Bai.

He heard what Wan-Er said and stayed silent for a while. And then he said, "Tell me about this Ye Xiao."

Wan-Er thought for a while and started to speak, "Ye Xiao is 16 years and 7 months old. His father is Ye Nantian, the Northern General. Ye Xiao has been invalid since he was born. His father has suffered a lot to help him live normally like other kids... When Ye Xiao was three years old, he could merely walk. When he was five, he started to talk. He was quite a hot-headed kid.

However, when he was seven years old, Ye Nantian got some mysterious medical materials that made the kid physically recover. His mentality became above the normal kids too. He started to grow like his peers, and he was just a bit physically weak. He became very smart, and he started to have an extraordinary retentive memory."

Master Bai said blandly, "And extraordinary retentive memory. A recovered body. Just a bit weak... It must be the Creation Fruit..."

He tapped his knee with his fingers. It seemed to be his signature move. He spoke gently, "The Creation Fruit... How did Ye Nantian get it?"

He looked at the sky and murmured, "Is Ye Nantian's cultivation abandoned for real?"

He stayed silent for a while and then said, "Go on."

...

Chapter 137: Secret About Ye Nantian

Wan-Er nodded and actively spoke, "When Ye Xiao was nine years old, he showed his naughty personality for the first time. He whipped a maid in his family and made her a cripple. Since then, all the servants in his house were replaced by retired soldiers. When he was eleven, he rode on a horse on the street and stepped on someone's leg. He broke that poor man's leg and didn't feel guilty at all. Instead, he kept cursing that poor guy... When he was thirteen, he started to molest women. When he was fourteen, he seized a girl. His father couldn't stand it this time, so he beat him and sent the girl back home.

Since then, he just got worse and worse. He molested girls more and more frequently. Ye Nantian was out of home all the time and had no time to discipline Ye Xiao. So he asked his sworn brother, Song Jue, to be the steward of his house...

When Ye Xiao was sixteen, that was four months ago, he drank with some foppish young lords in the brothel. He passed out because he was too drunk... After that night, he seemed to change a lot. He didn't go out that often... Well, hmm, he had been to the House of Zuo once. Coincidentally, the House of Zuo was robbed that day... Ning Biluo started his bad luck that day... The whole thing is still not very clear now though.

And after that..."

Wan-Er kept speaking. She had actually told everything Ye Xiao had experienced no matter how small it was.

At the end, she said, "... Tonight before he met you, he was drinking in the Palace of Hua-Yang. It is said that the Prince Hua-Yang, who had always been unsatisfied with Ye Xiao, suddenly became happy with him... And then he left the palace and met you..."

The entire story about Ye Xiao was finished now.

Master Bai closed his eyes. He didn't respond right away.

After a while, he said, "How much did he drink in the palace?"

Wan-Er answered, "Three small cups, four small bowls, six big bottles... About 11 kilograms..."

Master Bai frowned and said, "Well, he is quite good at it."

Wan-Er said, "I am not sure. He has a certain cultivation capability. Normal people would have been extremely drunk with all those drinks, but it is all right for cultivators with certain cultivation capability though."

Master Bai said blandly, "Oh. Then, how much did he drink when he was drunk from the brothel?"

Wan-Er was surprised. She suddenly lost her words.

"Didn't I make it clear? If he could drink that much liquor this

time and be fine after that, why did he get drunk so easily last time? He was just drinking with some foppish young lads. How much could he drink with them?" Master Bai spoke calmly, "Why would he pass out the last time?"

Wan-Er was embarrassed and she spoke humbly, "I don't know."

"There is more, Wan-Er. How is this Ye Xiao's cultivation?" Master Bai asked.

"He must be no higher than the ninth level of the Mortal Origin Stage. He is nothing." Wan-Er spoke disdainfully.

"Heh, heh. So he is only at the ninth level of the Mortal Origin Stage? It seems normal cultivators are merely able to get this at most, including you. In fact, according to my observation, he is at least at the third level of the Earth Origin Stage." Master Bai smiled.

Wan-Er was surprised again, "How? Does he have some special tricks to hide his real cultivation level? Did he actually fool me?"

"A man who can hide his real cultivation status from you... Anyway, let's skip this part." Master Bai spoke blandly, "Why is he doing this then?"

"He is merely at the Earth Origin Stage. He is just better than an ant..." Wan-Er was disdainful, "Even though he has hidden his cultivation, so what."

Master Bai said blandly, "Wan-Er, you have become reckless these days... He is not a strong cultivator to you. But that's because you are in a rather higher stage. It means nothing to you how much he hides his cultivation level. So you don't care... If he encountered someone who is at the same range with him, he will get a huge advantage. I can be sure, even those who are one level higher than him will easily get killed by him. And he can stay unharmed after it.

So, regardless of the cultivation, this guy is very foxy and adept. He must be a fearsome man."

Master Bai spoke in a deep voice.

"Maybe." Wan-Er felt disdainful inside, yet she still went along with him.

"I am worrying now because of this man." Master Bai spoke gently, "Go check a few things for me later."

"Yes, master."

"First, who were those lads who drank with Ye Xiao when he passed out? I need their names, their backgrounds, everything... And I need the detail about what happened that night there. I need to know why Ye Xiao would pass out. Was he faking? If he did pass out, I want to know how bad it was."

"Second. Check on how Ning Biluo got to that bad situation that day. I need to know why. And why did the Boundless Master attacked the House of Zuo that day... And why did he stop after that... There must be a story behind all this. I need to know every detail of it."

"Third... Gu Jinlong of the Sunlight Sect was seen in the Chen-Xing City recently. He seems to be staying here. Why did such a man come to the mortal world? Gu Jinlong is vicious and skillful. He must be here for something rather valuable."

"According to our records, although he always comes to the Land of Han-Yang periodically, he just stays for a short time. Even after the Ling-Bao Hall became his source of profits and personal force, he never had stayed this long... You should check on it. This man has the power to rewrite the structure of the current situation here. We have to keep an eye on him."

After assigning these three jobs, he raised his head and thought about it again. He said, "Why would Ye Nantian come to this land at the first place? I remember you have some records about it."

Wan-Er spoke calmly, "Ye Nantian is the rightful heir of the Ye Clan in the Qing-Yun Realm. However, he was in love with a girl in the Jade Glow Palace... That made the Jade Glow Moon King furious, so he gave an order to wipe out the Ye Clan."

"The Jade Glow girl left her husband and her newly born child in order to save their lives and the whole clan's existence. She returned to the palace and begged for forgiveness."

"The Jade Glow Moon King eventually showed mercy. He had some conditions though. He thought Ye Nantian should be banished to the mortal world."

Hearing this, Master Bai said blandly, "I remember this. But, I remember the punishment was not permanent."

Wan-Er answered, "You are right. Many people in the palace tried to persuade the Moon King. Ye Nantian and the Jade Glow girl were truly in love. So the Moon King showed mercy and just let Ye Nantian leave the Qing-Yun Realm. He made Ye Nantian promise that until he reached the Dao Origin Stage, he would stay away from the Jade Glow girl. When he did it, he could return and be with the girl again."

Master Bai sneered.

"Ye Nantian was merely at the Dream Origin Stage. He was badly injured in the fight against the cultivators from the Jade Glow Palace and suffered a one-grade retrograde. When he arrived here, he was merely at the ninth level of the Spirit Origin Stage.

From ninth level of the Spirit Origin Stage to the Dao Origin Stage, even a super talented cultivator in a super wealthy clan would hardly be able to do this with his entire life. Now we are talking about the barren Land of Han-Yang, right? There are no resources, no assistances, nothing. I reckon Ye Nantian could never make it in his life... That was just the same with a permanent banishment though."

"When the girl returned to the palace, she was punished to stay in the bottom of the palace under the ground. She could never get out unless she could reach the Dao Origin Stage. That is the whole story about Ye Nantian..."

Wan-Er sighed, "This pair of lovers can barely meet each other again, I am afraid."

Master Bai listened quietly and asked, "What about the latter part of the Ye Clan?"

Wan-Er said, "The Ye Clan is a super clan in the Qing-Yun Realm, however, it is far weaker than the Jade Glow Palace though. There were a few men in the Ye Clan who died at the beginning. But that's all. Ye Nantian took responsibility on his own. The Ye Clan decided to sacrifice him to save the whole clan. During these years, the Ye Clan had a new heir. Ye Nantian has lost his rights now. He is merely an abandoned son. No one cares about him anymore."

"Heh, heh..." Master While sneered and said blandly, "Interesting things in the world."

Wan-Er felt pity and she said, "If you could say something for the couple, maybe they could have..."

The love story of Ye Nantian was truly something that made this girl regretful.

It always made girls weep when couples were forcibly separated.

Master Bai said blandly, "Me? Say something?"

He was lost in thoughts and shook his head. He said, "Heh, heh..."

...

Chapter 138: The Heavenly Mystery!

Wan-Er was a bit depressed as she sullenly lowered her head.

[Master is a good guy. He is smart, well-educated, but why is he... so dull about human kindness? Many years have passed, yet he actually never...]

Master Bai stayed silent for a while and said, “Su Dingguo is about to leave. Look at his army. He is indeed an excellent general.”

Wan-Er said, “The army is in great prosperity. He is indeed an outstanding War God. The king of the Kingdom of Chen is a wise king. Kingdom of Chen is at the summit of its power. I think it is going to be much more difficult than last time if you want to overturn it again.”

Master Bai thought for a while and spoke gently, “All my opponents before were in the summit of their power...”

Wan-Er sighed and spoke in a low voice, “If we didn’t get involved, Su Dingguo will surely win the battle as easy as crushing dry weeds and smashing rotten wood.”

Master Bai smiled coldly and spoke blandly, “Is it all well arranged?”

“All done. Please don’t worry.” Wan-Er answered gently.

Master Bai nodded and stayed quiet.

“That guy, Red in the Sky... Is he still missing?” He frowned and spoke blandly, “He shouldn’t have just died like this in the Land of Han-Yang with his outstanding cultivation capability...”

Wan-Er nodded, “I have a feeling that he is purposely hiding from us. Maybe there is something wrong that he is forced to stay away from our sights. I am checking on it though.”

“If he is here... Things will be much easier.” Master Bai’s eyes flashed with blood color and he said blandly, “I have this feeling that I am being betrayed...”

Wan-Er was shocked.

She knew that her master never felt wrong.

So the guy, Red in the Sky, had betrayed them?

“Hmm. Tell me everything about Ye Xiao.” Master Bai said blandly, “I want to hear it. I don’t want to miss anything.”

“Ye Xiao?” Wan-Er was surprised.

[I have just finished telling everything about Ye Xiao. Why does he still want to hear it again? Besides the war in the south, things

about the Red in the Sky were all big issues. Why is he so focused on Ye Xiao?

Is Ye Xiao more important than the war or Red in the Sky to him?]

“Oh. I mean Ye Xiao the Xiao Monarch.”

Master Bai spoke gently while his fingers kept flicking on his leg.

Wan-Er took a tumble immediately and said, “Yes.” She felt that her master was talking about the Ye Xiao in the capital though.

Otherwise, he wouldn’t suddenly want to hear the story about the Xiao Monarch.

She knew her feeling was right.

The foppish young lad had an important place in her master’s heart.

But why?

Wan-Er looked at Master Bai with confusion.

Master Bai clapped his knee and said with concern, “I always feel... that this foppish lad Ye Xiao is weird... That Xiao Monarch

died in a strange situation. In fact, I reckon there may be connections between these two ‘Ye Xiao’. Could they be...”

Wan-Er said, “I am not judging your opinion, but the Xiao Monarch was hunted by the three factions. Under that circumstance, his soul could never have a chance to get away. You have thought about this endless times. I don’t think we need to do it again...”

Master Bai spoke gently, “Heh, heh. I am doing it again. I just can’t be sure about it, especially after meeting with this Ye Xiao...”

Suddenly, a cyan light flashed in his eyes. He spoke softly, “The Ye Xiao in the General’s House is cultivating martial arts with cold attribute... That is apparently rather different from the Xiao Monarch. If he was the Xiao Monarch, he would have that ‘thing’, and he should have a warm breath.”

Wan-Er nodded.

In fact, she was confused. [Master is always decisive. Why does he kept sticking on this subject? This Ye Xiao is a completely different person from the Xiao Monarch. There are countless people who coincidently have the same names...

It is not a wise thing to care so much about it though.]

“It has taken nine times of reformation, nine times of recast, nine times of chaotic storms, nine times of escaping from death, nine

billion men's soul as oblation for the Heavenly Mystery to come to the world... Yet it just disappeared right at the moment it came to the world..."

Master Bai frowned. His face turned pale and he murmured, "I have spent so much on this. Yet look what I get. How can I accept this?"

Wan-Er got serious too.

They looked at each other and both saw the regret in their eyes. However, the only thing Master Bai felt was regret, while Wan-Er was obviously upset.

The story had been passed down from generation to generation for hundreds of thousands years. It was said that there was a profound mystery outside the universe.

That was a thing that nobody had ever seen.

As time passed by, it became a wonderful myth.

It was called the "Heavenly Mystery".

Nobody knew what it was, how it looked, or where it stayed.

Yet everyone knew that who ever seized it would become the Dominator of the Firmament.

That's an attractive status.

However, it had merely been a myth. Nobody had even heard about its appearance.

Master Bai coincidentally got a relict slice and entered a mysterious space. That was where he learned his massively powerful capabilities.

He got to know some truth about the Heavenly Mystery there.

And he got to know how he could bring it down to the world.

Since then, he had kept trying everything he could for this issue. He got down to this mortal world from the higher realm. He got through so many troubles and sufferings. He produced chaotic storms. He overturned kingdoms and sacrificed the lives of everything and everybody above this land. He kept breaking the laws of the nature and tried to bring that thing down.

Dozens of years ago, the efforts he had made during thousands of years finally proved effective. At that day, the stars in the sky were trembling, and time was in a mess. The world was in chaotic storms, and bloods were splashing towards the sky. At that moment, that thing befell.

Yet right at the moment when it befell, it just disappeared leaving no traces behind.

Master Bai didn't get to know what the Heavenly Mystery was and how it looked. He could only be sure that he had successfully brought it down to the world. Yet he knew nothing about where it was after that.

This time, he wanted to sacrifice the kingdom and the lives of countless men to try to bring it out once again.

In fact, he was not sure whether it would succeed or not this time though. He just had no idea what was the right way, so he had to do whatever possibility exist. He would be happy if it worked, and if he would be able to discover where it stayed.

At the same time, he was extremely worried that somebody had seized it earlier.

“How many years of suffering and sacrifice... might have actually become helping other people.” Master Bai's eyes looked casual. He stared at the bamboo forest and murmured.

Suddenly, his eyes were full of viciousness.

[I will never let that happen!]

“Here are all the records about the Xiao Monarch.” Wan-Er said.

“Read. Hmm. Wait.” Master Bai was actually hesitating. He

stayed silent for a while and then said, “Wan-Er. Wait... Well... Do you think it is possible that this Ye Xiao was faking the way he looked at you with dirty intentions?”

Wan-Er was stunned.

[Why do you want me to be so concerned about this foppish fool? I am really so speechless about this. What you suggested was surely impossible.

How... How do I answer this?]

Master Bai was lost in thoughts. He spoke gently, “When a guy sees a girl. He will just have a few reactions. First, he can’t wait to keep looking at the girl. That’s reasonable affection. Second, he may get lost in it. He will look back to the girl even if he has walked out a long distance away. He is probably thinking about something dirty... Third, he looks at the girl like he wants to rip off the girl’s clothes immediately. He has the eyes of wolves.

That’s why people called this kind of men, [Se Lang](#).”

Hearing this, Wan-Er had already blushed. She affectedly said, “Master~”

Master Bai smiled and said, “I am not done yet. There is a fourth kind. It is the super Se Lang. Well... How can I describe that eyes properly... Well, in his eyes, he was already on top of the girl’s body and fxxking her...”

“There is one more though. He will act like he is noble when he sees a beauty. He will walk pass that girl with an indifferent face, but in fact, he is trying to make the girl look at him. If the girl didn’t see him, he will glance at the girl secretly. This kind are mostly scholars. They obviously want ‘it’, yet they don’t dare to show their desires...”

Master Bai looked at Wan-Er smilingly, “Which one do you think Ye Xiao was to you?”

Wan-Er was flustered, yet she knew it was an important question. She had to think carefully before she answered it, so she took a long while to think. And then she said, “Ye Xiao must be that kind... which cared a little about you, but... but still...”

She gritted her teeth and said, “Still couldn’t wait to rip my clothes off... It was full of carnality.”

Se Lang (色狼), colored wolf, means perverts who are crazy about sexually assaulting women.

Chapter 139: The Secret of the Chaotic Storm

Master Bai seemed to be stunned. He raised his head slowly and looked at Wan-Er seriously. He said, "Really? You know we can't joke about this problem!"

Wan-Er recalled the feeling again. She felt like Ye Xiao's filthy eyes were right in front of her again. After a while, she said affirmatively, "I am sure! Master, I suddenly felt like my body was naked at that moment. I had to operate my martial art to get rid of that feeling. That was a disgusting feeling that made me feel really uncomfortable."

Master Bai answered with disappointment, "Oh."

He was sure the Xiao Monarch would never show that kind of look.

In fact, since he got to know that the young lord in the House of Ye was named "Ye Xiao", he couldn't help but come up with a conjecture.

It came from nowhere. It was just a feeling, an instinct.

He just kept the conjecture to himself and tried his best to prove it!

He felt that this Ye Xiao in the Chen-Xing City was the reincarnation of the Xiao Monarch!

However, this Ye Xiao had lived for sixteen years, while the Xiao Monarch of the Qing-Yun Realm had just fallen four months earlier.

It didn't make sense on the time!

Yet Master Bai didn't give up his conjecture!

In fact, Master Bai's concern to Ye Xiao was the same with Ye Xiao to him. They were both because of the unreasonable instincts!

And about the Heavenly Mystery...

[Only when Yin and Yang reverse can the true power of the Heavenly Mystery be activated.

How do Yin and Yang reverse? Is it simply the exchange of Yin and Yang? The exchange of ice and fire? Reversion of the sky and earth? The recycling of cold and heat?]

Nobody really knew the answer.

Those were all the reversion of Yin and Yang at some points. They were just in different forms!

[The reversion of life and death!] Master Bai thought.

"Well... Should I go on with the records of the Xiao Monarch?" Wan-Er asked.

"Read it!" Master Bai took in a deep breath. His eyes were full of confidence again!

[Maybe... he was just trying to get away from my eyes?]

"The Xiao Monarch was named Ye Xiao. He started his cultivation with the Raging Yang Art, which is one kind of Pure Yang Martial Arts. He had to keep himself a virgin all his life. If he lost his virginity, he would lose his cultivation..."

Wan-Er told the story, and Master Bai closed his eyes again.

"The Xiao Monarch's master was merely at the Dream Origin Stage. When he tried to snatch the Raging Yang Art, he got himself seriously injured. He eventually got it though. After that, he passed the martial art to a little beggar, Ye Xiao. After a few months, he passed away because of the unhealed wound.

That means the Xiao Monarch never had anyone to teach him with his cultivation. He had been struggling in his life. He had been a waiter, a thief, a robber... He had done all bad things. Yet he had become a cultivator of the Spirit Origin Stage from an ordinary person before he reached the age of 25. He was quite talented...

After he reached the Spirit Origin Stage, he started to travel around in the Qing-Yun Realm. During the following decades, he was boosted to the Dream Origin Stage. After he reached the Dream Origin Stage, he started to tyrannize around. To put it simply, he began the legend of the Xiao Monarch...

When he was just in the Dream Origin Stage, he became the opponent of the Sky Wolf Group. It lasted ten years. He was merely in the Dream Origin Stage, yet he actually destroyed the Sky Wolf Group! Destroying the Sky Wolf Group was surely nothing in our sights, yet for a man in the Dream Origin Stage, it was like a miracle!

During that ten years, Ye Xiao had grown much stronger. He reached the ninth level of the Dream Origin Stage." Wan-Er continued gently, "As far as I know, in the recent 1000 years, among all the self-governed cultivators, he had the fastest rate of cultivation!"

Master Bai nodded and agreed.

It was remarkable that the Xiao Monarch improved so fast. Even those men who were from the super clans and super sects holding a great amount of resources couldn't catch up with him!

"During the next period of time, the Xiao Monarch became a trouble to all the forces in the Qing-Yun Realm. He was snatching the cultivation resources left and right, and he would come and go without leaving any traces. All those forces were greatly enraged,

but they couldn't do anything about it. The battle that gained the Xiao Monarch enormous fame during this period was when the Heavenly Dream Historic Site was first discovered. All the superior cultivators went to fight for the treasures there. It was a clash between cultivators of the Dao Origin Stage. However, the Xiao Monarch, who was still in the Dream Origin Stage that time, eventually seized the greatest profit."

"The next three years, he kept being hunted by different forces. When he showed up in public again, he was already a cultivator at the Dao Origin Stage!

... When he was at the seventh level of the Dao Origin Stage, he gained the title, 'Xiao Monarch'. He was acknowledged as an 'iron board' in the Qing-Yun Realm!

In fact, the rising of the Xiao Monarch was truly a path of miracle and a path of adversity. He was always risking his life."

Wan-Er sighed, "He was indeed a desperado! He was an outlaw that did whatever he wished!"

"Well it wasn't just a path of miracle though!" Master Bai opened his eyes and said, "It should be a path of certainty! It is rather important for a cultivator to concentrate... However, one's potential is always activated at the moment when he is facing death... That is the most reliable and valuable way of progress."

"Two men who are both at the ninth level of the Dao Origin Stage stand together. The one who has been through countless of life-

and-death battles could easily slaughter the other one who was just raised by the endless resources in a great sect!

That will simply be a complete and utter massacre!

That is why the life-and-death experience is so important!

It should be those men, whom the Xiao Monarch battled those years, that had actually helped him find his path of certainty!"

Master Bai kept his eyes half-closed. He sighed and said, "Check this. To which of these Saint Domains had the Xiao Monarch been?"

Wan-Er answered, "Yes. Please name them."

"The Death Domain. The Vessel Domain. The Evil Domain. The Fallen Domain." Master Bai listed.

[When I activated the extreme power of the sky and finally drew down the Heavenly Mystery, it was located in one of these four Saint Domains! It was certain!

Yet I have searched these four Saint Domains and found nothing!

That is so weird!]

"170 years ago, the Xiao Monarch had entered the Vessel Domain. And then he was chased, so he got into the Fallen Domain. After that, he was injured and entered the Death Domain. And then he found the Archean Spiritual Milk in the Evil Domain. He used the Milk to recover. The Milk had an enormous benefit to his cultivation... When he was back from the Saint Domains, he started his revenge. He kept chasing those who had chased him in the Qing-Yun Realm. He didn't stop until he killed them all... Traveling around the four Saint Domains, it took him... two years!"

When Wan-Er was reading the story about Ye Xiao, she felt speechless.

She had an obvious feeling all the time.

[What kind of monster is this? He was always fighting. There is nowhere he didn't fight in. He was simply a mad fighter... with splendid good luck.]

Master Bai was also speechless.

There were only four discovered domains bordering on the Qing-Yun Realm. Yet Ye Xiao was able to travel around them all in two years. That truly meant something...

[That... brings headache!]

He looked down at his legs and a vicious aura was emanated from

his body as a cold glint flashed in his eyes. He murmured, "Did the Xiao Monarch... really die?"

Wan-Er looked at his legs and didn't know how to respond.

[The death of the Xiao Monarch is true, yet master is still thinking about this.]

Wan-Er knew what her master was thinking.

She knew how much he had sacrifice for the Heavenly Mystery!

It was all about tears and blood...

If all his efforts turned out to be helping others, even if her master could bear it, she would kill herself because of grievance.

Nine times of reformation, nine times of recast, nine times of chaotic storms, nine times of escaping from death, nine billion men's soul as oblation!

It was just a normal parallel phrases.

Yet Wan-Er knew how horrific it was about.

She and Xiu-Er began to follow Master Bai after the sixth time, yet it was already more than enough for them to get to know it.

It took too much time to complete the nine times of reformation. Every time when they made a kingdom overturned, it was like a curse they placed on themselves!

Every time when billions of lives were taken... the sin they made had become a debt to them!

They killed people and overturned a kingdom against the heaven's will!

People died! It was against the rule of the heavens.

It was going to bring retribution for sure!

Each time when he overturned a kingdom, he would suffer from the heaven's retribution; every time when he took billions lives, he would suffer yet another kind of heaven's retribution.

Those retributions had made Master Bai suffer a lot.

He had his way to deal with it though. Yet he still needed to do it again after so much suffering... and it was always tougher than last time!

...

Chapter 140: The Day When He Dominated Should Be the Day of His Wedding

He couldn't keep his strength after those heaven's retribution. Otherwise it would have been too easy. It was the rule of the heavens. Nobody could be an exception.

For the first heaven's retribution, he had become disabled every time it began. However, as he kept improving his cultivation level, he steadily recovered.

Yet for the last time, things had suddenly become horrible to him.

When he started over again, he got blind and his legs and arms were all disabled. He had been struggling for more than 30 years after that. Finally, his arms recovered, as well as his eyes.

His legs, however, stayed disabled. He was like a natural-born cripple!

Because of that, he lost the ability to utilize the might of his cultivation level that could shock the whole world!

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er followed Master Bai into the cruel cycle. Every time when the reformation began, it meant that they had to start over again.

That didn't annoy them though. Although they would lose their cultivation levels, they could become young and pretty again. Every time, it began at a point in their life where their appearance was at its most beautiful state... That was something much enjoyable for women, no matter how much they had to suffer from it...

Besides, they were not the main characters in this cycle and the heaven's retribution, so they recovered rather quickly. Because they started their cultivation over and over again, they had a complete grasp on the knowledge and concepts of their martial arts. It made them firmly rooted.

In fact, it didn't seem to have any bad influence for them.

Yet for Master Bai, every second was like a painful year that he spent suffering from the heaven's retribution!

Nine times!

Nine times in total!

He had been tortured over and over again. The only thing that kept supporting him was the Heavenly Mystery!

Yet when he was so close to success, the accident happened. The Heavenly Mystery had come, yet he missed it.

That was why the House of the Chaotic Storm planned this

operation...

The House of the Chaotic Storms should be long gone. Yet because of this accident, it appeared again. It was about to rouse a disaster again. It was going to bring the disaster to life, to the world, to everybody again!

And all this was for merely one person, one thing, one wish!

"Master..." Wan-Er looked at Master Bai with soft eyes, "You... suffered too much."

Master Bai was calm. He was lost in thought and murmured, "170 years ago, the Xiao Monarch entered each of the four Saint Domains... The Heavenly Mystery befell 168 years ago... When the Xiao Monarch was traveling the four domains, I had searched the domains. There was no trace of the Heavenly Mystery..."

That isn't right. There is a two years cap..."

He murmured, "Yet I was suffering the most powerful heaven's retribution 170 years ago. My Jing and Mai were all broken at that time. Maybe I missed something back there."

He rubbed his forehead with distress.

Wan-Er asked softly, "Master, do you mind if I ask what the Heavenly Mystery looks like?"

Master Bai frowned and looked at Wan-Er's pretty face.

Wan-Er was frightened, so she lowered her head, "I just... I just want to..."

Master Bai smiled blandly. He rubbed her hair gently and said, "Of course I know. Wan-Er will never betray me... You just want to help me more and bring me more chances."

He sighed and spoke, "Wan-Er... You know what. In fact, I only know that it is something in a regular size. Yet I don't know how it exactly looks like..."

I have checked everything about the Heavenly Mystery in the Supreme Cyan Cloud. I have even checked everything in the Supreme Sky Palace. I got nothing."

He spoke in a deep voice, "The only recordation is in a historic myth. The man who created this universe left his words about it."

He closed his eyes and spoke gently, "... It takes all the glory of creating and all power of the universe to get through the supreme path for the ultimate treasure. Whoever is lucky to have it will become the dominator of the firmament, the only king in the universe! That is... the peerless lord in the world and foremost spirit in chaos!"

Wan-Er opened her mouth, and then she murmured, "The

dominator of the firmament... The only king in the universe... That is a big tone..."

"No! You are wrong!" Master Bai said, "It is not!"

He smiled bitterly and said, "If I got it and used it properly... I could really reach beyond the Supreme Cyan Cloud and become... the dominator of the firmament! And the Supreme Cyan Cloud would become only a drop in the ocean."

His voice became distressful.

It seemed he was not resigned to what had happened to him. The anger bursted in his heart and rushed out to his head.

[Why? I have sacrificed so much! Yet when it appeared in the world, the Heavenly Mystery was actually gone? I have suffered for nearly ten thousand years and it was all wasted?

Did I just stupidly contribute to someone else's success?!

I can't stand it! I don't fxxking want this!]

These words had been haunting Master Bai for a long time.

He wanted to yell at the sky loudly many times, yet he could only close his mouth and suppress his emotions deep into his heart.

His face turned red because of the emotions he couldn't let out.

It took him only an instant to fully suppress the raging emotion back to the bottom of his heart. He became quiet and calm again.

Yet his hair became dishevelled. There were a few hairs floating beside his face. Under the shadows of the bamboos, the floating hair had added some sort of enchantment to his handsome face.

Wan-Er looked at Master Bai's side face sentimentally. She was suddenly stunned.

Master Bai turned his head, looking at the dark bamboo forest and said gently, "How many years have passed... Wan-Er, you and Xiu-Er have followed me through so many heaven's retributions and vital dangers... Do you regret it?"

Wan-Er answered sentimentally, "Me and Xiu-Er, we never regret it. As long as we can stay beside you, my master, it is already god's blessing. Even if we need to suffer more, we will enjoy the time with you. I am enjoying. I believe Xiu-Er is too."

Master Bai sighed and said, "I never have thought that... the phoenix egg and the sparrow egg I brought out when I left my family alone would become my most reliable supports in my life... My most thoughtful ones."

Wan-Er lowered her head bashfully and her eyes were full of infatuation. She murmured, "You made up my life."

"Wan Of The Clouds, Xiu Of The Heavens..." Master Bai spoke gently, "Wan-Er... if I can succeed this time... When I get the Heavenly Mystery and become the dominator... I wonder if you and Xiu-Er are willing to marry me together?"

Wan-Er's body was shaking. Her pretty eyes were full of tears all of a sudden.

She looked at Master Bai's face as though all that happened was only a dream. She held her face and cried!

That was something... they had been waiting for too long!

She had never thought that she could become Master Bai's wife one day. She had just wished to stay with him, no matter who he was going to marry in the future...

She wanted to stay with him, even if she couldn't have a rightful title. It would be the happiest thing in her life to stay with him.

That was simply all she wanted!

Yet what Master Bai said was like a thunder striking into her heart!

It aroused the eagerness that was hidden deep inside her heart that she never dared to speak!

She was afraid that if she showed that secret eagerness for it, she would have lost everything she could shared with him!

But as of this moment, it actually... turned out that what she wanted so badly was really going to happen!

"Master... Oh, master..." Wan-Er couldn't stop herself and fell into her master's chest. She held him tight and murmured, "I am so happy... Hearing what you just said, I am already satisfied with what I have in this life. I am willing to die for it..."

Her warm tears had soaked Master Bai's clothes within seconds.

"But, me and Xiu-Er... We are not qualified..." Wan-Er choked with sobs, "You are better marrying a princess of the Sky Palace... How could Xiu-Er and I shamelessly expect to marry you..."

Master Bai held her soft body slowly and said clearly, "Even a princess of the Sky Palace can't be a match to my Wan-Er and Xiu-Er... You are the ones who have been with me all along. When I get the Heavenly Mystery and become the dominator of the firmament, I will marry you!

This is the only promise I want to make to you... during the 7000 years since the day you two transformed into humans!"

His eyes were full of gentleness and he said, "Wan-Er, you know... I am lonely all these years."

"I know. I know!" Wan-Er was weeping. She was so surprised and happy that her heart was about to explode. She was holding Master Bai tightly. She nodded. She breathed out a wonderful scent through her red lips and it made Master Bai feel heated. The next moment, she desperately kissed Master Bai on his mouth with her pretty soft lips.

It took them so long.

Master Bai rubbed Wan-Er's smooth hair and spoke deeply, "When my legs recovered and my cultivation capability returned a bit... Wan-Er, you and Xiu-Er should come and sleep with me. The ardor of people. The wonderful sensory pleasures. We are going to experience them after all."

...

Chapter 141: Departure!

Wan-Er's face was like a piece of red handkerchief. She gritted her teeth and nodded bashfully and happily.

[Master has changed a lot indeed.] Wan-Er thought gleefully in mind.

"The sky is boundless. It seems close, yet in fact, it is so out of reach. Now I see through things. If I can't get the Heavenly Mystery, does that mean we three have to be like this forever?" Master Bai spoke gently, "If we stay the same... till the end of our lives and I regret then, I must have already wasted all the best time in our lives, haven't I?"

He sighed, "I know that the whole world is jealous because I have you two with me. It surely is a good thing to seize more, yet if I get too deep into it, that may make me lose more... Hehe..."

Wan-Er gritted her lips and smiled bashfully.

Master Bai said, "Tonight when that Ye Xiao looked at you like he was going to swallow you. I felt... Hahahaha..."

When he spoke about this, he laughed. Wan-Er pinched his waist gently.

"Do you still think that this Ye Xiao is the Xiao Monarch?" Wan-Er asked.

"I have suspicions. Of course." Master Bai answered frankly, "However, there are too many things I can't explain though. So let's get over for the mean time..."

"Things you can't explain?" Wan-Er asked confusedly.

"Yes. First, the Xiao Monarch had been to the four Saint Domains 170 year ago. If he acquired the Heavenly Mystery back then, he should have gained something out of it during over a hundred years... then he wouldn't have died in his last battle! If he had 170 years to study it, even though all the superior cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm fought him together, he would have defeated them all easily. Yet now he had been slaughtered both physically and spiritually!"

"Second... If he didn't get the Heavenly Mystery, then he might have been reborn as this Ye Xiao. The martial art he cultivates should be something with moderate attribute or fire attribute. It can never be some cold attribute after all..."

"Third... The Xiao Monarch was a heroic figure after all. He wouldn't do things like snatching girls or assaulting women. If he would do that, he would never have such an outstanding vigor. And he wouldn't have started the fight against the three factions in the Qing-Yun Realm then..."

He stopped for a while and said, "However, I need to hold my suspicions on it. Wan-Er, what I told you to do, you have to do it carefully. Don't miss any details. Make it perfectly done..."

"Maybe Ye Xiao is not the Xiao Monarch, yet he is a talented cultivator for sure... We can't underestimate such a person. Never look down upon the young generation."

He said.

Wan-Er nodded.

At the moment, she was all lost in pleasures. She wouldn't have any problem against whatever he said.

Whatever he said must be right.

"Master, there is one thing we can do that could prove the truth most efficiently." Wan-Er said.

"Oh? What is it?" Master Bai smiled. He seemed to know what she was going to say though.

"Let me kill this Ye Xiao myself. Kill him!" Wan-Er said, "Then, the truth will naturally be revealed. No matter what, things will end. Even if this Ye Xiao is the Xiao Monarch, he is so weak at the moment. No matter how powerful he was, he will be a dead man after that!"

"What a shame. We can't do that." Master Bai smiled, "If... the Heavenly Mystery is well controlled by him, when he dies, it will

return to the Outer Nine Sky. We will have to start the unforgettable experience again. Even if you are okay with it, I would never go through those years again!"

"So, Ye Xiao stays alive. At least for now." Master Bai sighed, "In fact, I kind of wish he is the Xiao Monarch. Even if the Heavenly Mystery is in his hands, that is all right... You said it yourself, he is weak at the moment. We can do whatever we want on him... We can control him along with the Heavenly Mystery in our hand. That will save us a lot of time and effort!"

Wan-Er was stunned.

She finally realized how difficult things were.

They were not sure whether Ye Xiao was the Xiao Monarch or not. Even if they confirmed that he was, how could they possibly snatch the Heavenly Mystery without killing him?

Apparently, Master Bai didn't want to talk about this anymore.

They ended this conversation.

The wheelchair moved towards the house slowly.

"Master, I will begin tomorrow. I will get on the things you told me to do, and after that, I will go to the South Sky... This time, Xiu-Er and I will both be away from your side. Please take care."

"I know. Don't worry. Although I am unable to wield the might of my cultivation capability, as long as I still don't want to die, even people from the Qing-Yun Realm would never have the chance to kill me."

"Hmm. Take good care of yourself. Don't make us worried. Please."

"You are being verbose now. I will be very careful. Come back soon."

"Yes."

Wan-Er made the bed for Master Bai and helped him sleep. And then she returned to her room. She moved trippingly. Her face was full of happiness. In her eyes, there was hope for a bright future.

She seemed to see the day when she would stay with her master her whole life... till the end of the world.

"To the gods I pray... May my master accomplish his dream soon... Thanks to the gods... who gave me the chance to be with him.

If I can be with him my entire life, I am willing to give up all the lives to come after this life. I pray only for my present life."

She was praying sincerely on her knees with her slim body. At last she kowtowed...

Her hairs were all on the floor.

"Please, gods!"

...

The bright moonlight splashed over the thousands of miles long border land. The bamboo forest was howling with the sound of wind. The shadows roved on the floor. It was a silent night.

It was in Master Bai's room.

This man, who had been controlling the fate of the Land of Han-Yang for centuries, Master Bai, was now closing his eyes, frowning. His handsome face was full of worry.

After a while, he asked gently, "Ye Xiao? Ye Xiao? Ye Xiao? ... What on earth... is he? Where exactly... is...?"

...

It was the next morning.

Ye Xiao got down from the watchtower early and then he rode

out of town quickly. This time, Song Jue was going with him. They were all riding the fast horses.

It was the day Prince Hua-Yang's army would depart for the battle!

No matter how busy they were, they had to go see them off.

It was early in the morning. The sky was just lit up. The morning breeze was soft. The sky was clear without a single piece of cloud.

Outside the city, the war clarion sounded sad and bleak continually.

An aura of slaughter rushed from the clarions up to the sky.

Ye Xiao and Song Jue was rushing while riding on their respective horses. The sounds of the galloping horses broke the silence of the city.

Today, the gate of the city opened earlier. There were barely any people on the street this moment.

Ye Xiao and Song Jue didn't slow down at all. They kept rushing out of the city.

It was outside the gate of the city!

It was full of people!

The flags were as if covering the whole sky.

The wind became stronger and stronger like it was on purpose. It blew up the flags and made them look like a huge line in the air.

Five troops stood on the east, west, south, north and the middle. There were so many soldiers, but it was all silent!

When the first stream of sunlight splashed down on the land, everybody felt like their eyes were burned.

The 300 thousand soldiers were holding their weapons. Every weapon seemed to be sharp and bright. They were firmly held in their hands. The edges and points of their weapons reflected the sunlight. It made people feel like all the weapons were right on people's necks.

It felt kind of cold.

It was an indescribably marvelous scene that made people's blood boil.

Hundreds of thousands citizens around the troops were not here to watch the scene though. They were here to see their men off to the battle. There were old parents with silver hairs. There were young women who just got married in their best ages. There were little children who stretched their necks trying to find their

fathers.

They were all looking at the face they were most familiar with. However, it was nearly impossible for them to find out the one they love among the hundreds of thousands soldiers! Yet they were still looking...

At the moment, Ye Xiao and Song Jue had arrived at the side of the troops.

Ye Xiao looked at the troops. He understood most of the situation.

Prince Hua-Yang didn't want to hold any ceremony at all!

All these things were already done the last night.

It was merely for the departure to the battle now!

While a loud and desolate clarion sounded, the silence was suddenly broken.

After that, tens of thousands of clarions sounded together!

Lines after lines of weapons were tending forward slightly.

The lights that were reflected by the weapons flashed!

The next moment, Prince Hua-Yang's voice came out loudly.

"My beloved people! Today, I am leading your sons to battle!"

"I can't assure you that all of them will return alive!"

"But I can assure you that alive or dead, we have no regrets to our kingdom!"

"We feel no qualms to the country, to our home!"

"I can't guarantee our lives! Yet I can guarantee that I, Su Dingguo, will be fighting in the front line all along! When we retreat, I will stay until my men are all gone!"

"I can't guarantee all my men will get promoted and turn rich! Yet I can guarantee you your honors and glories!"

"I can't guarantee the victory of this battle! Yet I can guarantee you that after this fight, no matter if we win or lose, our enemies won't dare to challenge us again!"

"Please, pray for us!"

"For the victory!"

Chapter 142: Here Comes The Trouble!

Prince Hua-Yang shouted loudly and gave the order, "Drums! Clarions!"

The world-shocking drum sounds immediately arose from all directions.

- Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! -

"We need no big ceremony to begin with our warpath! What we need is a warm and great ceremony for our return with victory! The more luxurious the better! Please! Wait for our victorious return!"

Prince Hua-Yang's voice resounded clearly amidst the loud drums!

Everyone could hear it, citizens or soldiers!

"OHHH!!!"

Hundreds of thousands of men shouted at the same time.

"All of you, soldiers! Turn around and salute to your homeland!" Prince Hua-Yang sounded like his throat was about to be ripped apart.

The troops moved simultaneously. They turned around together and looked at the walls of the Chen-Xing City. Their eyes were full of dignity, solemnness and loyalty.

They slightly raised the weapons in their hands and dropped them down heavily!

- Boom! -

The whole land seemed to be shocked because of it!

"Farewell! Beloved people in our homeland!"

- Boom! -

"Farewell! Beloved families!"

- Boom! -

"Farewell! Our beloved king!"

On the wall, the king wearing his yellow robe was standing on the most obvious spot. He was facing the wind and kept his hands on his back. He looked at the hundreds of thousands warriors outside the city!

It was where the king stood since the ancient times when he was

watching his men preparing to go for the battle!

- Boom! -

The weapons were risen and then dropped down heavily.

And then all the soldiers cupped their fist on their chest and saluted with their eyes.

The king himself made his own gesture this time. He raised his hands like he was holding the whole world!

And then he spoke in a regular tone.

A general wearing golden armor shouted loudly after him, "Here's the king's speaking! 'I announce by the name of the sky that we will win this battle! It is what we do to protect our home as warriors! The kingdom shall never fall! The Kingdom of Chen will forever stand! My warriors are departing for battle! I am here with you all! When you return with the glory, I will go 100 miles away from the city to greet your victory!'"

"The King! The King! The King!"

The troops shouted at the same time. The sound was shocking the whole world.

The king waved his hand.

"Go!" Prince Hua-Yang shouted loudly.

The next moment, the land was shaking!

A big flag was leading the way rushing in front of the army. The horse under the flag was running quickly. The flag was flying. The vanguard started to march!

- Boooom! -

The horses were running fast. The infantry ran after them. A storm of dust were aroused behind them.

None of these men looked back.

In the army, there were soldiers dropping tears. Yet they didn't wipe it. They just followed the army and moved forward step by step! The tears were dropping down on their faces.

"Victory!"

All the citizens and the soldiers shouted at the same time as if their minds were one!

At the beginning, it was in a mess, but after a while, they shouted synchronously!

"Return!"

"Victory!"

"Return!"

"Victory!"

The army was like an iron river running to the south.

Prince Hua-Yang turned his head around and looked at the capital sentimentally. He suddenly shouted and the horse under him stood up high like a man. His spear was pointing to the sky!

"I am leaving!"

The horse got back down and became like a black whirlwind rushing ahead!

While Prince Hua-Yang moved, all the soldiers followed up. - Boom...- The sound of the army was shaking the entire firmament!

On the wall, the king watched the army leaving. Every one of the soldiers left without even looking back. He showed a satisfied smile on his face.

His eyes turned red a little.

He spoke gently, "What a great scene! This is indeed my kingdom!"

...

When it was late in the morning, the place where the five troops were camping earlier was now empty.

Not even a piece of paper was left on the ground.

Everything was tidy and clean.

Wherever the temporary toilets were built on was now filled up. It was flat like the floor now.

It was no longer the usual morning, the 300 thousand men had all left from this place. Everything happened with a marvelous efficiency. It was such a brilliant scene!

There were many citizens who were still standing there.

They kept watching where the army was heading. They just stood there watching for a long time. The army disappeared in their sight long ago, yet they were still full of hopes and concerns.

The fight of this army hadn't started yet. The soldiers were just on their way.

Yet people's concerns and worries for their men had already started!

They would never stop until their men returned from the battle!

Ye Xiao was on the horse. He looked at the empty place. Deep in his heart, there was some blood boiling.

[Finally, they are off for the battle.

I wish them... a victorious return!]

Not far away from him, there came a carriage. Su Yeyue's pretty face showed up inside it. Her eyes were red and there were still signs of tears.

"Xiao-Xiao." She twisted her mouth.

When she saw Ye Xiao, the tears that had stopped falling had once again flowed down her cheeks. She was like a child who was wronged. She was acting tough and trying not to cry, yet when she saw someone close to her, she couldn't hold her tears anymore.

"It's all right. It's all right." Ye Xiao said gently, "It is going to be

fine! Prince Hua-Yang will definitely return with victory!"

"Hmm!" Su Yeyue nodded heavily.

At this moment, she was no more high-hearted like she tried to be; she was weak. She said softly, "My mother didn't come with me. Father didn't allow her to. In fact, I came out secretly. I can't let my father see me..."

Ye Xiao could only sigh.

Prince Hua-Yang could only show his toughness at the moment. If his wife was here, there must be something romantic between them. This tough man was afraid to see his wife at the moment. He was afraid he would forget himself because of being sad.

He was worrying about affecting his men's courage... In fact, he was unable to face the sad face of his beloved wife.

While time passed by, the crowd was moving back to the city.

Everyone was walking with heavy steps like it showed their emotions about this farewell.

Some of the women couldn't help looking back again and again after they left...

To them, it seemed their men would surprisingly return on the

fast horses and show up in front of them... However, their imaginations ended up with silent tears...

Ye Xiao and Su Yeyue were standing at the gate for a long time. They didn't want to just leave.

After a while, the king on the wall sighed and murmured, "Ding-Guo, I wish you the best of luck. Please don't forget my words."

He turned around and headed back to the royal palace.

About one hour later, the crowd was finally dispersed.

The world seemed to return to silence. There was the sad aura of separation spreading in the air after all.

Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang were staying too. They were standing with their families looking at Ye Xiao and Su Yeyue. They didn't go to them immediately. [They are a couple. Su Yeyue has just seen her father off to the battle. She must be sad at the moment. Lord Ye must be comforting her right now. We should better stay away temporarily for now and go talk to them later.]

Su Yeyue was standing beside Ye Xiao's horse. She was stretching her neck looking to the south.

Yet her father and the whole army were long gone.

"Father, you have always been invincible. It will not be an exception this time. You will return with victory!"

She murmured. Fists were made on her clenched small hands. She was encouraging her father secretly, and at the same time, comforting herself.

It was about noon. She still didn't want to leave. Ye Xiao walked over her and was about to comfort her. Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang came over to him at the same time...

At the moment, there suddenly came a messy sound of horse steps.

Outside the gate, there was a group of people on horses rushing out. They were all young men in luxurious clothes. They all had flippant faces. They were on their horses acting like they were some heroes. They talked and laughed loudly, flapping on the horse heavily. They were extremely frivolously and insolent.

After the great army left, there suddenly appeared such a group of people.

The officers and guards at the gate were all holding expressions filled with fury.

[All those admirable men left to the battle, yet you foppish young lads didn't even show up to see them off. Well that's fine, because nobody ever needed you to do so. Yet right after they were gone,

you group of people actually rushed out with such postures! What the hell is this?]

That was simply an insult to the admirable troops that had just left!

Zuo Wuji's eyes were lit up by anger. He spoke with a low voice first, "Ye Xiao, here comes the trouble."

Ye Xiao raised his head, "Oh? Trouble?"

He had never stopped bumping into troubles since the day he had become "Ye Xiao". He didn't want any trouble today though, because it was kind of a special day. Yet the trouble came to him in advance. What a shame!

However, who was this "trouble"?

Ye Xiao was still the Xiao Monarch deep inside his heart. He hadn't really tried to remember people. Luckily, Zuo Wuji was thoughtfully introducing them for him.

"Their leader is Li Chengze, the grandson of the Right Prime Minister. After him, it is the son of the Revenue Minister Jiang Yuming. There is also the son of the Rites Minister. And also..." Zuo Wuji named all of them one by one.

Lan Langlang smiled and said, "These bastards are our old 'friends' for a long time."

Ye Xiao frowned.

[Here comes the trouble indeed. A big trouble!]

While they were talking, those lads were coming over while swinging the horsewhips.

...

Chapter 143: The Defiance

“It seems they are here to look for some lucky profits.” Lan Langlang sneered. He tried so hard to separate his two pupils. After spitting on the floor, he said, “In the past, we military forces were powerful. They never dared to raise their heads in front of us... Now our biggest support has just left, and they would show their defiance right away. Their useless fathers are all cowardly staying in the capital after all. Of course they felt good about it... Obviously, they are here to show us some authority.”

Zuo Wuji coughed heavily and said, “Lang! Mind your words... What do you mean military forces...?”

Lan Langlang rolled his eyes and realized that Zuo Wuji was once on the other side. So he smiled and said, “Zuo Zuo, you are different. You left the dark side and came to our side. You have come to the bright side!”

Zuo Wuji sighed speechlessly, [I left the group of a bunch of foppish lords and joined the ‘three lords in town’ - another bunch of foppish lords... Where is the ‘dark and bright’ part?

Is the ‘three lords in town’ a better title?

I am afraid it is even worse...

What do you mean come to the bright side?

I must be in the dark side at the moment. No... That is abusing myself right now!

Fine. I came to the bright side indeed!

Wait, that's not cool either. I am still disgracing myself. Lan Langlang, you prick. What were you talking about! I am abusing myself either way!]

Let's skip Lord Zuo's thoughts. Ye Xiao was staring at those guys.

He kept his eyes half-closed. He just felt a furious fire burning inside his heart at the moment.

He blinked and then found one guy that he was familiar with.

The son of the Chief Guard of the Crown Prince's Palace, Wang Xiaonian.

At the moment, he was staring at Ye Xiao fiercely with his eyes full of anger.

He was hiding behind the group of foppish lads. It looked like these lads were the ones who were stirring things. Ye Xiao showed a strange smile after all.

[So... the wise Crown Prince truly doesn't know anything about this, huh?]

He thought about the honorable king who had just stood on the wall earlier wearing a shiny yellow robe. And he looked at these fools who were wearing foppish stupid clothes with useless and coward faces...

He had smile filled with disdain.

“We need to be careful on this anyway... If we get into any serious problems, it will never be a good thing for any of us.” Zuo Wuji reminded, “The army has just left after all. Even if we are forced to join the fight against them, it will bring a rather negative influence... Their fathers are all in the court. We are not a match to them at the moment. Let’s step back for some day. Things will get better.”

Ye Xiao smiled blandly and didn’t answer him.

He thought about the words Song Jue had said once, “Prince Hua-Yang is supporting all the families of the military side”!

He didn’t truly understand it until now.

Prince Hua-Yang had just left the city and those guys had already come to make trouble.

The military side and the political side were always against each other. They were always comparing with each other. One side was stronger while the other weaker, and then it switched after some

time. Yet these fellas from the political side were really picking the wrong day. They were either lacking brains or their brains were filled with mushrooms!

Thinking about this, Ye Xiao turned around and looked at Song Jue.

He saw Song Jue holding his arms on the chest and sat on the carriage with his eyes looking at those fellas coldly. There was a killing intent inside his eyes though.

Obviously, Song Jue was even fiercer than Ye Xiao. He was already thinking about killing now!

Ye Xiao didn't doubt that Song Jue would definitely attack with no mercy once things began.

He was still thinking, yet the fellas were so close to them now. There were also dozens of men following behind them. They were actually riding their horses and surrounded Ye Xiao and his group. They were threatening Ye Xiao's group with numbers.

The horses kept ringing and howling. The horse steps were also annoying.

“Zuo Wuji!” The grandson of the Right Prime Minister, Li Chengze, waved his hand and said, “You better move aside. We are not here for you today! Be a good boy and stay aside. We won't beat you then!”

Zuo Wuji sneered, “Beat me? You?”

Li Chengze was furious and spoke in a fierce tone, “Zuo Wuji, I strongly suggest that you should listen to me resignedly! Do you really think we don’t dare to touch you just because your grandfather is the Zuo Prime Minister? If you dare to piss me, I will beat your ass up too! You will be the first one to fall!”

Zuo Wuji wasn’t scared at all. He raised his head and said proudly, “You want to beat me? Do you need an additional gut to do that? Maybe I can lend you some!”

Li Chengze showed fierceness in his eyes and nodded slowly, “Zuo Wuji, you better remember what you have said. Wait and see! Don’t cry later!”

And then he swung the horsewhip and pointed at Ye Xiao. He shouted, “Ye Xiao, get the hell over here. It is time for us to make things even now.”

The crowd behind him bursted into laughter. Some of them started to talk.

“I wonder how Brother Li will go even with him. Is he going to eat some ‘midnight snack’? It isn’t at night though... hahaha...”

“It is good to do it before the night comes, isn’t it? So that he can eat it a few more times...”

“That’s true. With plenty of time, we can eat it together. Eat the shit out of it!”

Their voices were filled with viciousness.

There were others staring at Su Yeyue with thirsty eyes while they were talking.

If Prince Hua-Yang was still in the capital, these guys would never dare to even look at Su Yeyue, because Prince Hua-Yang would get to their house and beat the shit out of them all.

Yet Prince Hua-Yang was gone for the battle now. He was not going to return in the coming future.

These fellas heard about how severe it was in the south. They knew that the situation wasn’t going well and Prince Hua-Yang might die in the battle.

They didn’t think deep about it. If Prince Hua-Yang failed and lost the battle in the south, the kingdom would be in great danger. None of them would survive the enemies’ arrival!

Yet they were just some foolish foppish fellas who didn’t have the ability to think deeper. They only saw that since Prince Hua-Yang left, they were free to do anything they wanted. They felt they could do something they had always wanted to do now.

Su Yeyue was too young, yet she was the first beauty in the capital. These fellas had always been eager for this pretty girl.

The reason why they kept messing up with Ye Xiao before was that eagerness. They didn't put it on the table, yet everybody knew that they didn't like Ye Xiao being titled of 'the fiancé of the pretty princess'.

They would love to see Ye Xiao crippled...

Su Yeyue's face turned red because of embarrassment. She stepped forward and stood in front of Ye Xiao shouting angrily, "What do you want?"

One of the fellas smiled, "Little princess, don't be afraid. We are here to collect a debt from Ye Xiao. We will leave after it is done right away... Hahaha... We will not get to you."

He said and kept looking up and down on Su Yeyue. His deltoid eyes were full of ardor.

"Jiang Taisui!" Zuo Wuji shouted furiously, "Behave yourself!"

This Jiang Taisui was the son of the Revenue Minister. It was said that when he was born, it happened to be the time he conflicted the [Tai Sui](#), so he named him Jiang Taisui.

It meant something like "Tai Sui befalls; no evil appears".

Maybe it truly worked. This fella, Jiang Taisui had never encountered any difficulties since he was born. He was extremely full of lechery. He bullied guys and insulted girls. He was just onto anybody!

Jiang Taisui laughed and then spoke pruriently, “Look who's talking. Wow. I am so scared. It is the man whose pxis doesn't work, Lord Zuo! Ouch... You better keep your voice down, Lord Zuo. I am quite tremulous...”

Zuo Wuji was pissed so bad that he couldn't think of anything to say. His face turned red.

His natural-born disease wasn't a secret, yet it was the first time somebody insulted him with it in front of everybody.

He hated this Jiang Taisui so deep into his bones. He was shaking because of anger.

Lan Langlang laughed and said, “Bravo! The son of the Revenue Minister! You are indeed the bastard of the most wealthy malfeasance in the kingdom. You talked so shamelessly just like your father! That's admirable!”

Jiang Yuming, the Revenue Minister, was the richest officer in the Kingdom of Chen. Somebody directly called him a living mammon. It didn't refer to the truth that he was in charge of the national treasury; it referred to the truth that he himself had a huge amount of money.

He was a rat in the national treasury indeed. His personal wealth was not the most impressive thing about him; the most impressive thing was his financing capability.

He had been serving the king since the king was a child... That was why the king never got serious about him. The king just took something as an excuse to make Jiang Yuming give out some money from time to time...

Jiang Yuming was an important person in the court though. He was irreplaceable. He was in fact a secret ‘treasury’ of the king. Whenever there was a financial problem in the kingdom, everyone knew that it was time to fine Jiang Yuming for some money...

Jiang Yuming was an outstanding man really. Again and again, his properties would be taken as a fine, but again and again, he became rich again within half a year... He just never stopped making dirty money...

It was kind of a “miracle” in the royal court of the Kingdom of Chen for dozens of years though.

...

Tai Sui (太岁), a Chinese term for the stars directly opposite Jupiter during its roughly 12-year orbital cycle. Personified as deities, they are important features of Chinese astrology, Feng

Shui, and Taoism. The time when an individual conflicts Tai Sui means when he/she faces major obstacles in health, job and studies.

Chapter 144: That Is a Bastard!

"Lan Langlang, do you want to die?!" Jian Taisui looked at Lan Langlang fiercely and cursed loudly, "Now your father may be dead somewhere else, and you actually dare to abuse me here! When the news of your father's death comes, I will start to ruin you! I won't stop until your life becomes so miserable and you kneel for me begging for death!"

Lan Langlang was seriously pissed by these words. He was going to begin the fight right away.

Yet Ye Xiao spoke.

He spoke like he was blaming Lan Langlang, "Langlang, why are you so stingy? You did say something wrong just now. You can't blame this gentleman!"

Lan Langlang was stunned, "I was wrong? Why?"

Jiang Taisui was surprised too. He thought that maybe Ye Xiao was trying to fawn on him because he had more people now. He just stayed silent and let Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang go with the infighting.

Ye Xiao seriously said, "Don't you know he is Jiang... Taisui?"

Lan Langlang seemed to notice Ye Xiao's intent, so he acted, "What? Is there anything special?"

Someone in the opponent's side realized what Ye Xiao was going to talk about, so they started to laugh.

Ye Xiao spoke thoughtfully, "You can call his father Jiang as you wish. Yet it is wrong to call him Jiang though! You humiliated him by calling him Jiang. How could he not be mad about it?!"

Lan Langlang said, "Ah? Why is that?"

Ye Xiao said, "You fool. Are you dumb? Don't you know his father is a eunuch? His father has spent his whole life serving the king."

Lan Langlang opened his eyes widely and asked, "What? Does that have anything to do with Jiang Taisui though?"

Ye Xiao shouted at him impatiently, "You fool! Lord Jiang is a eunuch, then how could he have a son?"

Lan Langlang acted like he was enlightened and then said confusedly, "That's right. That's right... Lord Jiang is n eunuch. How can he have a son? Hmm... Does that mean... This prick is adopted? He isn't his mother's son? Yet the midwife was a famous one who specially served some great houses. How is that possible?"

Ye Xiao pointed at his forehead and shouted, "You dumb fool! Why can't you be any smarter? Did I ever say his mother didn't give birth to him?"

Lan Langlang kept acting. He rubbed his head, "I am confused. What do you mean? Yes or no. Yes and no. I wasn't dumb, yet I am a fool now..."

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "Fine. Let me be straight then. Jiang Taisui is surely his mother's real son. Yet his father... I mean Lord Jiang is a eunuch. You know? So... You can't call him Jiang Taisui really. Nobody knows about his family name. When you called him Jiang, you are implying this issue of him. Of course he was mad at you!"

Lan Langlang acted like he completely understood now. He said, "Oh! I see! You mean, his father was cheated and he knew it well. When I called him Jiang Taisui, he thought I was humiliating him. But I was just casually saying..."

Ye Xiao coughed and said, "You bastard. You just can't hide the truth, can you? Don't be too casual about the truth. We are talking about who is the real father of this guy. We are not intentionally talking about the Revenue Minister. I know you were misunderstood earlier. But you said it anyway. Sometimes people just see things differently. For example, we think crap is smelly and dirty, yet dogs just love to eat it. What can we do?"

"That's true. I see. It was my fault indeed. He should be mad at me. It was unforgivable to curse my dad, yet it was understandable. I will forgive him once then. Poor lad..." Lan Langlang nodded, acting like he was feeling sorry about that guy.

They kept fooling with Jiang Taisui. One played the fool while the other played the wise guy. They just spoke what they should

say smoothly.

Lan Langlang actually acted like he was the one who was offended and showed his 'magnanimity' to the guy!

Many among the crowd had laughed till their belly hurt.

Those foppish fellas were mostly depending on Li Chengze and Jiang Taisui, yet there were some of them that just couldn't help it. Now that things were so funny, they just couldn't stop laughing!

In fact, Li Chengze was laughing too. Ye Xiao noticed it and sighed. He knew that the real thoughts of foppish fools were truly hard to understand!

Jiang Taisui's face turned pale from red, and then blue from pale, and then purple from blue, and then turned black from purple. He was showing a dark face. His lips were totally pale and trembling.

After a while...

"Ye Xiao... Lan Langlang... Fxck the whole clan of yours..." Jiang Taisui was extremely pissed off. He cursed loudly.

Song Jue's eyes turned colder after that.

The way he looked at Jiang Taisui was like looking at a dead body. [I can't kill you in the public, but if I really want to, it will be

as simple as blowing some dust on the table...]

Ye Xiao's eyes turned cold and he said, "Langlang, do you know what is 'utterly discomfited' now?"

Lan Langlang answered, "I know. I got it. Seeing is believing. I have seen it now. That is so practical though!"

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "Taisui said he was going to do something dirty about our clans, yet we can't abuse him back like that. That's sad!"

Lan Langlang said, "We shouldn't bother to quarrel with him!"

Ye Xiao shook his head and said, "You misunderstood. I mean he knew who exactly are in our clans, so that he can think about doing bad things to our people. Yet we don't know his!"

Lan Langlang was confused, "What? Why? We know him! Minister Jiang is his father!"

Ye Xiao spoke like he was talking to a kid, "Bullshxt! Minister Jiang is his fake father. If we are going to ... his whole clan, it has nothing to do with Minister Jiang for sure. We need to know who is his real father. Do yo know his family name? You don't even know his family name!"

Lan Langlang kept acting like a fool, "I don't know! Do you?"

"Well me neither." Ye Xiao shook his head and said, "Even Minister Jiang doesn't know it, how could I know? So even if we curse his family, it would be a waste of our words!"

Lan Langlang spoke like he had thought of something cleverly, "Wait! Even though Minister Jiang doesn't know it, his wife must know it!"

"Wrong!" Ye Xiao spoke seriously, "You think yourself clever, but you are not. Let me tell you. The truth is even his mother doesn't know his family name!"

"What? No shit!" Lan Langlang jumped out like he had just heard something like an undiscovered land. He said, "Not even his mother? Then what on earth happened? How did this bastard come to this world?"

"There must be a reason." Ye Xiao looked at Jiang Taisui indifferently and said blandly, "It is said... that year, Lord Jiang was sick and he couldn't do... You know... That thing. Yet he wanted a son to continue his bloodline. He didn't want to be disgraced. So he ran a school for those guys who failed in the imperial examinations in his own house..."

"Oh... It was a good thing to run such a school... But what did it matter to Jiang Taisui though?" Lan Langlang kept rubbing his ears like he was rather confused.

"Heh, heh... Those guys were usually good looking lads... Hmm.

That means this school only accepted male students. Langlang, do you know why?" Ye Xiao asked.

Lan Langlang acted like he was confused. He said, "Brother Ye, just go straight with it, will you? Don't let me guess please..."

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "I am confused too... because the school was closed after running for half a year."

Lan Langlang said, "Closed? What? Those lads all passed the examinations? Became officers?"

"No way! Absolutely not!" Ye Xiao shook his head seriously, "There was a horrible pestilence spread in this school. Over a hundred students all died there in just one night... All gone..."

"What! Is there really some pestilence that horrible?" Lan Langlang screamed, "How come?"

Ye Xiao spoke seriously, "In fact, the minister himself was truly lucky. Right inside his house, there was a pestilence that killed all the students. Yet there was not even a cat in his family that died that year..."

"Wow! That was quite a marvelous capability of resisting pestilence! Amazing!" Lan Langlang acted admiringly and lifted his thumbs up.

"Well there was one thing that was confusing me..." Ye Xiao said,

"After that horrible day, a piece of good news came out... Well! The minister's wife got pregnant..."

Lan Langlang kept his eyes opened and said, "Fxck that..."

"Damn it! Mind your language! What do you mean 'fxck that'!" Ye Xiao was angry, "What's wrong with you? Do you think it could be yours? Can you prove it?"

Lan Langlang lowered his head and said, "Sorry... I can prove it was absolutely not my baby. I was just about to be one month old when that happened... I didn't have that marvelous capability..."

"That's right! Remember not to say anything stupid! It always brings you troubles... Don't you realize over one hundred men just died in a 'pestilence'?" Ye Xiao said, "Do you want to be 'pestilence'ed' too?"

Lan Langlang kept his head low and acted like he was scared, "No I don't! Please don't! It wasn't me. No it wasn't!"

"Back to the main topic..." Ye Xiao summarized, "Till now, this Jiang Taisui... Ah-hem... Let's just call him Jiang Taisui temporarily... Hmm. His family remains an unravelled mystery!"

...

Chapter 145: What If I Kill Him?

Ye Xiao laughed loudly, "His birth remains a mystery! His 'father' doesn't know who his real father is. And his mother know nothing about it too!"

"So nobody knows who his family name really is, right?" Zuo Wuji couldn't help and added some more while laughing loudly. He was delighted all of a sudden.

He knew that Ye Xiao was doing all this for him.

And of course... What Ye Xiao was talking was truth. It was the truth that nobody dared to talk about though...

"I see!" Lan Langlang acted like he had just solved a historic problem. He spoke amusedly, "I see now... That is truly something freakish in the world..."

"Sure. There are lot more things you don't know." Ye Xiao smiled vigorously and amusedly.

"Well, one more thing." Zuo Wuji frowned.

"I can understand all about it. Why do you still have questions?" Lan Langlang was surprised.

"What I don't understand is that since there were more than 100

handsome men back there, why is this guy so ugly?" Zuo Wuji acted like he was asking humbly.

Ye Xiao spoke to him, "Wuji, you still have a lot to learn about observation! Look carefully. Look at the Lord Jiang Taisui. Every part on his face, the eyes, the nose, the mouth, the ears and even the eyebrows are in great appearance! However... It doesn't look that good when these stay together... So, basically he is very handsome in every part... Well... He just doesn't look good as a whole. You understand?"

He continued, "Let's put it this way. What do you think about a man who is built up with several parts? Even though the parts are good, what about after they are stuck together?"

Zuo Wuji acted convinced, "Oh, I see. That is such a profound truth, but in fact easy to understand. All the profound truths are hidden inside the obvious issues..."

"So... Keep learning if you don't understand something... When you think through it, you will get it!" Ye Xiao spoke, "With all these men's advantages, it becomes a mess! So... that's a typical bastard... Oh that makes it our beloved Jiang Taisui!"

After peaking for a long time, he finally got to the conclusion, "Well he is so annoyed about the truth though. Actually, he has to think about it. He is such a thing. That's unchangeable. He actually acts so insolently... Poor guy..."

"I completely get it now! The question about who his father is..."

Lan Langlang said, "Well. Nobody really can tell... It must be a universe-level problem. Even the gods will frown about it... Really hard to tell..."

"If he has a family name, I am afraid... he is going to have a super long name." Zuo Wuji grinned, "He has to use over 100 names... He will be exhausted in signing his names..."

"Hahahahaha..." Zuo Wuji, Lan Langlang, Song Jue and Ye Xiao all laughed out together.

On the other side, those foppish lords were with Jiang Taisui, but many of them laughed too.

What Ye Xiao said was the truth. Back then, the families of those students had come to the capital and stirred up quite a disturbance...

Jiang Yuming nearly got a death penalty on his whole clan. However, because the previous king was still alive, he tried everything to save his life.

Jiang Yuming was compelled to take care of the disturbance properly. Thus he sold all his properties and even borrowed a lot of money to make all things settled.

After that, he became crazy about money more than he love his own life.

However, news had spread out. Thousands of people came to the capital and made a huge disturbance. It was impossible to cover the story.

So the birth of Jiang Taisui was the biggest scandal of the Kingdom of Chen!

But as Jiang Yuming got more and more politically powerful, those who stayed lower than him didn't dare to mention this scandal while those who were in higher positions than him thought it was something too scornful. So less and less people talked about it...

However, it didn't mean people just forgot it...

Ye Xiao got to know it because Song Jue told him when they were chatting. Song Jue talked about it as a joke, yet Ye Xiao used it in a perfect way under this special circumstance!

He wasn't really a person who liked to talk about people's painful history, yet this Jiang Taisui came out and made troubles right after the army departed. He was really pissed. Besides, the fella actually had dirty thoughts about Su Yeyue. That pissed off Ye Xiao more. And the fella actually caught Zuo Wuji on the raw in front of the public!

Zuo Wuji felt so disgraced about it!

It was said that we shouldn't never hit people on his face or catch

people on the raw. Since Jiang Taisui insulted them barbarically, Ye Xiao didn't hesitate to bring up the famous scandal of the fella's family!

Guess who felt the worst?

Whoever insulted will be insulted by all!

Zuo Wuji was impotent, yet it was a natural-born disease. He didn't ask for it. Yet the Jiang family had done things that got back to themselves!

Jiang Taisui was struggling in mind. His face turned purple and cyan and then became dark. His face changed faster than the Sichuan Opera. Yet he said nothing. He was shaking because of the anger. His eyes seemed to be filled with blood and he just stayed still.

Ye Xiao knew that it was his Uncle Song who blocked Jiang Taisui while Ye Xiao was talking. Song Jue made Jiang Taisui unable to talk or move secretly and perfectly.

He wanted this fella to be completely insulted without being able to retort!

It was just like most of the people in the martial world would say, 'If you want to insult somebody, do it to the farthest.'

Ye Xiao finally finished his 'speech'. Song Jue unblocked Jiang

Taisui at the same time.

Jiang Taisui shouted, "AH!!!" And then he spat out blood. - Puff! - And then he moved towards Ye Xiao crazily, "Ye Xiao! Fxck y..."

He didn't even finish talking. Ye Xiao raised the horsewhip casually and swung it. - Pah! -

It seemed nobody had seen the horsewhip moving, yet the sound of it was so loud and everyone was shocked hearing it!

- POOF! -

After the sound, Jiang Taisui was rolling on the ground distressfully. He was holding his mouth and screeching. He kept rolling on the ground. He was actually struck by Ye Xiao with the horsewhip and fell down off the horse!

That was an extremely fierce strike!

Half of Jiang Taisui's face was broken because of it. Several of his teeth were hit off.

Ye Xiao moved forward on the horse and hit him again with the horsewhip. He spoke coldly, "You are nothing but a real bastard. What give you the right to abuse me? I didn't do anything to you, because I felt sorry about you. Yet a poor man can always be hateful. The hatefulness on you is obvious and disgusting!"

He was extremely hard hearted when he was speaking.

His face showed no expressions; it was merely cold-blooded.

He didn't look like he want to kill. He didn't even seem angry. He was just extremely indifferent.

Jiang Taisui was still screeching. Ye Xiao whipped him again.

"I didn't care about what you said. That meant I showed you respect, right?"

- PAH! - Another whip.

"You are just a disgusting thing who doesn't even know his name. How dare you shout at me? Look at you stupid face. You are doomed to be a useless shxt your entire life. Let me just send you to hell today! Hmm.. Pooh. It is disgraceful even talking to you like this!

Just go to the hell to look for you fathers, you shxt!"

He kept swinging the horsewhip again and again. - Pah! Pah! Pah! ...-

All of a sudden, there were fresh blood scattered on the ground. It was quite a bloody scene!

People were all scared seeing it.

The young lord of the Northern General's family actually tortured the son of the Revenue Minister in the public! And it didn't look like he ever tried to keep the fella alive. That was truly arrogant and aggressive!

Ye Xiao was having fun striking the fella, yet he didn't really want to kill him right now.

It was after all outside the city and under everybody's watch.

If he really killed the fella, he would very likely go to jail because of it. He wasn't afraid though, but he didn't want more troubles!

He could keep him alive, yet he would surely make him suffer a big one!

"Stop!" Li Chengze finally realized how things went wrong for him. He was shaking because of anger. He shouted, "Ye Xiao, you will kill him if you don't stop right now! Ye Xiao! Do you think you can take the responsibility?"

When Ye Xiao was humiliating Jiang Taisui, as his leader, Li Chengze actually didn't stop it. Instead, he was laughing about it too.

Now he realized how things were bad to him. He finally tried to stop it, yet he wasn't trying to save Jiang Taisuif's life; he just didn't want to make any trouble to himself.

"What if I kill him..." Ye Xiao said, while swinging the horsewhip, "Do I need to pay with my life for this bastard?"

He spoke coldly, "When the students died in the silence, did anybody ever pay for it?"

He looked at Li Chengze coldly and said blandly, "His father was just a Revenue Minister back in those years and he could escape the penalty. My father is the great Northern General who is in charge of millions of soldiers. Isn't it better than a Revenue Minister? So what if I kill him? So what?"

"Who dares to say anything?" Ye Xiao overbearingly continued, "If not for that, a stupid disgusting bastard is dead!"

...

Chapter 146: Arrogant and Domineering

"We all have hegemony. I didn't get to you, not because I didn't dare to, but because I think it is scornful to do so." Ye Xiao stopped. He held the horsewhip and came to Li Chengze slowly. He smiled and said, "Li Chengze. It is just like... your grandfather, the Right Prime Minister, my father, the great Northern General, and the fake father of this bastard, the Revenue Minister... Am I right?"

If we all follow some rules and just hang around without making any troubles for others, that will be fine." Ye Xiao arrogantly raised his head and looked at Li Chengze with disdain. He spoke blandly, "However... if anyone wants to mess with others relying on his family's hegemony... In the Kingdom of Chen, with the hegemony of my family, who do you think will I be afraid of? What do I care about? Who do I need to fear?"

Under the watch of his fierce eyes, Li Chengze couldn't help but feel scared. He stepped back a bit and spoke like he was tough but in fact he was timid, "Ye Xiao, who do you think you are? I warn you not to go too far!"

"Do you think I went too far? Or you went too far?" Ye Xiao sneered, "I have a habit. It is to follow my terrible temper."

He glanced at every fella in the opponent's group and said, "Well... An eye for an eye... You dared to mess with me because you thought your families were powerful. I will never step back. You didn't want to be reasonable. You decided to 'go too far'... Well, then..."

He didn't even look back. He just casually pointed at Jiang Taisui, who was screeching on the floor, "... I will go further than you tried to. I will show less concern about being reasonable. You know it doesn't take time to learn not to be reasonable.

When my enemy doesn't have a moral baseline... I don't too."

He grinned at Li Chengze and asked softly, "Li Chengze, I have beaten up Jiang Taisui like this. Can you guess whether I dare to beat you up too? Come on. Guess! Do I dare... or not?"

Li Chengze looked at Jiang Taisui screeching. He was totally scared. He stepped back and said angrily, "I am not guessing!"

That obviously showed his cowardice.

The men who looked like guards that were brought by these fellas were all staying aside silently. They didn't dare to even make a sound. They were afraid that the man in the carriage would get to themselves.

These foppish fellas might not know about it, but these cultivators knew clearly about it.

They could feel the danger that was coming from Song Jue.

Song Jue was just sitting in the carriage, yet he was still like a giant broadsword that could tear the sky apart. He was full of killing intent.

They knew Song Jue wouldn't lay his hands on these lords, yet he would definitely kill the guards if any of the guards dared to move.

Song Jue didn't need to take any responsibility from killing the guards. These guards were in low positions. If they dared not to show respect to the General's House, they could be charged irreverence.

Song Jue was also a guard of the General's House, so he could kill them legitimately.

On the other side, Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang were shocked.

They had never thought that Ye Xiao could do such thing.

They couldn't believe that Ye Xiao could actually be so fierce and cold.

Meanwhile, they felt enlightened. [Oh. That's a good move!]

When they got into troubles before, they always acted restrainedly because they were taught to do so. They were afraid to get into troubles. That was why they had made those fellas more and more arrogant.

Now they were aware. [Since they have nothing to fear, we can too! It will only make them haughty if we keep on stepping back.

It is true that they would be forgiven when they make mistakes, but we will never die for making mistakes too!

We all are juniors of some powerful families. Their families are actually in lower positions. Why hesitate then?

Go for it then!

The result will be no worse than loss at both sides!

If I am hurt, you won't feel good either.]

Song Jue was pleased to watch Ye Xiao. [My nephew has finally grown up. He is indeed my big brother's son!

What he did just now really pleased me. I am so satisfied...

It doesn't matter if a man acts arrogantly. You just can't be a coward...]

Well. It seemed Ye Xiao was a bit over arrogant now. He was not even a bit coward at all.

"Well it is a bit overbearing..." Song Jue smiled and murmured, "But... I like it... Hahahaha..."

[Now I can be sure all those troubles before were stirred up by him. Those guys were really killed in his hand...] Song Jue thought, [Look at the terrible temper of this little prick. He must have made a lot of troubles outside. He is truly a demon fed with troubles...]

[Oooh... I remember he said that if the crown prince dared to mess with him, he will kill the crown prince... It turns out that it was not a joke...]

Thinking of that, he felt scared even though he was always a brave man. He thought, [I hope... it's better that this thing will never happen. Otherwise it must be something worse than the heavens falling down...]

Surrounded by a group of foppish fellas, Ye Xiao moved around on the horse. He was surrounded indeed, yet no matter who he got to, the guy would definitely step away fearfully.

It was like they were getting away from a demon, an evil spirit.

The overwhelming vigor of 'we are coming to you' was long gone at the moment.

Ye Xiao moved around and then smiled at Zuo Wuji .He said gently, "Always treat the scamps in a scampish way. It never works to be reasonable to them."

Zuo Wuji nodded. Lan Langlang put his thumb up and said

admiringly, "That is high. Higher than the sky."

Ye Xiao looked at Li Chengze and said blandly, "Do you still want to mess with me?"

Li Chengze was just a rich young boy who was spoiled in a wealthy family. He had never seen such a bloody scene before. His face and lips turned pale yet he was still playing tough. He said, "Ye Xiao. We are not finished! Don't smile too early!"

Ye Xiao laughed and slapped on the horse. He swung the horsewhip and made sound in the air. - PAH! - He said, "What do you mean we are not finished? I will wait for you then. Let's go!" He held the string of the horse which Su Yeyue was riding. He moved his legs and the horse kept rushing towards Li Chengze's group. He was sneering.

Li Chengze was scared and hurriedly stepped aside.

Ye Xiao actually led his men straight in the middle of these foppish fellas. Nobody dared to stop him though.

Those fellas were all having mixed emotions.

The mutilated Jiang Taisui was still screeching and rolling on the floor. It was so miserable...

When Ye Xiao left those fellas, he suddenly stopped. He spoke blandly without turning around, "One last thing. Whoever dares to

look at my fiancée like that, he will end up the same with this Jiang Taisui."

After that, he didn't turn around. He just swung the horsewhip and, - pah -, it struck Wang Xiaonian to the floor who had been hiding among the crowd.

Wang Xiaonian cried out. A mark of the horsewhip strike appeared on his forehead down to his belly, with skin cut open and flesh torn. That was scary.

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Take this as a small example."

He laughed, "That's right. I just hit him as I wish. Hahahaha..."

He pushed his legs and shouted, "Yah!"

The horse howled and then rushed out.

After a while, they disappeared inside the city.

There had been one guy screeching on the floor earlier, yet now there was one more, Wang Xiaonian.

All these foppish lads were seriously frightened. Their faces turned pale. They looked at each other and looked at the two miserable men on the floor, and then they looked at the direction where Ye Xiao left. They couldn't help quivering.

[Is that... truly Ye Xiao?]

[Why... is he so... scary now?]

After Ye Xiao disappeared, Li Chengze's face turned all red and he shouted at the guards around him, "You useless shxt! I didn't bring you here to just watch! I was bullied! And you actually just stood there and watched! You are such a group of losers! It truly is a waste of food keeping you around!"

The guards were all listening quietly with their heads low. They murmured in their hearts, [It is easy for you to talk. If we dared to do anything, we are now dead for sure. We would be much more miserable than that bastard on the floor.]

[We can feed our families as long as we are alive. If we die for you, our families will starve to death. Who would really like to sacrifice for you?]

[You keep abusing us 'loser', 'useless', 'shxt'... If you are not the grandson of the Right Prime Minister, we would have fxcked you up to death already...]

Li Chengze felt more and more disgraced. He spoke with a dark face, "Screw it! Motherfxcker... Was I here to have fun messing with others or was I here to be humiliated? You group of useless losers actually stayed just aside... Did you not act like you were all super heroes? How come when I needed you to be tough you just acted like pussies?"

His face was dark. He got on his horse and his face turned more and more vicious. He murmured, "Ye Xiao! You humiliated me like this today. I will never forget this. Wait and see!"

The fellas saw Li Chengze started to talk all high and mighty after Ye Xiao disappeared. They looked at each other and thought, [Is it a right thing to follow this guy and be against Ye Xiao all these years?

We should at least find an ally who has a tough fist in a fight...

Well... It seems Ye Xiao's fist is clearly tougher than Li Chengze...]

...

Chapter 147: I Was Hit by the Melting Bone Palm

These lads had been against Ye Xiao's group for a long time, so they felt it weird to change their side all of a sudden. Well, people needed to consider about choosing who would be their friend or enemy after all. So they decided to stay the same temporarily!

Ye Xiao's group was heading back to the city. Lan Langlang was excited and still enjoying the moment they had successfully cracked down their opponents. Although he wasn't the main character, he seemed to be more thrilled than the main character. Zuo Wuji was quiet though. He was lost in thoughts.

When they arrived at the gate of the Palace of Hua-Yang, Zuo Wuji sighed and said, "I understand it now, Brother Ye."

Before Ye Xiao answered him, he swiftly rode his horse and disappeared.

He didn't explain what he was talking about and just left.

Lan Langlang was confused and asked, "Understand what? What did he mean? Was it a puzzle?"

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes and said, "He understands. Yet you don't. Why... We are at the door of the Palace of Hua-Yang already. He should go home now. I need to accompany the little princess and check on her mother..."

Lan Langlang seemed enlightened and he said, "Oh I see."

And then he quickly rode his horse and left like Zuo Wuji.

But he was caught by Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao asked, "Wait. How is your favus head?"

Lan Langlang smiled and said, "Thanks to you. It has recovered well and has started to grow some hair that is truly bushy and dark. Hahaha... After a few days, it will be perfect. I will definitely take off my hat. I am going to show up in the world with my brand new look. Be shocked by my handsome look, people! There is no other things that is more wonderful than this... Xiao Xiao, scream for me!"

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "I knew it was wrong to hold you... Off you go, quickly."

Lan Langlang left with a complacent laughter.

Su Yeyue kept her eyes opened and asked Ye Xiao curiously, "Xiao Xiao, what did Zuo Wuji mean? Did you tell Langlang the truth?"

Ye Xiao spoke gently, "Heh, heh... He understands now... Since those guys are doomed to be our enemies, it never goes too far to do anything to them." He stopped and then continued, "It is rather important for Zuo Wuji to understand this though. Very important."

Su Yeyue answered with an 'oh'.

She didn't quite get it though. Even though she got it, she would have never thought how much it meant to Zuo Wuji to understand this today. She surely didn't care much about it. She was worried anyway and said, "Xiao Xiao, you hit them so hard today. I am afraid there will be many troubles after you later. Their families will never let go of this. How are you going to deal with it?"

Ye Xiao rubbed her little head and smiled, "Don't worry. I will be fine. Just stay with your mother these days. There is nothing you should worry about. I am going to leave after a cup of tea."

He fell deep in thought and said, "The battle in the south, we have our men there too. They will send me a carrier pigeon everyday... Don't worry. There will be no accident."

Su Yeyue looked at him sentimentally. She was blank and then spoke in a low voice, "Xiao Xiao... Why didn't I know how good you were... I feel like even if the heaven falls down, as long as I stay by your side, I won't need to worry about anything. You always solve things."

While speaking, her little face suddenly blushed. She looked down on her waist and then hurried into the door.

...

Ye Xiao stayed in the Palace of Hua-Yang with Princess Hua-Yang. After talking to her for a while, he left with Song Jue.

Once he left the palace, Song Jue spoke in a hushed voice, "It was quite piquant to sort things out today. However, you have made a totally negative relationship with those men and their families. It is not a good time for our side nowadays. We don't have a leader in the military group here and the political group will definitely accuse us on this. Do you have any plan to deal with it?"

Ye Xiao sat on the horse and looked straight forward. He spoke blandly, "There are always two sides of a coin. What happened today can surely be the reason for the political group to harass us. Yet it can also be the reason for us to do something against them! Prince Hua-Yang has just departed for the battle and these losers couldn't wait to mess with us. I would rather wipe them out than to wait for their strike. It will make the military group safe in the capital and we don't need to worry about collapsing from inside!

It is a good chance to let our force run wild in the capital for once. And I am the beginning!"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly.

Song Jue frowned and said, "Your plan sounds easy. Well... But how exactly do we operate it? They did come to us in advance, but you did go very far about it though... You nearly broke the shxt out of that lad."

Ye Xiao smiled, "Well, my plan will depend on the power of my

father. Let's see how powerful he is then."

He blinked to Song Jue and said, "Uncle Song, you know what to do, don't you?"

Song Jue was confused. He knew nothing! He asked in his head, [What the hell do I know?]

Yet since Ye Xiao had said so, Song Jue thought it must be something he was capable of. He just didn't know what it was.

He was lost in thoughts and couldn't find out the answer. Suddenly, he came out with an idea. [I am just a cultivator. What I am good at is fighting! Why don't I go kill all those men tomorrow? It is going to take me the whole night to kill them all! Even if things are exposed later, I still have my Brother Ye! The king won't dare to do anything to me! Hmm. I think this must be Xiao's plan. Otherwise, he wouldn't mention his father."

Song Jue thought for a while and was much more sure about it. Inside his heart, hatred and killing intent surged. He started to think about how he could do this secretly and smoothly tonight. While he was thinking about who to kill first, they had returned to the door of the House of Ye.

There was a crowd gathering in front of the door.

People of the Revenue Minister, people of Wang Danian and people from the House of the Right Prime Minister...

Obviously, they were here for Ye Xiao as their young master had been bullied...

They didn't dare to really do something on Ye Xiao, but they still wanted to make Ye Xiao admit it, so that they could accuse him in front of the king the next morning!

Song Jue humphed. The hatred inside his heart was increasing. He didn't stop thinking about how he should kill all those men... [These bastards are truly shameless and annoying... I am going to collect their lives for good...]

At this moment...

Ye Xiao, who had been quiet since they saw the crowd, suddenly spat out blood and fell down off the horse.

- Prak! - He firmly landed on the ground and passed out immediately. It was like he suddenly lost all his bones. He was in a rather strange posture.

It was like a pile of mud falling onto the floor.

He was like... totally soft.

Song Jue was frightened immediately. He thought Ye Xiao was secretly hit, so he hurriedly got off the horse and checked on Ye

Xiao. He tried to keep calm and started to take note of Ye Xiao's condition. People in the crowd were also stunned. They didn't know what had happened.

They had been waiting for such a while and finally saw Ye Xiao return. While they were just starting to move over and blame Ye Xiao, he actually turned pale on the face and unsteadily fell down off the horse. It was a firm hit, and he didn't seem like acting at all...

What was happening?

Some people had vicious thoughts. [Ye Xiao is a dirty man who likes bullying people, yet he is in fact a coward. Today he has stirred up such a big issue. I am sure he wasn't thinking while he did it. Now, as so many people are here to blame him together, he must be scared out of his wits. That's why he fell down off the horse. It must be!]

Song Jue held Ye Xiao up and felt that there was not a single bone inside his body. He was totally soft and his muscles were all inflexible. Song Jue was scared and shouted loudly, "Xiao-Xiao! What happened?"

He was really worrying about Ye Xiao.

Yet he suddenly saw Ye Xiao open his eyes and blink to him. That was naughty. But then he quickly closed his eyes again.

Song Jue was stunned. [What is he doing now?] He didn't know what to do and how to react.

And then he heard a tiny voice as though it was an ant entering his ears, "Did you forget about... the Melting Bone Palm?"

Song Jue was enlightened. That was Ye Xiao's plan. That was brilliant!

It kept them out from troubles, and it gave them the reason to strike back at the same time. They could do whatever they want to the opponent's side now...

Meanwhile, Song Jue understood why Ye Xiao mentioned his father earlier!

[My big brother is of course very powerful! You will be surprised, young lord!

Not only is he powerful, I kind of rock too! Look what a wonderful play I am going to put on later!]

Song Jue immediately acted emotional and cried loudly, "Master! What happened? Oh no... Young master..."

Ye Xiao relaxed his head and let it hang down like he had truly passed out.

Song Jue kept checking on him hurriedly. His hands were shaking and he was quivering. Suddenly, he shouted at the crowd, "Who was it? Who did it? Why are my young master's bones all broken..."

...

Chapter 148: Someone Became the Scapegoat

A group of blood guards from the House of Ye was shocked too. They ran over immediately.

Song Jue just shouted, "Don't move the young master. His bones are all broken. It will make things worse if we move him improperly. Somebody come quick..."

"Find something tough. The door plank... Right... Quickly..."

He kept urging people.

There was a middle-aged man who got over him and sneered, "All bones are broken? I don't think I can believe that, can I? He looked so well while riding the horse. How come his bones suddenly became broken... I don't think that there is such a weird coincidence. You should probably try harder on this though..."

Song Jue was furious when he heard that. He stood up and grabbed the man's collar. He shouted fiercely, "Fxxck you, you motherfxxcker! Are you blind! Can you see what is happening here? Would I joke about such a thing? Open your stupid shxtty eyes, will you? Fxxck you, you bloody stupid shxt... What a wanker!"

Song Jue was acting so vigorously.

Although the man acted tough, he was just a steward. Although he was serving the same position as Song Jue, he was just a normal person. He couldn't bear the vigor of Song Jue who had been through thousands of battles.

The man was scared and then passed out immediately.

"Pooh! Useless cxnt!" Song Jue spat and kicked the man aside. He shouted, "What the hell. What is this prick."

Thus, the others among the crowd saw how fierce Song Jue was, so they didn't dare to step over in the slightest.

The many blood guards of the House of Ye had come out from the house. They saw the young master lying on the floor, and their chief, Song Jue, was extremely furious. They shouted angrily together and then drew out their longswords at the same time.

The thirty longswords were bright and sharp.

Thirty pair of eyes stared at the crowd like they were pigs to be butchered.

They were waiting for Song Jue's order, so that they could smash all those people at once.

The head of the blood guards stepped forward and said, "Chief, give the order! We will slaughter these men immediately to avenge our beloved young master!"

Song Jue felt embarrassed in his head.

[God damn... These guys are even crazier than me...]

If Ye Xiao was truly at death's door, Song Jue wouldn't hesitate to give the order to kill all those people.

Yet... he knew clearly that Ye Xiao was acting.

So he had to be careful.

"Stay calm." Song Jue spoke seriously, "The first thing we should do is to save the young master. We can take those men's lives at anytime."

Two big guys carried the door plank over. Song Jue waved his hands and a bright blue-colored strange mist appeared. It raised Ye Xiao's body slowly from the floor, gently carrying him on top the door plank. During the whole process Ye Xiao wasn't moved a bit. He was staying in the same posture all along.

People in the crowd were getting over to see what exactly was happening.

[You are indeed very powerful. So what? We can't just trust you so easily, can we? We need to check...]

Song Jue's face was dark. He didn't stop them and just let them have a glance at Ye Xiao. There were some cultivators among them, so they operated their martial arts to check on Ye Xiao. And then they found out something astonishing that made them look at each other in speechless despair.

[Jing and Mai are broken and bones are smashed...

Oh my bloody god. That is an extremely severe injury...

It is more than what Song Jue said, 'bones are broken'...

The bones are like completely gone...]

Some of them who were well acquainted thought about how Ye Xiao looked well yet he suddenly entered such a sorry state; they immediately came out with a conclusion.

"The Melting Bone Palm".

There was no other martial art that could cause such a vicious injury.

They were all stunned.

They had been planning to come and blame Ye Xiao...

How were they going to do that now?

They were shocked.

Song Jue looked at these people with sharp eyes and spoke coldly, "Today my young master went to see Prince Hua-Yang off. He was well all the way along. After the quarrel with the useless bastards from your houses, he became like this..."

His eyes were full of fierceness and killing intent. His tone was filled with bitter hatred.

A man among them who looked like another steward smiled embarrassedly, "Brother Song..."

"What makes you think you can call me brother? A man like you? Really?" Song Jue shouted angrily, "If anything vital happens to my young master, none of you will escape from my hands."

People in the crowd kept moaning in their minds.

[What the hell...]

That steward spoke smilingly, "Steward Song, it truly has nothing to do with us. You have strong cultivation capabilities. You can surely find out the truth... Lord Ye's injury came in a strange way. Has he been hit already before? It looks like the long lost art 'Melting Bone Palm'..."

He then smiled embarrassedly and said, "No one in the Right Prime Minister's House is capable of doing that..."

What he said had pissed people from the other houses, [You bastard! It was Li Chengze, the young lord from the Right Prime Minister's House who started all this shxt! Now you actually tried to just get yourself out of this mess?

You don't have people who can do this, huh? And do you think we do?

The Melting Bone Palm has been lost for centuries. If we have someone who can operate it, do we still need to stay with you?]

All of a sudden, a voice came out from the crowd.

"Nobody in our house can do it too... Please be reasonable Steward Song..."

"How do we possibly have such cultivators..."

Song Jue impatiently waved his hand and shouted loudly, "Shut the fxck up! Did anyone in your house die or what?"

They stopped and thought, [People in your house died, you prick! People in your house is going to die right now! What a loose tongue.]

Song Jue pointed his finger on the forehead of the steward of the Right Minister's House and struck him maliciously, making the steward stagger backwards. He did this again and again while shouting, "Get the fxck out of here you scumbags! Go! If anything bad happens to my young master, I am going to wipe you out. I don't care whether you have anything to do with it or not."

He turned around, and with a loose mouth, he shouted at the guards, "What are you standing here for? Go fly a carrier pigeon and inform the great general. Tell him to come back quickly before he loses the chance to see his son one last time before he dies! Go, go, go!"

And then he turned around and shouted at the crowd, "Why don't just leave already! What do you want? A drink?!"

They stepped back and left immediately. Some of them were getting angry inside though, [You think you are strong? Who do you think you are? You want to wipe us all out? Stay for a drink? Screw it! We are going to have ceremony because your house is going to hold a funeral!]

They were all heading back home to inform their masters.

There were people who felt scared too, [It might not be true that Steward Song would kill us all, but it must be true that they have sent out the message to the general.

If the great General Ye really returned and discovered that our

young lords hurt his son this bad...

That is not good.

He is not easy to deal with.]

Although these men kept denying it, they clearly knew that it was most likely their young lords who had done this thing against Ye Xiao together...

Because those lads left their words earlier, "I am going to get back on Ye Xiao"...

They always did whatever they said they would...

And now they had stirred up some big disturbance...

The news about Ye Xiao's injury didn't spread out widely, yet someone who cared had heard of it immediately.

Guan Zhengwen walked fast to the Crown Prince's study room. The Crown Prince was writing with concentration and smiled, "Master Guan, what brings you here today?"

Guan Zheng-Wen closed the door behind him and spoke in a deep voice, "The wound of the Melting Bone Palm on Ye Xiao... was activated."

The Crown Prince was shocked. His hand shook and the ink dropped on the paper.

He raised his head immediately, looking at Guan Zheng-Wen, "Are you sure?"

"Absolutely." Guan Zheng-Wen nodded.

The Crown Prince thought seriously for a while and said, "Since so, we need to prepare for the next stage... If Ye Nantian dares to rebel..."

Guan Zheng-Wen smiled, "The son of gods is blessed by the gods. Your highness will be supported by the heavens. There is someone who became the scapegoat for us. You can be relaxed."

The Crown Prince was surprised, "Really? Who is it?"

Then he sat on the chair right away and spoke happily, "What happened? Tell me all about it!"

He was extremely happy at the moment. Ye Nantian was a heroic figure in the Kingdom of Chen. If Ye Nantian agreed to join the Crown Prince's side, the Crown Prince would never want to be against him.

Ye Nantian had always been nonaligned. He didn't join any of the princes. Although the Crown Prince couldn't get Ye Nantian's support, the other princes couldn't either. The Crown Prince

thought that once he became the king, Ye Nantian would naturally support him.

In the world, even the king couldn't change Ye Nantian's mind. There was one person who could though. It was Ye Xiao, his son.

The main force of the Crown Prince was the Mu Clan. Unluckily, the Mu Clan had messed up with Ye Xiao. The Crown Prince had no choice but to help the Mu Clan kill Ye Xiao, yet he was afraid Ye Nantian would come for revenge. That's why he decided to get Ye Xiao killed by the Melting Bone Palm. He thought that maybe he could be lucky not to be found out.

...

Chapter 149: A Wishful Plan; War Report

The Crown Prince also understood that a father who had just lost his son would never scruple. So he thought Ye Nantian would most likely kill all the people who were against his son. Ye Nantian was indeed someone who had such capability. That was why the Crown Prince feared him so much!

After Ye Xiao died from the Melting Bone Palm, the Crown Prince had actually planned to sell out Guan Zhengwen as the one to be blamed...

Of course, that was the last option.

Now that he heard about such a fortunate event, how could he not be happy about it.

When he saw Guan Zhengwen's face, he knew that the Crown Prince's Palace had completely escaped the mess this time. Otherwise, Guan Zhengwen wouldn't look so relaxed.

Speaking of the fear for Ye Nantian, Guan Zhengwen was much more scared. He was the one who hit Ye Xiao after all. Ye Nantian would never let him go!

Guan Zhengwen laughed happily and said, "It was such a lucky coincidence. Prince Hua-Yang left for the battle today. As his son-in-law, Ye Xiao went to see him off. After the army departed while Ye Xiao was preparing to get back in town, Li Chengze from the Right Minister's House, Jiang Taisui, the son of the Revenue

Minister, the son of the Rites Minister and some others rushed to Ye Xiao on horses. They were going to mess with Ye Xiao together...”

The Crown Prince couldn't help showing how pleased he was. He said, “The son of Jiang Yuming? The bastard, Jiang Taisui?”

Guan Zhengwen realized that the Crown Prince was truly happy; otherwise, he wouldn't speak like that. So he said, “Yes, it was. The useless garbage boy who kept stirring up troubles like a mad dog, Jiang Taisui.”

The Crown Prince frowned, “Hmm. There was something weird about it though. How did these lads dare to mess with Ye Xiao's group?”

Guan Zhengwen rubbed his beard and spoke with a brilliant smile, “It is indeed hard to understand those foppish little kids. There are four great generals plus Prince Hua-Yang in the military group. There should be at least one of them staying in the capital before. That was why they didn't dare to go too far. They even got bullied by Ye Xiao a few times.”

“Now that all the big figures of the military group are gone, the military group lost its leader. That's why Li Chengze's group wanted to have their revenge on Ye Xiao's and Lan Langlang's group. Those foppish useless pussies are really narrow-minded. They didn't even try to think about the consequences of their action!” The Crown Prince got it right away.

“That’s true. Most importantly, these foppish lads’ families usually turn a blind eye on what they do. They all have their prides after all. As long as these lads don’t go too far, their families will never care. They mostly just show up and clean things up.” Guan Zhengwen spoke.

The Crown Prince was pleased and he said, “Go ahead.”

“These foppish lads banded together to trouble Ye Xiao. However, they got beaten up hard by Ye Xiao instead... Your highness, Ye Xiao is also a foppish fool, but he is quite good in cultivation capability though. I have felt it the other day when I fought against him.”

The Crown Prince nodded.

“Those lads obviously couldn’t have a chance to defeat Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao whipped Jiang Yuming’s son to the point that he was bathing in his own blood. And then he also whipped Wang Xiaonian. I have checked on him. That was a firm and horrible whip. Even if Wang Xiaonian doesn’t become crippled, he cannot avoid being disfigured.”

Guan Zhengwen spoke.

“Wang Xiaonian... Heh, heh...” The Crown Prince spoke indifferently, “This lad has stirred up enmities several times. He doesn’t know when he should stop. It is a good thing that someone taught him a lesson... Who does he hang around with all the time? I wonder why Wang Danian never disciplines his son. He is a total

embarrassment for the Crown Prince's Palace."

"That's true. He has done many stupid things." Guan Zhengwen said, "After Ye Xiao whipped them, he just left on his horse. While he was a few steps away from his house, he suddenly fell down off the horse. The Melting Bone Palm was luckily activated! His bones were immediately melted! He was like a pile of mud! Most coincidentally, there were a big bunch of people gathering in front of the House of Ye preparing to blame Ye Xiao!"

The Crown Prince sighed. He seemed to feel guilty, "What a pity. Such a pretty and good young man."

Guan Zhengwen coughed, trying hard to prevent saying something wrong, [Pity? It was you who ordered me to do it! I didn't want to. You kept forcing me... Remember?

Look how you cry crocodile tears.

That is typically a whore wanting to pass off as a virgin!

How could you say it was a pity?]

"Did the Melting Bone Palm truly activated? Could there be anything wrong with it?" The Crown Prince asked.

"Absolutely not. It was exactly how it should be activated. The victim will show nothing wrong before it is activated. When it is activated, his bones will all become mud!" Guan Zhengwen said,

“Even though it might be activated one day earlier than it should be... It was reasonable since Ye Xiao was weak. He has been weak since he was a baby.”

The Crown Prince smiled, “Then it is a good thing that it was activated one day earlier. What a perfect ‘one day’. The gods are truly on my side!”

Guan Zhengwen laughed loudly too.

“More luckily, the steward of the House of Ye, Song Jue, is a superior cultivator. He knows about the Melting Bone Palm in a certain extent, so he immediately confirmed that Ye Xiao was hit by the Melting Bone Palm. However, he didn't know it well enough. He thought somebody did it then and there. He started to accused those people from different houses. Those people knew that things were going astray, so they all left. Apparently, that wouldn't be the end of this thing... At least the House of Ye has sent a carrier pigeon to inform Ye Nantian...”

Guan Zhengwen spoke seriously, “Song Jue has aimed at those houses. The only thing we need to worry about is that there may be someone who knows well about the Melting Bone Palm. I think Ye Nantian would investigate on this after he returns... There is plenty of time before he receives the message and return to the capital. As long as we can do something during this time... I believe your highness know what I mean.”

The Crown Prince nodded and said, “That's true. What a close one. I never expected things could go so well for us. As long as we handle everything well, the result might even make Ye Nantian

join and support us... This is such a wonderful thing. The gods are blessing me indeed. The son of the real god always gets the gods' helps."

He stood up and walked around in the study room. He said, "I am going to the royal palace and ask my father to send a doctor to the House of Ye immediately. I should ask the doctor to try his best to keep Ye Xiao alive. It will give Ye Nantian the last chance to see his son alive."

Guan Zhengwen said, "Amazing move!"

If the royal doctor could check Ye Xiao's condition, then he could confirm the reason behind Ye Xiao's wound. After all, the Crown Prince would never doubt Guan Zhengwen, and they could use this opportunity to show benevolence to the Ye Clan and do a great favor for Ye Nantian.

"And then, I will go visit Ye Xiao myself." The Crown Prince said, "I need to show him this. I have to!"

"That's true!" Guan Zhengwen said.

"After that, I need to do something to... Jiang Yuming, the Revenue Minister, and Li Shixiong, the Right Prime Minister. Both of them are my father's men. They have never given me nor the princess any good impression. Besides, they are controlling most of the power and departments in the court. I can't even fight them upfront... The Rites Department... The Rites Minister is my older brother's man..."

“These men are all the Left Prime Minister’s opponents. The Left Prime Minister, Minister Zuo, never gets involved into the affairs among the princes, yet he will have to cooperate with me on this. If I take down these people, he will be the one who gets the biggest profit.”

“As long as I can make a turbulence through this event and make things go bigger, the Left Prime Minister will owe me a big favor.” The Crown Prince’s eyes lit up, “Besides, my visiting Ye Xiao will become a message to the military group... It is that I am trying to get close to the military side and I am being considerate to their families... That is important too.”

“That is truly an unexpected surprise. What happened this time actually had actually worked in our favor!” Guan Zhengwen spoke admiringly, “Your highness is truly smart and wise! Within a few sentences, you have decided the future of the whole world!”

The Crown Prince laughed and said, “Hurry! We don’t have time. I have to go see my father right now!”

Then he just stood up.

“Take care, your highness.” Guan Zhengwen bowed and then left.

Although the Crown Prince had been promising that he would protect Guan Zhengwen, Guan Zhengwen himself knew clearly that he would be the one who would be taking the whole

responsibility this time if things went wrong. Even the king couldn't help him.

However, now he didn't have to worry about that anymore!

Those foppish lads had become the scapegoats for him now!

[I seems it is a good thing that there are some foppish ignorant bastards in the world. They always do something that surprisingly saves your ass when you want them to...]

Guan Zhengwen was happy about it. He felt much relaxed now.

[I don't think the great General Ye will keep his eye on me anymore.]

...

In the royal palace, the king was reading three newly delivered war reports. He was frowning!

Things went bad in the south and Prince Hua-Yang had left for the battle there. Three troops of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng were coming over from the southeast, as well as the union force of the seven barbaric tribes of the south.

That was truly like a huge wave. It was fierce. The south was in a dire situation. Even if Prince Hua-Yang's army arrived in time, the

situation might still remain the same!

Right after Prince Hua-Yang left the capital, there was a new report. The Kingdom of Lan-Feng's troops attacked the west of the Kingdom of Chen. There were 200 thousand men marching over from the west!

...

Chapter 150: The Villain Complained First

The Western General, Wu Gonglie, sent back the war report through the carrier pigeon. It was an urgent situation. Things had yet to begin, but Wu Gonglie seemed to already have great difficulties.

Another urgent report was on the road.

It wasn't the end though.

On the north, the Northern General, Ye Nantian, had been waiting to return to the capital himself...

However, the Northern Wolf Country had gathered hundreds of thousands of men under the support of over a dozen tribes to attack the Kingdom of Chen's northern border. They went wild.

Thus, the war report from the north had come to the king's desk too.

Well, it was luckily good news in this report!

Although it was only a short note, it was delighting at the moment. 'The Northern Wolf is trying so hard to deliver some meat to us. Well then, let me wipe them out once and for all in the coming battle. That will solve the problem here for you, your highness!'

What a great general!

The confidence he held was outstanding. He was truly a reliable man for the kingdom, especially in the current situation.

The king only showed satisfaction when he read the report from the north. He murmured, "How confident he is! How vigorous he is! Only Ye Nantian can talk like this."

He thought for a while and smiled, "I am so lucky to still have Ye Nantian on my side! As long as he stays with me, my kingdom will stay stabilized."

After the report from Ye Nantian, there came another report.

It was from the east, sent by the Eastern General, Gongsun Nu. On the east, the Kingdom of Tian-Yu suddenly gathered their army and set their camps near the frontier. They seemed to be covetous. A big war would start at any second!

The Kingdom of Tian-Yu had gathered over half a million men, and the number was still increasing.

It didn't seem to be a fake attack!

The commander of the army was actually the Hundred Battle God, Zhan Qianshan, who hadn't shown up for five years in the Kingdom of Tian-Yu!

Gong-Sun Nu said in the report, "... If the war breaks out, I will die fighting against them! I will never step back! However, if Zhan Qianshan leads the fight himself, I am afraid my capability is limited. I can only sacrifice my piddling self in the battle to buy some time for your highness to prepare for the next step. If I fail to hold them long enough and the reinforcements can't make it in time, it will be my honor to die fighting, but I am afraid it will be a negative situation for the kingdom..."

In other words, he was saying, "I am absolutely incapable to defeat Zhan Qianshan. I can only try my best to slow him down! If you can, please send me more men. Otherwise, it is going to be really bad..."

Other than the difference between the commanders, they were short in the number of soldiers too. The Kingdom of Tian-Yu had over half a million men, and they were gathering more. The Kingdom of Chen only had Gongsun Nu's Western Army, which only had three hundred thousand soldiers. It was a huge gap.

To move more men from the cities in the Kingdom of Chen to the eastern frontier would at least take twenty days...

No one, not even gods, knew what was going to happen in this twenty days.

However, there was one thing certain. The Hundred Battle God, Zhan Qianshan, would never let this perfect opportunity get away!

So the situation on the east was the worst. It was much tenser than the other three directions. It could collapse at any moment!

In the past, whenever the Kingdom of Tian-Yu used Zhan Qianshan, the Kingdom of Chen would definitely send out Prince Hua-Yang, Su Dingguo. These two men had been fighting each other for decades. There hadn't been a winner. No one knew who was better than the other!

But now... Prince Hua-Yang had marched for the south!

Zhan Qianshan suddenly appeared after five years of absence in the east!

The wealthy and great Kingdom of Chen actually fell into such a dangerous situation within a short period of time!

The king was reading the reports. He was astonished.

His kingdom was under such threatening circumstance for the first time in the history!

"On the south, it is Yang Wanli, the vice-commander of the Global Troop of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. On the west, it is Wenren Jianyin, the main figure in the military and a senior prince of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. On the east, it was the Hundred Battle God, Zhan Qianshan! On the north, it was the union of the fifteen vicious tribes of the steppe, which is led by the Wolf King of the Northern Wolf. The Wolf King is known to have

wonderful foresight. It is difficult..."

The king frowned while looking at the report from the four directions and murmured, "The House of the Chaotic Storm!"

Apparently, the only one who could make the kingdom fall into such a situation was the House of the Chaotic Storm. Things wouldn't go this way if they were not the ones plotting behind all this!

The king stood up and paced around slowly. He took in a long breath and spoke lightly, "Master Bai... is it my kingdom you want? What a shame. The Kingdom of Chen will be the only exception in the history that is going to avoid collapse!"

He kept his hands on his back and raised his eyebrows which were like two Chinese dragons flying on his face! He stood at the window and sneered, "Who says my kingdom has no more great generals? If things really are that bad, I am going to fight myself! So what?"

"Don't forget the only defeat of Zhan Qianshan during his entire life was in my hands!"

He stood there and said blandly, "Go gather all the civil and military officials in the main hall."

"Yes, your highness." Eunuch Wang answered and said, "Your highness, Lord Jiang, the Revenue Minister, has been waiting in

the side hall for a long while."

The king frowned, "He is here? For what?"

Wang said, "It is said he is here for his son. His son got seriously beaten by Lord Ye Xiao, the son of the Northern General. The lad was beaten till his flesh was badly mutilated. It was too horrible to look at. Because of too much damage, he may become crippled..."

The king was furious, "At this very moment? He actually came for such a trivial thing?!"

He was right to get mad about it. At the moment, the kingdom was in danger, yet the Revenue Minister had actually come because of some stupid fight between kids!

But he didn't know how angry Jiang Yuming was when he saw the guards carry his son home who had been beaten so miserably. He came to the Royal Palace straight away because he thought he was an old friend to the king's family. He didn't know Ye Xiao had already been in a coma at the moment though.

The other officials would be cautious to enter the Royal Palace, yet this Lord Jiang felt free to go in and out of the Royal Palace, because of the special relationship between him and the royal family.

Wang said, "Well... I don't know the details yet. That young lord was beaten up so badly..."

Wang and Lord Jiang had known each other for a long time. They both had done favors for each other in the past. Wang knew that Lord Jiang was close to the king, so he spoke something good for Lord Jiang even though the king was mad at him.

The king was in a hurry before he heard Wang. Yet he suddenly stopped and asked, "Oh? Is Ye Xiao okay?"

Wang was stunned.

[It is Jiang Yuming who came to sue.

Besides, it was Jiang Taisui, Jiang Yuming's son who got beaten into a miserable situation!

How come... the king doesn't care about the victim at all, and instead cares about the assailant?

Why?]

He didn't know that Ye Nantian was the only one the king could count on at the moment when the kingdom was in serious danger. If anything happened to Ye Xiao, Ye Nantian would return to the capital immediately, even if it required him to give up the north.

The king knew well about Jiang Yuming. He knew it was probably the villain complaining first, so he thought that if Jiang

Taisui was seriously hurt, Ye Xiao might be worse!

Thinking of this, the king couldn't stop worrying!

"I don't know whether Lord Ye is hurt or not." Wang said, "Basically, since he had the strength to beat somebody up like that, I reckon he must be very healthy..."

The king took a long breath and spoke delightedly, "Good. That's good. As long as he is fine."

Wang couldn't help rolling his eyes up. [The victim is here to cry out his grievances. Yet you are concerned about the assailant? The assailant is fine and you actually feel good about it? 'As long as he is fine'?

Do you have to be relaxed like this... Really?

It seems Lord Jiang isn't that important in the king's heart as I thought. I must have wasted my time doing him the favor this time!]

The king hurried out and said, "Go gather the court. Tell them to come quickly. I will go ask Jiang Yuming what exactly happened to his son, which was created by a lot of men's efforts..."

"Cough..."

Wang was surprised by what the king had said. He felt his throat had suddenly become itchy...

The king felt it lucky that Ye Xiao was ok. [As long as Ye Xiao is fine!

If Ye Xiao was hurt and became crippled...

That will be the most stunning disaster of the kingdom!]

No one knew better than the king about how much Ye Nantian loved his son!

In the past, Ye Nantian had slaughtered millions of men in the battle "alone", for the simple of reason of acquiring some medicine to cure his son. Nobody could stop him in the battle!

He also promised to swear brotherhood with the king and protect the kingdom for twenty years; this was also for his son!

If anything happened to Ye Xiao at this very moment, the king was sure, even if the Northern Wolf sent every man to the battle, even if the kingdom was going to collapse the next moment, Ye Nantian would come back for his son!

The king had been unhappy with this all the time, [Ye Nantian, why do you value your son so much?] However, he had no choice but indulge Ye Nantian.

Thus, at this moment, in the king's mind, bad things could only happen to anyone but Ye Xiao.

...

Chapter 151: You Liar!

The king entered the side hall. He saw Jiang Yuming was there on his knees holding his head up. He had a sullen expression. The moment he saw the king, he burst into tears, "Your Highness, you must make the decision for your humble servant this time..."

Jiang Yuming, although he was the Revenue Minister, still called himself a servant to the king in private. He wanted to show the king how he wouldn't forget the days he served the king. The king was pleased about it though.

The king sighed and thought, [You foolish servant. Your 'son' is just a bastard who doesn't even have a clear identity. Look how you cry like he is your own kin. Do you have to be like this...]

He looked calm though, and he asked, "What are you crying for? Quickly get up and speak."

Jiang Yuming kowtowed and said, "Your highness, I have been truly wronged this time..."

"Just tell me everything." The king showed kindness.

"My beloved son was tortured for no reason outside the south gate by Ye Xiao, son of Ye Nantian... Most of his bones are broken, and he is totally disfigured. His body was covered in blood and flesh. I couldn't even tell any part of him that wasn't lashed. He didn't even look like a human when he was carried home. He is now still in a coma and I am afraid he will die at any moment. Your

Highness, please hold justice for your humble servant and punish the assailant!"

The king was shocked, "How come he got so seriously hurt?"

Jiang Yuming cried, "Your highness, please. He is the only son I have..."

The king twitched his lips. He was rather speechless.

[I know he is the only... urh.. son you have. Well everybody knows about this son of yours...

I was sorry for you a second ago, yet now I have nearly laughed out because of what you said...]

He was about to speak but then he thought of something, "The south gate? Isn't it where Su Dingguo departed from? Why did your... beloved son got beaten there? I was on the wall there, not for long though. After they left, I just returned to the palace. Why didn't I notice the fight?"

Jiang Yuming was stunned and he replied ambiguously, "My son and the boys, they urn... They... must... have arrived at the gate... after Prince Hua-Yang departed... Your highness, you must have already left for the palace. So urn... it is a reasonable situation."

The king frowned tightly, "Your son got there after the army left? And then he got beaten up?"

Jiang Yuming shouted 'Oh Noooo' in mind and said, "Your highness, it was because Ye Xiao was arrogant and domineering. He talked with a dirty mouth and intentionally challenge my son. My son didn't have any other choice but to answer back with some strong words. Yet he ended up beaten up bad by Ye Xiao and now he may die for it. Your highness... Please... I need justice..."

While speaking, he shouted and got down on the floor. He couldn't stop crying and said, "Looking at my son suffering such pain... My heart is broken..."

At this moment, a voice sounded coldly, "You liar."

The king was stunned. Jiang Yuming who was on the floor was shocked too. He suddenly forget to cry and turned around his head to look for the person who spoke.

At the door of the side hall, the Crown Prince was stepping in with big strides, "Father, it is an emergency, so I didn't send people to inform you of my arrival. Please forgive me."

The king frowned and said blandly, "What is it so urgent?"

The Crown Prince talked hurriedly, "Father, I don't have the time to explain. Please send a royal doctor to the house of the great General Ye. His son, Ye Xiao, is at a critical situation. If we do it later... I am afraid he may die."

"What?" Jiang Yuming was blank all of a sudden when he heard it. He couldn't help but scream out.

[My son is in coma now at home because of being beaten up by Ye Xiao. How come Ye Xiao is in vital danger now?

What happened?]

To his surprise, the king lost the color of his face when he heard it. It was totally a different reaction when he heard Jiang Taisui was beaten up by Ye Xiao.

- Puff! - The king stood up fast and shouted with furiousness, "What? What happened?"

He didn't wait for the Crown Prince's response. He just went on shouting, "Go get Doctor Li, Doctor Huang! Tell them to go to the House of Ye immediately! Without delay!"

He didn't stop shouting, "Tell Master Sun to go tell the doctors to keep Ye Xiao alive at any cost!"

And then, "Tell the Interior Minister to open the storehouse. Send all the best medical materials to the House of Ye! Whatever it needs to cure Ye Xiao, just use without asking!"

[What?]

Jiang Yuming was shocked and frightened.

He had served the king since he was a child. He was a good friend to the king and that was why he knew so much about everything about the king. It was also the reason why he could stay safe in the royal court after countless times of embezzlements and punishments.

He knew that Doctor Li and Doctor Huang were the best royal doctors. They only accept people in the royal family as their patients. Even the king's concubines couldn't casually see them as they wished. People all behaved politely in front of these doctors.

Master Sun was the royal dan-maker the royal family specially hired. He usually only served the king. Even the Crown Prince needed the permission from the king to see Master Sun...

Yet when the king heard that Ye Xiao was in danger, he just sent three of his most important men for it.

And he actually said that all the medical materials could be used without permissions!

Whatever was stored in the royal storehouse were all extremely rare and valuable materials. Any of them was a priceless treasure. Yet now whatever Ye Xiao might need, it could be used without any hesitation!

All these things showed one thing clearly to Jiang Yuming - Ye

Xiao couldn't die.

[If Ye Xiao couldn't die, then...]

He didn't dare to think deeper about it. He knew well that the king could be ruthless.

The king didn't show his ruthlessness to him yet, but another person did it first.

The Crown Prince just took some breath and he looked at Jiang Yuming coldly, "Lord Jiang, how can you confound right and wrong and turn white into black like this?"

Jiang Yuming was scared, "Why do you say so, your highness? How did I exactly confound right and wrong?"

The Crown Prince spoke indifferently, "Well. Lord Jiang, you connived at the violence of your son, yet now you come here to sue the victim first. You tried to confound right and wrong. What exactly do you want?"

Jiang Yuming was extremely wronged and he said, "I really don't understand any of your words, your highness. The truth is Ye Xiao has beaten up my son nearly to death. There were many people from other officials' families. They can prove it!"

The Crown Prince spoke coldly, "Lord Jiang, answer me. Prince Hua-Yang left for the battle in order to protect the our kingdom,

our home. Why didn't your son see him off? Well maybe your son just doesn't love his country. That's fine. Why did he ride a horse with a group of people to where the army just left and acted arrogantly like that? Was he trying to show how magnificent his family was and how his family overrode the kingdom?"

Jiang Yuming was stunned, "Your... Your highness... Why do you..."

The Crown Prince seemed to make things sound much more serious. He actually made it look like something about national crime and security.

Well, he wasn't done yet.

He waved his hand and continued, "It is fine that your son didn't see the warriors off. Yet he thought that the military group had no leader in the capital, so he arranged some lads claiming they were going to get the junior generations of the military group. Am I wrong?"

Jiang Yuming was extremely scared. He shouted, "Your highness, you can't speak of it like this. It was merely..."

The king's eyes had become extremely cold at the moment.

The Crown Prince stepped closer and interrupted, "We all know what happened. Not only the two sides of the quarrel saw the whole thing. The guards on the wall knew clearly about the truth

too. You said those foppish lads could prove it. I just want you to know that there are thousands of people there who can prove that you are lying! Do you really think your baby son is wronged now?!"

The king was calm. He was listening with a cold expression.

"The soldiers left for the battle to protect our home with their blood and lives. Yet your son actually led a bunch of people to bully their families... Lord Jiang, I wonder how you dare to see my father now. And I wonder how you can be so shameless to reverse right and wrong here. How can you do this?"

The Crown Prince pushed him hard through scolding.

Jiang Yuming felt a bit dizzy and said, "Your highness... What shame do I have? My son is still lying at home not knowing whether he will live or die... I can't lie about that, can I..."

He was truly confused, [I wasn't told Ye Xiao got beaten! And... Why does the Crown Prince keep aiming at me today?

He is offending a main official in the court now. That doesn't seem what he usually will do...]

"I don't care whether your son is going to die or live. He deserves to die anyway." The Crown Prince showed no mercy. He just took his stand immediately.

At the moment, the Crown Prince was somehow full of the aura

of a dominator.

[What happened to Ye Xiao should actually be my responsibility. Now there is a stupid one who is going to be the scapegoat. I have to make sure of it.]

"Lord Jiang, answer me! Your son, Jiang Taisui, brought a group of others outside the city right before Prince Hua-Yang left. You guys claimed that you were going to get on Ye Xiao and his friends. There were thousands of people there who can prove it! Do you really think your son is wronged now?"

The Crown Prince spoke coldly.

"Well... Well..."

Jiang Yuming lost his ability to speak. He was astonished.

He had truly never thought that the Crown Prince would do this to him. He felt like the Crown Prince was going to push him to the edge.

The Crown Prince repeated the same question again and again...

He kept emphasizing his point again and again...

...

Chapter 152: The Thunder-like Anger!

The Crown Prince was a fool who kept repeating the same words for nothing. He was trying to notice the king... [This is a serious problem!]

Jiang Yuming thought that the Crown Prince was going to get him killed today...

[But when did I offend the Crown Prince? Did I mess with him somehow? A prince who is going to be the king actually treats me like that...]

"Your son and his group teased and bullied Ye Xiao and his friend's outside the southern gate. Is your baby son wronged?"

"Prince Hua-Yang had just left and your son, Jiang Taisui, actually talked dirty to the little princess of the House of Hua-Yang. Is your son wronged?" The Crown Prince kept pushing him to the edge.

Jiang Yuming couldn't find the words to retort the Crown Prince.

He knew that his son could have actually done those things.

"The warriors fight for the kingdom. Your son fools around in the capital. He actually got out and bullied the warriors' families right after they left. Isn't it insulting the warriors who are now shedding their blood to protect you?"

"When the soldiers are disappointed, who will protect the land of our kingdom?"

The Crown Prince was harsh.

Jiang Yuming felt like he would be wronged to death this time. [Wasn't it always a children's fight between the lads? They had done it before, hadn't they? Why are you being so harsh on it this time and keep dragging it to the national level?]

"When the two groups of lads met. One group were moaning in heart because their families had just left to a life and death battle. Yet your son's group acted arrogantly and humiliated people as they wish..." The Crown Prince spoke coldly, "Nobody could stand it. Isn't it?"

"So they got into a fight. Your son was hurt. That's true. But wasn't he asking for it? He viciously offended people and ended up being badly beaten. It was just simply because he was lame. The one who humiliates people will always get humiliated!" The Crown Prince humphed and said, "Besides, although your son is hurt, he is not in a critical condition, as far as I know. Ye Xiao's bones are all smashed! He is stepping into the door of the heavens right now and you actually dare to reverse right and wrong here!"

The Crown Prince had made Jiang Yuming lower his head.

While he just wanted to say something, he heard the king asked in concern, "What? What did you say? His bones are all smashed?"

Were you talking about Ye Xiao?"

The Crown Prince turned to the king and spoke respectfully, "Yes, father. I didn't see him myself. But I was told so. It can't be false... Because there was actually a superior cultivator among the group of Jiang Taisui. He secretly hit Ye Xiao with the long lost martial art, the vicious Melting Bone Palm."

"What? The Melting Bone Palm?" The king had once cultivated martial arts before. He knew about the Melting Bone Palm, so his face turned pale because of fear.

These three words meant death.

"After Ye Xiao was hit, it didn't act up immediately. When he returned to the city and just got near his house, he suddenly fell down off the horse. He bled badly and his bones all turned soft like cotton."

The Crown Prince sighed, "Now he is in coma. He seems to be only a breathing corpse..."

The House of Ye had sent the pigeon to the north to inform General Ye. He may be able to see his son for the last time."

The Crown Prince saw the king was actually shaking.

The king's face was all pale.

He had always been a tough guy, yet at this moment, he couldn't help staggering. He couldn't even stand stably. He staggered and nearly fell on the floor. He hurriedly held the table to keep his boy stable. His legs, however, were weak. He sat straight down on the chair gasping.

"Are you alright, father?" The Crown Prince was in a panic. He hurriedly stepped over.

The king's condition rather surprised the Crown Prince. [How come? It shouldn't be!]

The king gasped and then smiled bitterly, "I think it must be the gods' will. The gods want my kingdom to collapse."

Jiang Yuming and the Crown Prince were both frightened.

[Why did you say that, your highness?]

The king closed his eyes. He seemed tired. He rubbed his head. He looked extremely weak and tired at the moment. He couldn't even disguise it.

The Crown Prince was astonished at this moment.

Since he was a baby, the king was like a great mountain to him. The king had held up the whole kingdom through countless storms

and misfortunes. He never showed the look he was showing right now.

The Crown Prince was scared.

After a while, the king opened his eyes slowly and murmured, "The Melting Bone Palm... It is incurable... He is in a coma... He is going to die soon... They have sent a pigeon to the Great General... He will come back to see his beloved son for the last time..."

And then he laughed weirdly and spoke coldly, "Great. How amazing!"

It looked like his hopes were all blasted apart.

He knew that when the pigeon arrived at the north, no matter what Ye Nantian was working on, he would leave everything behind and return for his son.

He wouldn't even waste a second.

[Well then... What about the war in the north?

The only firm and safe place along the border of the kingdom is going to be the first broken breach?]

He opened his eyes and looked at Jiang Yuming expressionless. He sounded calm and peaceful, "Jiang Yuming, you should go

home now."

Jiang Yuming was frightened, "Your highness... Your... Your health..."

The king spoke gently like he was whispering. What he said was, however, frightening, "You spoil your son. That's fine... Your son is foppish, useless, arrogant and wild. Ok. Fine. I don't care... Yet he actually acted with the temper of such a bastard while dealing with the national affairs... That was..."

He deserves to die! Jiang Yuming, you get the fxck out of here! I don't want to see you again!"

Jiang Yuming moved forward a bit on his knees and begged, "Your highness... Your highness, please... Please..."

The king closed his eyes and shouted all of a sudden, "I told you to get the fxck out! Are you deaf?!"

The shout had nearly dislodged the soul out of Jiang Yuming. Even the Crown Prince felt a bit dizzy.

At the moment, the king's eyes were full of disgust while looking at Jiang Yuming.

Jiang Yuming tried to say something. The king shouted loudly, "Somebody come! Drag him out!"

A few eunuchs came over and dragged Jiang Yuming who had been scared and become like a puddle of mud out of the hall.

Jiang Yuming was confused and blank. [What on earth happened? Why did the king do this to me? We are good friends, aren't we?]

To be honest, Jiang Yuming was absolutely loyal to the king. That was why the king had been valuing him all the time.

However... What happened today...

Jiang Yuming was limp and feeble outside the hall. He felt like he just had a nightmare back there.

...

It was in the main hall again.

"Father, what happened to you? Why did you..." The Crown Prince was rubbing the king's head gently. His voice was full of worry and concern.

He was eager for the crown indeed, yet he was still frightened by how his father was ill now.

"What happened? Look at them yourself." The king pointed at

the reports on the table.

The Crown Prince picked them up and started to read. When he read the first one, he exclaimed. When he finished the four reports, his face had turned all pale.

"I have never thought that Jiang Yuming would have caused such a disaster for our kingdom..." The king spoke with hatred, "I should have killed his whole clan when that thing happened. I was soft-hearted. I kind of cherished the friendship between us and I have kept him alive till now. Now my stupid mercy has led to the collapse of my kingdom. A king should never have friends indeed."

The Crown Prince had totally lost the vigor he showed just now. He was now blank.

He was scared. He surely was.

The four sides of the kingdom were all facing wars at the same time.

The enemies in four sides were all strong ones. Enemies in each side had a commander who was at the equal range as Prince Hua-Yang, the invincible War God.

That was truly the most dangerous situation the Kingdom of Chen had ever faced.

It just broke out like this quietly.

And Ye Xiao was down at the very moment.

Ye Nantian would definitely leave the battle once he knew what happened to his son.

That meant they had already lost the battle in the north.

The Crown Prince was extremely astonished knowing the current situation.

He was so regretful. He thought that he shouldn't have listened to his wife and planned on killing Ye Xiao.

However, nobody had expected a foppish young lord in town would have made a great impact to the war.

It was unbelievable and incomprehensible, but Ye Xiao had actually made such a weird thing to happen. It was as if the most unreasonable thing could only happen on Ye Xiao.

The king gradually regained his composure. He frowned and looked at the Crown Prince. His eyes were full of inspection and he asked calmly, "My son, you seem to care much about this thing."

The Crown Prince was stunned and then immediately responded, "It concerns the safety of the entire kingdom. Now it is the troubled time. I am indeed worried about it."

The king nodded.

They both knew that he wasn't really answering the question, yet the king didn't want to dig deeper about it anymore.

...

Chapter 153: A Provocateur!

The king was just asking. The biggest problem he was worried about was the fact that the kingdom was surrounded in four directions.

He looked at the other three reports before looking back to the one from the north and spoke blandly, “The situations on these three sides seem to be a coincidence. They actually happened at the same time... I reckon the four armies have been plotting on this long ago.

That means we may need to face the united force of the whole Land of Han-Yang this time. And we can't count on the northern army, because Ye Nantian will definitely leave the battle. The whole northern army is going to break down.

The war has just begun, yet our best force is going to collapse soon.”

The king spoke slowly. The Crown Prince was getting more and more hopeless. The pressure of knowing they were going to the end of the kingdom had made him feel breathless.

Besides, he was one who was responsible for all of this.

That was lifting a rock and dropping it on his own foot

He had actually hit himself into a cripple.

Unlike the Crown Prince, the king was rather calm. He talked peacefully like nothing serious was happening.

It seemed all the negative situations couldn't threaten his kingdom at all. It was like the kingdom would firmly stay under his control again.

“When Prince Hua-Yang left, the reports came. They are doing really good in controlling the timing. They actually started the battle after Prince Hua-Yang left, because they had considered the time it took for the soldiers to send the report back to the capital. That was a rigorous plan. Right after the army departed, the three reports came to me and struck my heart.

The departure date of Hua-Yang was the top secret of the kingdom. Yet our enemies knew about it. Well, there is a provocateur in our court.”

The king's eyes lit up.

“A provocateur?” The Crown Prince was shocked and he looked at his father.

“Yes. So our plans, whatever we discussed in the court, were never secrets to our enemies.” The king spoke blandly, “That is why we suddenly fell into such a miserable situation.

Four sides burst into wars at the same time. Two War Gods

showed up for the war at the same time. Dozens of the southern tribes and thousands of the northern grassland tribes all turned up against us. It takes a lot of time to arrange such battles.

To organize these forces and persuade them to attack as a union should at least take half a year in preparations. During the six months, our spies around the world actually failed to get any information about it. That is a big problem.

Everything I said proves that our enemy is thoughtful, careful and foxy. They are obviously controlling many people in our kingdom including some important officials in the court. Yet our men can never get to know anything about these men's true identities. That is really a horrible force.

Facing such a force, who has such a perfect plan, our kingdom is truly in great danger this time. They tried so hard to set this thing up against us. That means they wants to defeat us in a short time once and for all."

The king's thoughts were sharp like knives.

"So what we need to to, or can do, is to buy more time and wait for the opportunity to show up in our side." The king had come up with his plan, "So even if we need to sacrifice men's lives, we have to keep holding the war. We have to try everything we can to buy the time for us.

As long as we can make it last over one and a half year, half of their united force will collapse." The king looked outside the

window and spoke blandly, “War is simply a competition of money. The tribes in the north and the south are always poor. They have no capability to arrange a big-range battle. They can only make some assaults every now and then to get resources. The other two kingdoms are absolutely funding those tribes.

It won't last forever. Unless they both want to become broken kingdoms themselves.

Time.

That's what we need. That's the key.

As long as the war lasts long enough, the unfair resource allocation will eventually arouse fights among them. They will start to fight against each other... That is our opportunity. We need to wait for the occurrence of their infightings and that will bring us the opportunity to fight back.”

Every word the king said was filled with a dense killing intent. His voice was firm and his eyes were sharp.

There was, however, a big concern in his mind. It was Ye Nantian.

At the moment, the pigeon had been sent by the House of Ye. Ye Nantian would return soon. The north battle had been the safest side of the kingdom. If Ye Nantian left, the northern army could only keep defending and it wouldn't last long.

The key was Ye Xiao. If Ye Xiao was alright, Ye Nantian would return to the battle. No matter how bad it was, once Ye Nantian returned, then victory was already certain.

But if Ye Xiao was dead, they were doomed to lose the northern battle.

The king frowned and murmured, “There must be some rather wise people in the enemy’s side. Things about Ye Nantian are the key issues about this war. They must have thought about it! And it must be the most difficult thing for them to deal with Ye Nantian.

They all knew the most powerful general in our kingdom was not Hua-Yang. It was Ye Nantian.

So... that fight outside the city gate... Was it a plot? They did it purposely in order to deal with Ye Nantian? So that they could collapse our northern force?”

The king’s eyes were extremely cold.

The Crown Prince was sweating badly.

At the moment, Eunuch Wang spoke outside, “Your highness, the officials are here outside the hall.”

It was the afternoon.

The king replied, “Tell them to wait for me in the Cheng-Tian Hall.”

And then he talked to the Crown Prince, “You come with me.”

Then he walked out with big strides.

The Crown Prince answered him humbly and then followed him out.

Looking at his father’s back, the Crown Prince was touched.

He had always felt that his father walked too fast. Even though he looked vigorous with his big strides, it lacked of a sense of liberty. He thought a king should have a sense of liberty.

Yet now he knew that the liberty hidden inside his father was far more than he could compare to.

When the war was entering a hopeless situation, the king still walked firmly and steadily with big strides. He just looked the same as he usually was.

He was like a moving huge mountain, holding all the storms from all directions.

He took them all.

It was in the Cheng-Tian Hall.

The king was sitting in his throne looking down at the officials calmly.

The officials had been in great confusion.

The officials just got the information a bit later than the king. They all knew about what was going on now.

The wars in four sides were going to burst out in any second.

It made them all worried like their hearts were burning.

They all understood one thing. [There wouldn't be an unbroken egg in a collapsed nest.](#)

The king calmly watched them talking for a while and then spoke blandly, "Silence."

The officials shut up immediately.

The king stood up with his hands on his back. He looked down and said, "The Right Prime Minister, Lord Li, Lord Tao, Tao Juze... And..."

He named six officials.

They stepped forward immediately and humbly waited for the king's words. They looked panic. Apparently, they had thought about what the king wanted to say to them.

“You guys haven't done good in disciplining your junior generations. Your boys mess around and ignore the national affairs. My soldiers are fighting with blood and lives in the frontlines, yet your boys tried to bully their families... Do you admit your mistakes?”

The king's voice was calm and peaceful, yet the raging anger inside his tone was clearly heard by everyone.

The officials all knew about what had happened outside the city gate. They knew what severe consequence it had brought to the kingdom.

Normally, such things like foppish young lords messing around with each other would never trouble the king. He didn't like it, but he wouldn't care much about it. Yet this time, such a thing had a negative impact on the kingdom's future.

The other officials gloated, [They are truly unlucky, aren't they, the Right Prime Ministers? Ha. What can they possibly say?]

The officials including the Right Prime Minister immediately kneeled down and said, “We do. Please punish us, your highness.”

They asked for punishments, because they actually thought that the king wouldn't really punish them for some fights among the boys. It would just be a light punishment if the king really wanted it.

However, the king's voice suddenly became extremely cold.

...

There wouldn't be an unbroken egg in a collapsed nest (覆巢之下无完卵), when an organization collapsed, no one inside the organization can stay fine from it.

Chapter 154: The Royal Doctors Arrived

"Since you admitted your mistakes, bear the punishment then. From now on, you people will return to your place and stay there. You are not allowed to step outside your house and get involved in any form of politics. You are not allowed to contact anybody. Whoever violated my order, his whole clan should be wiped out."

The officials were all stunned.

The officials who were kneeling on the floor were shaking. They raised their heads and said unbelievably, "Your highness..."

"Drag them out!" The king's eyes were full of coldness, yet at the same time, there was a slight sense of sadness.

These men were all important figures in the court. If there was a provocateur in the court, he must be one of these men.

Although it was just some foolish fight among some foppish lads, it actually mattered at times.

The army had just left and the capital was in the weakest moment. The military families felt mostly unsafe at the moment. Yet they actually stirred up troubles at the very moment.

It happened right before the three reports were received.

How could the king not suspect there was a scheme about this fight.

Besides, it was the most dangerous moment when the kingdom was surrounded by powerful enemies. The king wouldn't use people that he didn't fully trust at the moment. He didn't dare to keep these men in the court now.

There were some of them who were wronged though.

The king had no other choices.

If these men were not such important figures in the court, the king would have killed them already. It was the fast and simple way after all.

These men couldn't believe it, and the other officials were surprised. The guards came in and dragged these old officials out like tigers dragging rabbits.

"Okay. Now we discuss about the situation about the four battles." The king spoke like nothing had happened, "You can express your thoughts without hesitations. Let's find out a way to defend our kingdom..."

...

It was in the House of Ye.

Ye Xiao was lying in bed. He looked "extremely miserable" at the moment. His body was soft and it seemed as though he had no bones at all.

Song Jue was also extremely "upset". He sat beside Ye Xiao with a dark face.

Unlike these two "talented actors", some blood guards kept pacing around the house with concerns. They were truly worried though.

"How is it?" Song Jue asked quietly as nobody was around.

Ye Xiao, who should be in coma right now, slightly opened his eyes and said, "Don't worry. It's fine. Everything is under control."

They both didn't know what result their acting had brought about this time though.

However, the forces against the military group in the court had been way too strong for a long time. It was time to do some change about it anyway. It could at least make military people feel settled after this.

"However, I think it is going to happen when your father comes back... As time goes by, I don't think there will be many of them who are going to get demoted." Song Jue spoke, "But we are definitely going to escape the crisis though."

"It isn't a sure thing though." Ye Xiao answered.

"What? You mean those guys still dare to mess with you even though you are already living corpse like this?" Song Jue was surprised.

Ye Xiao smiled, "No. I have never worried about what happened today. As for weakening the opponent forces, we may not be able to do much about it, but the Crown Prince will do it for us."

"The Crown Prince?" Song Jue was disdainful, "That's impossible. He wishes you to die quickly. How will he help you? Don't forget the Melting Bone Palm on you was from his man."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Of course he won't help us weaken the political group. He will try to get rid of people who didn't support him. If he doesn't knock those men down, how can he pass the buck to them? He may weaken our opponents coincidentally. It is reasonable."

Song Jue was stunned. He couldn't react yet.

Ye Xiao smiled lightly and said blandly, "Uncle Song, you... You are cute. How can you still not understand? The Crown Prince has to make sure that somebody will take the responsibility for messing me up, so that he can act like he didn't do anything to me... The case about his brother-in-law is not passed yet, remember?"

Song Jue was enlightened. He said with praises, "You little kid. You are really getting smarter and smarter. It is a pity that you don't want to get in the court. You are really good at setting people up... What do you mean 'cute'? Don't describe me like that! How can you call me cute?"

Ye Xiao twitched his mouth trying not to laugh loudly.

They didn't expect that the king was helping them weaken their opponents in the court this time.

At the moment, footsteps could be heard outside as a blood guard shouted, "Chief! There are royal doctors from the royal palace here. They are here to see the young master."

Ye Xiao naturally "passed out" again. Song Jue made an 'emotional face' immediately and spoke in a deep voice, "Lead them in quickly."

He sounded like he was in a haste.

It looked like he had been waiting for the doctor for a long time.

Some figures flashed outside and Song Jue hurried to the door. He opened the door and spoke with worry, "Doctors, please come in."

His eyes suddenly lit up and he said happily, "Master Sun, you are here too! Great! That's great! Come in, please!"

The three of them all knew it was an urgent situation, so they didn't say anything useless. They entered the room immediately.

They just entered the room yet the dense smell of medicine had already bombarded their nose.

The well-known Lord Ye was lying in bed like a pile of mud.

They all felt bad when they saw Ye Xiao's posture.

They had seen countless dead men, and among them, some were punched to death, some were stabbed to death, and some died from diseases. They simply knew every kind of death... At the moment when they saw Ye Xiao, they knew he was going to die soon.

It was hopeless to bring him back.

Everyone needed the bones to support his body. Even those who were about to die, they were supported by the bones.

Yet Ye Xiao was now all collapsed.

He looked so bad without bones.

Doctor Li didn't dare to waste time. He put down the case he had been holding and sat on the edge of the bed to check Ye Xiao's pulse. Doctor Li was famous for his capability in checking the pulse. He was the best on it among all the other royal doctors. He was also good at treating internal injuries.

It wasn't a good time to chat now.

He put his fingers on Ye Xiao's wrist to feel Ye Xiao's pulse. His face suddenly turned dark.

Doctor Huang hurriedly took out papers. He already held a brush pen. He had worked with Doctor Li for his whole life. He knew what to do now.

Doctor Li spoke while he was checking Ye Xiao's pulse, "... The Jing and Mai are broken."

The first thing he said made Doctor Huang's hand shake. And then Doctor Huang wrote it down on the paper.

"The abdomen is empty. The heart barely beats. The lung is working weakly... The bones..." Doctor Li sighed and said, "Are mostly damaged... In fact, they are nearly melted."

"It was like some ice being heated by the sunlight. Even though he can still hold it for a while, it is just a matter of time before he will finally die with all his bones melted."

Doctor Li closed his eyes and sighed to the sky, "This injury... Should be..."

He looked at Doctor Huang and both of them nodded and said, "The Melting Bone Palm. An extremely vicious martial art in the martial world. It should have been lost for a long time."

Song Jue asked with a shaking voice, "Is it really that serious... Then... Will he be fine?"

Doctor Li and Doctor Huang shook their heads with both their faces dark. Doctor Li sighed, "The injury has reached the current stage. There is no cure for it now. Even anyone who is like a god in the medical area can't do anything about it."

Song Jue gasped with hopeless breath. He asked stubbornly, "Isn't there... Isn't there anything we can at least try?"

Doctor Li turned to Master Sun and spoke sincerely, "That should be answered by Master Sun now. If he doesn't have any suggestions, then..."

He didn't finish his words, because he didn't need to.

Master Sun moved to the bed and sat on the place where Doctor Li had sat when Doctor Li just stood up. His hands were like talons. He held Ye Xiao's wrist.

He closed his eyes.

And then the other three who stood in the room felt an extremely strong power waving in the air. A blue color which was like the ocean fully covered Ye Xiao and Master Sun.

Song Jue was stunned.

This Master Sun turned out to be a superior cultivator at the Grandmaster Level of Sky Origin Stage. He seemed to be much more powerful than Guan Zhengwen.

There were truly full of superior masters in the royal palace.

People always said, "whoever does the best in martial arts should be sold to the royal palace". There were indeed many great cultivators in the royal palace.

In the past, Song Jue had placed such people in his sight. Yet now maybe Master Sun didn't look at him in sight.

"It is the injury of the Melting Bone Palm indeed." Master Sun talked with a rough voice without turning his head, "I don't have anything good to deal with it. I can merely keep this lad alive though... If you want this lad to recover to the time he was before, it is as difficult as bringing the dead to life. Only the Nine Turning Dan can do it..."

That meant Ye Xiao's death was already certain.

The Nine Turning Dan was the top-class priceless treasure even in the Qing-Yun Realm. In this mortal world, it had never shown up in even billions of years. It was simply something that didn't exist.

"Right. If we use medicines and dan beads together, it might bring about some efficacy." Master Sun blinked his eyes and talked to Song Jue, "Steward..."

...

Chapter 155: Ye Xiao Will Die!

Song Jue answered at once, "My name is Song. Master Sun, please feel free to talk."

Master Sun kept quiet for a while and said, "We will naturally do whatever we can to save him. However, even if we are doing our best, we can only keep Lord Ye alive for ten days! Keeping him alive these ten days will take a huge price! There are some decisions we don't dare to make, to be honest."

Song Jue said, "What do you mean, Master Sun?"

Master Sun drew back his hand and closed his eyes. He said, "The problem is... Hmm... Doctor Huang, could you please hurry to the Royal Palace and ask his highness whether he could give us the supreme dan bead. I know the king has told me not to ask for any permission for using anything in the royal stock, yet the supreme dan is really too important. I am afraid I have to ask the his highness!"

Doctor Huang was surprised!

The supreme dan!

[The mysterious supreme medical material can merely bring ten days for the dying Lord Ye!

How can the king possibly agree?

It should be used to the king during the most dangerous time of the kingdom!]

Master Sun opened his eyes and said, "Go quickly!"

Doctor Huang was a bit upset and he said, "Fine. I am on it now."

"If the king does agree. Ask him to send some superior cultivators of the palace to deliver the supreme dan bead. We must keep the dan bead safe on the way." Master Sun spoke lightly, "Remember, you only have three hours. Within three hours, I will use the pure spiritual qi that I cultivated with my life to keep Lord Ye alive. If the dan bead doesn't arrive in time, he will die. Even the supreme dan bead can't save him after three hours!"

Doctor Huang promised and left right away.

Song Jue was already yelling outside, "Prepare the horse! Quick! The fastest one!"

Doctor Huang hurried off. He was confused, [The supreme dan bead is extremely priceless. How come Master Sun was so sure that the king will possibly take it out for the lad?]

...

It was in the House of Ye.

The blue aura appeared again. Master Sun operated his martial arts so he could stabilize Ye Xiao's condition.

"Doctor Li, when I am exhaling qi, please do your 13 Soul Healing Needles on Lord Ye!"

Master Sun asked Doctor Li.

"Ok."

Both of their faces were dark and solemn at the moment. They were doing everything they could to keep Ye Xiao alive for the next three hours.

As the trusted subordinates of the king, they knew that Ye Xiao's life was concerning the future of the kingdom!

If they saved Ye Xiao, they saved the kingdom!

If Ye Xiao died, the north of the kingdom would immediately fall in imminent disaster!

The feet of the grassland wolves would step onto the wonderful land of the Kingdom of Chen.

Doctor Huang was moving fast on the horse. He directly entered the Royal Palace.

He came straight to the Cheng-Tian Hall, yet he was stopped by the guards. The king was discussing with the officials at the moment, so he couldn't be disturbed.

Doctor Huang was like burning in anxiety. He asked the guards to inform the king quickly. After a short while, Eunuch Wang rushed out.

"Gonggong, Master Sun said... the supreme dan bead is required to cure Ye Xiao... That..." Doctor Huang still felt it ridiculous to ask the king for the supreme dan bead.

Ye Xiao was merely the son of a general after all.

Even if Ye Nantian was injured, the king might not take our the supreme dan bead for him. Yet he had to do it, because Master Sun had asked him to.

Master Sun was one of the most important figures in the Royal Palace after all!

Eunuch Wang didn't hesitate and went straight back to the hall. After a while, he came out again and said, "I will go to the House of Ye with you."

Doctor Huang looked at Eunuch Wang confusedly.

Eunuch Wang frowned while looking at him and finally added, "The supreme dan bead is with me right now. Come on."

Doctor Huang was stunned!

[What the hell is going on?

Is it really this easy?

Ye Xiao was injured and now he needs the supreme dan bead. Ok I got it. How come the king just gave out our the supreme dan bead so quickly?!

What does that mean?

Even the Crown Prince has never been treated that kindly, I am afraid!]

Doctor Huang couldn't help guessing, [Could this Ye Xiao be the secret son of the king? So he boiled him over the Crown Prince?!]

Eunuch Wang saw him stunned. He felt impatient, so he coughed heavily.

Doctor Huang finally came back to his senses after hearing that cough.

They hurried back to the House of Ye.

When they arrived, two hours had passed.

Master Sun placed the dan bead into Ye Xiao's mouth immediately. The Soul Healing Needles stayed on Ye Xiao's body. Master Sun operated his power in full range to accelerate the effect of the dan bead...

After a long time, something had finally changed with Ye Xiao's soft body which looked like a corpse.

The breath of Ye Xiao became heavier and mightier. His chest began to move along with his breath...

Yet that was all.

Nothing else happened.

Doctor Huang was more confused now, [We have used such a precious supreme dan bead on him. It is fine if it can save him, but if it just makes him breath for a more few hours, isn't it a waste of the fine dan bead?

That is... That is more than simply wasting.]

"We have done what we can." Master Sun hit on Ye Xiao and delivered a stream of purple qi into Ye Xiao's head. He seemed

exhausted, and he is all wet with sweat. He spoke to Song Jue, "It will keep him alive at least till the General Ye is back... I really have done everything I can. Sorry."

Song Jue took a deep breath and said, "It is more than enough already. Thank you. Thanks a lot."

Eunuch Wang looked at Song Jue with his sharp eyes and spoke blandly, "Do you think... the man who used the Melting Bone Palm can cure it?"

Song Jue spoke with hatred, "It must be those foppish bastards! We will take revenge!"

Eunuch Wang was quiet for a while and said, "The first thing we should do is to save Lord Ye. It will be better if you think about other issues later."

Song Jue sneered and didn't reply.

Eunuch Wang spoke, "The injury of the Melting Bone Plam seems really strange though... The man who did it must not be very powerful, because he cannot delay the day of its activation. However, when it is checked deeper, Lord Ye looks like he was hit for several days though. That really confuses me."

Song Jue spoke coldly, "When our great general comes back, he will have conclusions!"

Eunuch Wang sighed. He was a superior cultivator himself. He knew about the Melting Bone Palm. He said what he had said because he wished that things could be different. He knew that if it didn't involved those important officials who were the important men of the king, maybe the current situation wouldn't be so bad.

When they left, Eunuch Wang and Master Sun discussed about it for a long time.

"It is absolutely a grievous injury."

"That's right."

"Ye Xiao took the supreme dan bead. Yet he is going to die anyway."

"That's true."

"But was the injury really caused today?"

"I have no idea. It is hard to tell though."

"If it wasn't today, who did it to him?"

"Heh, heh."

"If it was today, among those houses, who did it?"

"Heh, heh."

And then they were silent.

"The Crown Prince was a bit strange today. He wasn't his usual self." Eunuch Wang said.

"Oh?"

"It seems normal that he would accuse Lord Jiang when Lord Jiang was down. But what he did went too far."

"And your point is?"

"I don't have a point."

"I see. If there is a suspicious point towards a man whom you shouldn't suspect, then it is better ignore the suspicious point."

"That's right."

"Then those houses?"

"They are dead meat!"

"So be it then!"

...

Ye Xiao was lying in bed like a dead body. There was only a small bit of spiritual qi supporting his body right now. Even his soul seemed to have disappeared.

In fact, he was inside the boundless Space.

He was inside the Sky Space at the moment.

Ye Xiao sat beside the Cosmic Hades. He was absorbing the gelid qi from the Cosmic Hades with huge efforts. The gelid qi burst out, not because of the gelid qi overflowed, nor because of the spiritual jade; it was caused by an egg!

It surely meant that egg!

Since the egg manned up the other day and fiercely put down Gu Jin-Long and absorbed his soul, it entered a weird mode!

Ye Xiao reckoned that the egg must be positively full because it had never eaten anything better than Gu Jinlong's powerful soul before.

It was like a snake swallowing an elephant. That was why there was occasionally some energy coming out of the egg. These energy

somehow activated the Cosmic Hades and made it burst out with gelid qi!

This time, it lasted for a half day already.

Ye Xiao could only fully focus on it. First of all, he needed to reduce the gelid qi in the Space to keep the Spaces in balance. Secondly... The gelid qi was rather precious for Ye Xiao at the moment. It made his spiritual qi purer and purer. And it improved his gelid power...

If he didn't care about the balance of the Spaces, he would definitely throw several pieces of spiritual jades to the Cosmic Hades...

While the gelid qi increased, Ye Xiao found that the gelid qi inside his body seemed... Finally he seemed to come to the stage where the East-rising Purple Qi could break out to the second level. In his dantian, the energy of the East-rising Purple Qi had formed into a purple mist. It stayed at the center of his dantian.

If dantian was as big as a house... then the purple mist at the center of his dantian was now as big as an egg.

It was small, yet it was clearly there. It made Ye Xiao feel that as long as he filled up his dantian with the purple qi, which was produced after he converted the gelid qi, he could smoothly upgrade the East-rising Purple Qi to the second level.

Chapter 156: Take over the Ling-Bao Hall

However, according to the condition of the Land of Han-Yang, Ye Xiao reckoned... that it still would take a long time to reach the second level.

If the power of reaching the first level of the Earth Origin Stage was equal to one portion, reaching the second level was equal to two portions. To reach level three needed eight portions... And sixty-four to reach the fourth level...

Ye Xiao felt that when he reached the Sky Origin Stage, his East-rising Purple Qi would reach the second level!

Well, thinking about how long it would take, Ye Xiao felt speechless.

He had to try his best to improve himself.

To reach the second level of the East-rising Purple Qi, it took thousands of times more than it took to reach the first level.

There were nine levels of the East-rising Purple Qi in total.

When thinking about all this... Ye Xiao was... rather motivated!

When he reached the fourth level, he must have already become as powerful as he was in his previous life! That was the ninth level

of the Dao Origin Stage!

That was the peak level of the Qing-Yun Realm already!

So when he really reach the ninth level of the East-rising Purple Qi, what would he become? What cultivation level would he reach?

He felt excited even just thinking about it!

The next morning, the Crown Prince came to visit Ye Xiao in person and stayed in the House of Ye for quite a while.

He said a lot of thoughtful words and showed his concerns in all aspects. He delivered a lot of precious medical materials and sent out a lot of men to find good doctors... He was doing everything to help.

As the Crown Prince of the kingdom, he truly did all these things for merely a general's son. People were going to be moved with tears when they knew it.

Well... Ye Xiao didn't feel anything. Song Jue was watching all these like he was watching a play.

[Look how the bastard try to buy popularity...

He must be in dreaming!]

The next night, the House of Ye finally came back to peace after running for one day. Song Jue stayed around Ye Xiao. He felt tired and was confused, [He has been lying here like this for such a long time. Doesn't he feel tired?]

To keep being like this, Ye Xiao had been operating his martial art to support it...

[Is he really capable to hold such a long time? That's unbelievable!]

"I think it is enough now..." Song Jue shook Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao finally woke up. He was still focused on acting, so he asked weakly, "Are... Are they... all gone?"

Song Jue was amused, "There is only me. Stop acting. What the hell. I never knew it was so tiring to act. I think it is worse than fighting ten battles. I am exhausted!"

Ye Xiao took a deep breath and made his bones crack. He sat up on the bed and said, "Uncle Song, you should feel satisfied. You are better than me. I nearly died trying to stay still. I felt like I was so stupid. Look, you have been busy for a whole day. Why don't you lie down for me..."

Song Jue nodded, "Ah, you do have conscience after all... Hmm. What did you say? Lie down for you? You want me to act as a dead

man for you?"

Ye Xiao smiled, "Uncle Song, you are tired, aren't you? Look. You just need to lie down and do nothing. That must be easy and comfortable..."

Song Jue spat, "Pooh! You little prick. How dare you! Need to do nothing? That's unable to do anything! I don't need your conscience now... Enjoy it yourself. Go back to your bed and lie till the end of the world, will you?!"

Ye Xiao showed a sad face, "Uncle Song, please. I know you always treat me well. Just do me a favor. It really is unbearable. Have pity on your beloved nephew, will you?!"

Song Jue showed a dark face, "You know it is unbearable, yet you still want me to do it. Unbelievable..."

Finally, after begging for a while, Song Jue promised to lie in the bed for Ye Xiao because he did treat Ye Xiao rather well. He was now going to enjoy the comfort of "doing nothing".

Ye Xiao wore black robes and got out through the window...

After only a few seconds, he disappeared in the dark night.

There was one thing Ye Xiao had been planning to do for a long time.

Now he had the time to do it.

Well, he had spent a lot of time while talking to persuade Song Jue though...

...

It was in the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom.

The big fat Wan Zhenghao was lying part way up on the chair. He looked anxious.

[It has been two and half days since the god-master left.

Did he leave already?

He always came without informing me. I don't think he will tell me if he decided to leave...

He made me feel anxious all the time...

What should I do now. I don't know where he is.]

"Fine. I will wait for another three days. If the god-master doesn't come back, I will return to my place myself. This is not a good place for me with my weight... I feel pain in every step." Wan

Zhenghao sighed.

He had gotten the method to live forever and Gu Jinlong had helped him on it. It was surely a good thing for him.

However, the price was that he would stay fat all the time! And he would get fatter and fatter!

When he first built up the Ling-Bao Hall, he was about 90 kg. Now he was 700 kg. He was the no.1 fat guy in the world!

It was said that... it was the curse he had to take for the longevity he shouldn't have had.

Gu Jinlong said that.

He grabbed his big belly, which had slipped down to the floor, and put it on his knees. Wan Zhenghao was quite upset.

"That is too big a price... and a heavy one...

Well I can live forever. So I guess it should be fine to just be fat."

While he was murmuring, he heard someone knocked the door gently. Master Guan was outside reporting, "Boss. Feng Zhiling requires a meeting."

Wan Zhenghao was surprised. He said, "Brother Feng? Why is he here? Go invite him in quickly!"

The next moment, Feng Zhiling just sat in front of Wan Zhenghao arrogantly.

"Brother Wan." Feng Zhiling was smiling proudly.

"Brother Feng, do you know where Master Gu is?" Wan Zhenghao asked anxiously.

"Hmm. I have sent a letter to him earlier. Brother Gu got the thing he wanted already. And then he just left to cultivate immediately." Ye Xiao answered blandly.

"Oh. I see. That's good." Wan Zhenghao rubbed his hands excitedly, "I am going back tomorrow then."

"No, you can't." Feng Zhiling's face turned cold, "Brother Wan, when Brother Gu left, he wanted me to tell you something."

"Brother Gu?" Wan Zhenghao asked with astonishment.

"Brother Gu felt grateful when I found his family treasure for him. So he swore to become brothers with me. We became brothers of different names. We kowtowed eight times to the sky. We are life-and-death brothers now." Feng Zhiling was seriously talking.

"Eh... Well..." Wan Zhenghao widely opened his mouth while staring dumbly at Feng Zhiling. He was confused and unbelieving at the same time!

[Sworn brothers? Life-and-death brothers?

What the hell? Isn't it too fast?]

"Oh, you don't believe it? Well, Brother Gu knew that you wouldn't. Look, what is this?" Ye Xiao put several pieces of stuffs on the table.

There was one jade token among those things. It was all covered by a purple glow. There was a word "decree" on it.

There was another jade token where the name of Gu Jinlong was inscribed.

When Wan Zhenghao saw the two jade tokens, his fat body started shaking.

All the fats on his body started to shake around him. -Pah! Pah! Pah! -

The latter jade token was the identity token of Gu Jinlong in his sect. It was something he would definitely keep with himself.

The purple jade token was the token he used to take charge of the Ling-Bao Hall.

When the purple token showed up, it represented Gu Jinlong himself.

The two of them were both in Feng Zhiling's hand. That meant one thing. Gu Jinlong had handed over the power of running the Ling-Bao Hall to Feng Zhiling!

For Wan Zhenghao, there turned out to be one more man who was in a higher position than him.

He had a boss who is directly in control of him now!

So he looked at the two tokens stunned. He looked ill like he just ate up a pile of shxt.

If he found the two tokens here, he would be extremely happy. That meant nobody was going to control him anymore. However, there was Feng Zhiling with the two tokens. He was now the owner of the two tokens. That meant he was the second boss of Wan Zhenghao other than Gu Jinlong.

At the moment, Feng Zhiling smiled softly, 'Wan, from now on, we are going to work on Ling-Bao Hall together. We have to do a good job. Don't worry. I won't hinder you in anyway.'

Wan Zhenghao's mind blanked out. He looked at the tokens on

the table. He seemed to have lost his soul.

When he heard Feng Zhiling's words, he turned furious!

[What the hell!

What is this all about?]

In the past, whenever Ling-Bao Hall got something precious, he needed to give the best ones to Gu Jinlong. However, Gu Jinlong came to Ling-Bao Hall nearly every hundred years and he just stayed for a few days. It didn't stop Wan Zhenghao from making his own money at all. And he got those medical materials to extend his life. So he had been feeling really good about the business in Ling-Bao Hall.

However, things were different now, as there was another boss above him.

First of all, Feng Zhiling would never ignore everything in the Ling-Bao Hall like Gu Jinlong did. He would definitely lay his hands on it.

Secondly, Feng Zhiling didn't come from the higher realm. He was the native of the Land of Han-Yang. Even though he would be busy making dan beads, he would still spend most of his time to working on the affairs in Ling-Bao Hall.

...

Chapter 157: Both Hard and Soft Tactics

What Gu Jinlong required were all the best treasures, but because he had quite a high standard about treasures, there were not many things he liked. So Wan Zhenghao didn't really give Gu Jinlong a lot of treasures after all. Now that Feng Zhiling got involved, he was afraid everything that Ling-Bao Hall got would all be snatched by him and would all be used to make dan beads. That meant most of the resources that used to be in his hand would become Feng Zhiling's.

When he thought about seeing Feng Zhiling face to face everyday, he felt pain in his heart.

He just wanted to smash Feng Zhiling.

When he had such thought, his eyes would naturally be filled with a killing intent.

Ye Xiao sat opposite to him with his legs crossed. He spoke blandly, "By the way. Brother Gu didn't return to where he belongs. He has been taking a secret training in the Land of Han-Yang... He said he would leave after he make success in some kind of martial art. During the time he is cultivating, he wants me to make one kind of dan for him. It is difficult to make, to be honest, but the materials are easy to find. Well, it is going to be your job then. Thanks, Boss Wan. And we can't make any mistakes on this."

Wan Zhenghao trembled like he was stricken by the thunder. He laughed constrainedly and said, "Yes. That's right. I will do my

best. I won't let any mistake happen!"

His hostile thought against Feng Zhiling disappeared immediately.

He knew how vicious Gu Jinlong was. He knew that if Gu Jinlong wanted him to disappear, he wouldn't even need to do anything. Simply a breath could make him disappear once and for all.

He realized that Feng Zhiling was someone he couldn't afford messing with.

He had to please him and make him feel good about everything!

He was seriously upset about it.

Ye Xiao saw the expressions on Wan Zhenghao's face. He felt rather casual.

Now, Gu Jinlong was one hundred percent dead in his hand.

This Ling-Bao Hall was obviously a private force that Gu Jinlong raised for himself. He wanted a place to stay when he came to the Land of Han-Yang, and he thought maybe he could get some valuable treasures from it. It apparently was not making enough money for him.

In fact, Ling-Bao Hall had been running its business all around

other countries. That was Wan Zhenghao's credit. The cross-kingdoms business didn't get any support from Gu Jinlong. The Ling-Bao Hall was not good enough for Gu Jinlong though. Yet it was quite a powerful thing for Ye Xiao, so he would, of course, take it over as soon as he can.

He knew that Wan Zhenghao didn't really like this; he just didn't dare to say anything.

It wasn't a good thing that his underling had any crosscurrent to him. He thought that it would definitely bring troubles if the underlings didn't fully obey him.

He spoke casually, "Wan, I am afraid you have to care more about your personal image. It doesn't do good to your health anyway. A king doesn't use hungry soldiers. I mean, you and I, we are like a family now. I have a recipe of Slimming Dan that can help people lose weight. If you keep taking it for a month, I think you will lose 90 percent of your fat..."

He smiled blandly and continued, "Well then, you won't be 700 kg anymore... I am confident that you can become under 100 kg."

"Most importantly, it works perfectly with the Life Extending Dan." He smiled with his eyes closed.

Wan Zhenghao was shocked when he heard that!

He started to quiver.

[Slimming Dan?

There actually is such a kind of treasure!]

Wan Zhenghao had been through thousands of years in misery because of the fat on his body. Sometimes, he felt that he would rather die than live. He thought that it was better living miserably than dying comfortably. That kept him from killing himself overtime.

As the fat grew, from 1600 years earlier, the fat had covered all of his true body.

He had lost the pleasure of being a man. The fat covered his pxxnis so he couldn't use it for sex at all. The only thing he could do with his pxxnis was to pee strugglingly. He could only sigh whenever he wanted to do 'something'.

The Life Extending Dan surely did extend his life, yet every dan bead he took added more fat on his body.

When he heard what Feng Zhiling said, he felt like those words were from the heavens. He was like a man who was about to drown when he suddenly grabbed a firm grass on the land!

"Brother Feng! Is there really such kind of wonderful dan?! Hmm. Such magical dan beads, does it need your master to make them?!" Wan Zhenghao held Feng Zhiling's hands. He was thrilled!

His eyes actually lit up with a green glow. That showed how eager he was.

Ye Xiao nodded seriously and said, "Relax, Wan. Although it is not easy to make such dan beads and it also requires a lot of materials, it is not a high-class dan. It won't need my master's assistance. I can do it. As long as I have enough materials, I promise I can make some for you.

Well, the only thing that concerns me is that I don't know why he never told you about this dan. There maybe something tricky about it though. I don't know."

He was attempting to get the support of Wan Zhenghao, so he could develop the Ling-Bao Hall as his own force. So he seized every chance to smear Gu Jinlong. He could feel free to smear him because he was already a dead man.

Wan Zhenghao's face turned dark.

[There is such a dan and he never told me about it! Why?

He never wants me to become a normal person! He never wants me to enjoy the pleasures in my life! Right?

That's reasonable... I am holding so big amount of wealth here. He comes down here once in dozens of years. I have the long-lasting life, thanks to him. Am I not enjoying more than he does?

Even if he never cares that I hold this wealth, maybe he just cares that I am living a better life than his!

All in all, Gu Jinlong just extended my life so that I can work for him!

I am just a tool for him. Why does a tool need to enjoy life then?]

His face turned darker and darker.

Ye Xiao spoke casually, "In fact, I have asked Brother Gu about it."

"What did he say then?" Wan Zhenghao asked.

"He said... He spent a lot to raise you and extend your life, so that you can collect valuable treasures and useful resources for him. If you enjoy your life too much, you will be distracted and you won't do your best in your job. That would be him lifting up a stone to drop it on his own toes..." Ye Xiao answered blandly.

"I knew it! Humph!" Wan Zhenghao burst with hatred. He humphed and then remembered that the man in front of him was the sworn brother of Gu Jinlong. He feared that if Feng Zhiling told Gu Jinlong anything...

So he looked at Ye Xiao alarmingly, "Master Feng... Well urn..."

Ye Xiao acted like he was generous and said, "Easy, Wan. We still need to get well along with each other in the Ling-Bao Hall. I need to focus on dan-making, so the affairs in the Ling-Bao Hall will mostly be in your charge. I am not stupid enough to cut my own hand, am I?"

Wan Zhenghao felt relieved and said smilingly, "That's true. That's true."

"Well in the future, when Brother Gu fully digests the Cosmic Hades and boosts his cultivation, he won't need us to supply resources to him anymore..." Ye Xiao spoke slowly with his eyes closed.

[What does Feng Zhiling mean? Does he want to get rid of Gu Jinlong once and for all?]

Wan Zhenghao felt happy about it. And then he was scared. [I know too well about Gu Jinlong. If Ling-Bao Hall means nothing to Gu Jinlong anymore, he will never give me Life Extending Dan anymore. How am I going to extend my life then?]

"Brother Feng, what... what should we do then?"

His face turned pale all of a sudden.

Everything he learned today made him feel like he was coursing through heaven and hell. It was rising up high suddenly, and then dropping down rapidly.

He felt happy that he had a chance to lose his weight at first. He wanted to have a normal life. Yet he became unhappy because he had a problem extending his life.

He had sacrificed so much to keep himself living. Now that his long-lasting life was going to an end, wasn't it unfortunate?

Ye Xiao looked at Wan Zhenghao with cold and sharp eyes.

"Master Feng, why do you look at me like that?" Wan Zhenghao asked anxiously.

"Nothing. I just want to tell you, only when Brother Gu leaves is only when I can truly do whatever I want... like giving the Slimming Dan Beads to you."

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "Well, there is a time issue with the Slimming Dan though. You know the efficacy of such wonderful dan is always limited. After you start to take it, in a certain period of time, you need to take it again before the fat on your body increases again.."

Wan Zhenghao smiled bitterly. [I know how it works. I understand it. Well... but...]

His eyes lit up with fierceness again.

[It just means that right now, someone else is controlling me.

It was Gu Jinlong then, and now, it is Feng Zhiling.

Yet I can't get a long-lasting life anymore. Why do I need to be somebody's servant after I finished being another person's servant?

Fxcking bullshit. Do I have to be a servant?!

I am going to die soon anyway. Why don't I die fighting back. Everybody die then! Do you think it is that easy to take advantage of me?!]

It seemed Ye Xiao didn't notice that Wan Zhenghao was strange, so he continued, "In fact, I have the recipe of the Life Extending Dan too. I don't have enough materials though. Otherwise I can make it now too!"

...

Chapter 158: Reined Wan Zhenghao

Ye Xiao looked at Wan Zhenghao coldly. His eyes had a sharp glint as though he was in the higher position. He said blandly, "Wan Zhenghao, if you satisfy me, please me... I can make you live forever and I can give you a normal man's body, with which you will enjoy all the pleasures in the world! Endlessly!"

He stopped calling him "Wan" or "Boss Wan" anymore. He just called his name, Wan Zhenghao!

Obviously, it showed who would be the master of the other. He stayed a high position above Wan Zhenghao.

At this moment, Wan Zhenghao didn't care though. His breath became rapid after he heard Ye Xiao's words.

One of the Life Extending Dan Bead could extend his life for 100 years.

The Slimming Dan Bead could give him reduce his weight and he could regain the male capability.

With both, he could enjoy the wonderful world forever!

If he really got them both, his life was going to become a thousand times happier than he was now. That was exactly what he wanted!

His lips were shaking, "Brother Feng, you can't joke on such things."

Ye Xiao was displeased, "Do I need to lie to you? It is merely a few Life Extending Dan beads. I may not be able to make supreme dan beads, but it is an easy job to make some normal Life Extending Dan beads!"

Wan Zhenghao showed a complex expression on his face and spoke while gritting his teeth, "What is true should be seen! As long as I can see either of these two dan beads... I will give my life to you, Master Feng! My life doesn't belong to me anyway. I could sell it to Gu Jinlong, so why can't I sell it to you?!"

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "Wan Zhenghao, you have lived a long life. I believe there is one thing you have already learned."

He continued casually, "Well... People have souls. People's bodies are merely flesh and blood... They are just the physical holders... You should have learned it already."

Wan Zhenghao nodded, "That's true."

"The Life Extending Dan beads Gu Jinlong gave you seem to extend your life. In fact, it may not be a good thing to you." Ye Xiao spoke slowly, "Every time when you took the dan bead, you felt dizzy for a while, right? The world will become silent like you were a dead man, right?"

"That's true. How do you know?"

"Heh, heh... Because whenever you took the Life Extending Dan bead, you die once.

And then you come back to life, like your life had been extended." Ye Xiao said blandly, "It means you are overdrawing the time of your next life and all the lives to come... Those lives have all been attached to your current life and you are living your future lives in this body..."

Wan Zhenghao said, "Yes."

Ye Xiao said, "So, even if you die now... Your soul won't be free immediately... You will have to suffer in the hell for over 3000 years. Well if you have done anything immoral, it may take you four or five thousand years. When you get through all this, you can become a pure soul and get into the tunnel of transmigration. And then you become some kind of animal in the next life. You are not going to be human anyway, because you have spent over 3000 years being a human. You can't be a human any longer..."

Wan Zhenghao suddenly shivered.

"Heh, heh. Well, that's just for talking though. I told you those, because I want to tell you that the Life Extending Dan is actually not its real name..." Ye Xiao smiled coldly and said, "It should be called... Dark Soul Dan!"

"Dark Soul Dan!" Wan Zhenghao murmured. His big fat face was all pale. Sweats on his face were like squeezed out from his fat.

"The real efficacy of Dark Soul Dan is not for extending life..." Ye Xiao spoke indifferently, "It is used to... restrain people's soul in order to stop him from rebirth!"

"It should only be used on someone you hated the most in the world, when you want him to suffer for all his lives. It is a vicious dan. Whoever takes it, their soul will be restrained inside his body forever. He will suffer everything forever and will never have the chance to start over again."

"It is the most vicious dan in the Qing-Yun Realm!" He continued, "It can only be used on souls though. However, Gu Jinlong is a genius. He actually added the Nine Silence Grass and the Opposite Bank Flower in it. So it is different; it can be used on living men."

"But the Nine Silence Grass will definitely damage the human body. Getting fatter and fatter is only one of the negative effects... It will make a man become half man half woman. Wan Zhenghao... Have you felt that you no longer long for that thing between a man and a woman? Hmm. I mean losing your sexuality. You are not interested in either women or men!"

Ye Xiao asked frankly.

Wan Zhenghao was shocked.

He just stood there saying nothing. His eyes were blank.

What Feng Zhiling said were all true on him!

He remembered when he was young, he loved sex. After extending his life, he became less and less interested in women anymore. And then he gave up on it. Besides, he was too fat to have sex with a woman. He seemed to forget how it felt like to be with a woman.

[I have worked for Gu Jinlong for my whole life and have been a dog for him!

Yet he treats me as if I am his biggest enemy...

And I have been admiring him and respecting him all the time...]

"Wan Zhenghao, I can return your body to a normal status, and I can give you the real Life Extending Dan. I can even reduce the sin you made. And I can help you regain your male capability!"

Ye Xiao said, "Wan Zhenghao, now you need to choose... What is your choice?"

Wan Zhenghao shivered. He raised his head and looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao looked at him coldly and blandly.

At the moment, he was like a monarch looking down on the follower who was kneeling on the floor!

The vigor of a sovereign descending the world and commanding the universe burst out!

Wan Zhenghao was stunned all at once.

Not only what Feng Zhiling said had shocked him, but also his vigor was much stronger than Gu Jinlong!

It was totally a different thing.

Gu Jinlong was more like a head of a small gang. He was full of killing and fierceness!

Feng Zhiling was more like a king who dominated the whole world!

[Who is this Feng Zhiling? How come his vigor is so much stronger than Gu Jinlong?

Isn't he... just a dan-maker? And he seems to be humble and kind...]

Wan Zhenghao couldn't believe it. He kept blinking to try to stay clear-minded.

He felt like he was in a dream.

And it was of course a good dream. A wonderful dream!

He was obviously thrilled by what Ye Xiao promised him. It was a bright and beautiful future!

"I..." Wan Zhenghao Felt a bit thirsty and he couldn't talk.

He only spoke one word and his throat seemed to be burning.

"I know what you want to say. I surely can prove it to you!" Ye Xiao smiled blandly and reached out his hand, "You know I have limited materials, so I just made a half-done Slimming Dan bead. You can try it and look how it works. And then you tell me your decision."

A jade bottle was put in front of Wan Zhenghao. Ye Xiao continued, "You need to prepare a big tub. When you feel burning after taking this dan bead, you cut the middle finger of your right hand and keep it in the tub. And then you can see... how much fat can be drawn out of your body! Then you will know my words are true!"

Then he stood up and said, "Alright then. I got to go. I will come back tomorrow night. I hope you can tell me your decision when I am back."

And then he smiled and said, "So long."

His body flashed and then he became a black lightning rushing out through the window as he disappeared in the dark.

A long time after Feng Zhiling left, Wan Zhenghao was still sitting on the chair. He didn't even move a bit. After a while, he moved his eyeballs.

He looked at the jade bottle on the table in front of him.

There was only one dan bead in the jade bottle.

Wan Zhenghao was struggling with a fight inside his head.

[What should I do?]

He did want that. All that Feng Zhiling had promised him were what he wanted the most.

However, his heart was filled with mixed feelings.

Wan Zhenghao realized that this Feng Zhiling wasn't an ordinary figure.

He now knew that Feng Zhiling acted humble and innocent earlier.

He thought that Feng Zhiling must be more horrible than Gu Jinlong!

He had a feeling that when he was under Gu Jinlong's control, he might be able to get away from him; yet if he was under Feng Zhiling's control, he was very likely going to spent all his life, or lives, to serve him!

His eyes were flashing with complicated feelings. He looked at the little jade bottle and he was gasping.

After a while, he finally made up his mind!

He was a bit self-abandoned.

"I have been serving somebody for my entire life already! How bad can it be to serve another one?" Wan Zhenghao gritted his teeth and murmured, "Besides, I can be in normal size this time. And I can man up again. I can enjoy all the pleasures in the world! It is a good deal to me! I have to have a higher standard about my life!"

He didn't hesitate anymore. He reached his hand to the little jade bottle and grabbed it.

And then he shouted, "Somebody! Bring me an extra large tub!"

Chapter 159: Fat!

An empty huge scale wood tub, which was as high as a man, was placed in front of Wan Zhenghao.

Wan Zhenghao gritted his teeth and unsealed the bottle.

[If it really is that good, then... Your promises seem to be true. It won't hurt to serve you anyway, will it?] He thought, [At least you treat me as a human being. At least you care about my problems... It is better than being a tool to Gu Jinlong that could never enjoy anything and only be tortured all the time.]

He closed his eyes and didn't even look at the dan bead.

He raised his head and swallowed the dan bead.

Unlike the supreme dan beads, this dan bead created a spicy and unbearable flavor in the throat.

Wan Zhenghao didn't expect it, so tears immediately fell from his eyes because of it.

"What the hell is this. Why does it taste so..."

He murmured as he felt a stream of heat arose inside his dantian all of a sudden.

And then the heat ran over his body. His entire body seemed to be on fire.

It felt like endless flames had surrounded him.

He felt unbearably hot, but he kept holding it.

He realized that this dan bead was making a difference after all.

He felt the fat on his body was all trembling. It felt like it was melting.

And it seemed there was really something moving to his middle finger...

He gritted his teeth and held on.

It must be better to let this burning power work as long as possible.

That was obvious.

He tried so hard to hold on with it.

After about two hours, he screamed out, "Ahhh!"

And then he took out a knife like mad and the tip of his middle

finger. - Tsshk! -

At that moment, he immediately placed his right hand on the edge of the tub.

He was uncomfortable, so he reached his head over to see the finger.

The wound on his fingertip didn't bleed at all. Instead, some sort of an ivory oily material was surging as it came out of his finger.

It was like a tiny river of white fat floating out from the wound. It was half-solid and half-liquid. It kept coming out...

At the same time, he felt his body were on heat and he felt good about it.

It was truly feeling pain and happiness at the same time.

And then the feeling of being on fire became stronger and stronger. There was more and more fat coming out from his finger. And then he saw a stream of fat which was as thick as his finger pouring out.

- Puff! - It poured out heavily onto the opposite tub wall and then floated down along the wall. While time passed, the whole bottom of the tub had been filled up. The oily fat kept rising like rising tide.

There was more and more coming out.

Wan Zhenghao felt like he was flying in the heavens. He loved this feeling immediately.

It was awesome.

He could clearly feel that all the fat in his body was running over to his fingertip...

It all ran out of his body through the only tiny loophole on his fingertip.

"Yohoooo..." He groaned while rejoicing. His voice was soft, like some 'professional worker' getting a strong customer...

After a while, the whole tub was half filled already. The feeling of fire was still vivid inside his body. It didn't even decrease. The fat was running even faster...

It felt like all his fat was melted at the moment.

"This is awesome..." He groaned happily, "Oh, Lord Feng. I am so going to serve you from now on... This is so awesome..."

In two hours, the fat was like water pouring out into the tub...

The huge tub was about to be filled up...

He just wanted to asked for another tub, yet the feeling stopped surprisingly.

The fat was still pouring.

He could feel the fat was curdling on his body. He sighed.

[It seems... this should be called the end of the day.]

After about ten minutes, it stopped pouring out.

As the fat stopped, a feeling of pain was arising. He was in great pain and he kept struggling on the floor. He nearly couldn't breathe.

That was... how good you felt, how painful you got.

"Well, this dan bead... Isn't something I should take casually..." He gritted his teeth and he was all wet with sweat. He spoke fiercely, "Anyway... It is worth suffering though."

Till the latter part of the night, the pain finally disappeared bit by bit.

He got to understand that to decrease such amount of fat meant to cut the same amount of fat directly. It must be painful. As long as he could get through the pain, everything would be fine.

He stood up slowly and tried jumping around in his room... The fat on his body shook. He found that he really had lost some weight...

He couldn't help but walk over to look inside the tub. There was a full tub of fat.

"That should be at least more than 50 kg." Looking at the tub, he was happy and upset at the same time, "For somebody else, to lose such an amount of fat can surely make him slim, yet I still look the same..."

"This is all my fat..." He sighed. He was happy though. He had been trying to lose weight for centuries, and this was the most significant achievement.

That was happiness to him.

He groaned happily and shouted, "Somebody come in!"

Two guards came in immediately.

"Take this tub of fat away and dispose it well." He waved his hand and spoke with satisfaction.

He kept pacing around in the room while checking his belly. It didn't seem changed a lot, yet he could feel himself lighter.

Especially the belly.

He rubbed his belly and was lost in satisfaction.

Although it was still a big fat belly, he could already feel that it had become smaller.

That was a wonderful feeling. Anyone else could never understand such pleasure.

He slept tight and sweet this night. He hadn't had such a good sleep for... over several hundred years.

He thought, [I am wealthy. I am even richer than a country.

I can buy whatever I want in the world.

There is nothing I can't afford.

Including... every virgin's first night.

But even though I am so rich, I don't have the honor of a man anymore.

Those that men can do became impossible for me.

I even needed to get away from the girls who came to me first. That is really an indescribable pain.

But that is going to be the past soon.

Hahahahaha...]

The next day, he felt like he was as light as a bird; well of course, comparing to what he used to be.

Whoever had lost over 50 kg in one night would feel like a bird. That was a real feeling inside his mind, even though he was still a big fat monster.

When he was having his meal in the salesroom, for the first time... he had a good appetite.

He wanted every dish.

So he just got loose to eat whatever he wanted. In the end, he wiped his mouth and said delightedly, "The food today is really good. It suits my appetite."

The old Master Guan was enjoying his own food and answered, "Thanks to you, boss, I can have such delicious food today."

Wan Zhenghao was surprised, "What? Thanks to me?"

[Why is it anything to do with me?]

Master Guan smiled and rubbed his beard, "Well, that huge tub of fat... I don't know where you got it. The cook saw it and he was like meeting with something given by gods. He just couldn't stop praising. He said that he had been a cook for his whole life and that was his first time to see such a high-quality pure fat. Most importantly, it is all natural. That is the most organic cooking material..."

Wan Zhenghao felt something wrong about it already. His face turned pale and he said, "So... and then?"

"Well, he wouldn't waste any good materials, would he? That would be quite a waste. So the cook, Li, used that fat to cook. Well look what we are eating today..." Master Guan was satisfied. He picked his teeth and said, "It really is extremely tasty. Brilliant smell, color and taste at the same time. My mouth can still feel the scent of the tasty food. I think I will be thinking about it for three days."

Master Guan seemed to be rather excited and he spoke a lot.

Wan Zhenghao's face was all pale at the moment. He looked at the empty plates on the table...

Half of the dishes... came into his belly...

His face turned pale from red, and then turned red again. And then it turned pale again before eventually, it turned green... Well then, it turned black...

Master Guan saw the changes of his face and thought, [He is indeed such a boss. I don't think I can learn how to change my face like he did. I think those face switching masters should learn how to do it from him...]

And then he heard Wan Zhenghao throw up. - Orhhh urhhh
ahhh ohhhhh...-

...

Chapter 160: Divine Fat Food Festival

- Orhhh... Splash... -

Whatever got into Wan Zhenghao's stomach now poured out like water. - Splash... -

As Master Guan was enjoying the aftertaste of the tasty food, he didn't expect his boss would have a "volcanic explosion". Some nasty stuff that had come out from Wan Zhenghao's mouth immediately got on his face and body all around...

He was stunned. And then he started to feel extremely nauseated... and then he was throwing up too...

Wan Zhenghao was puking badly...

It was quite a miserable scene. Master Guan already had nothing to puke now, yet Wan Zhenghao was still puking like a fountain... It looked like he was puking out all he had eaten in his life...

The maid standing aside was so scared that her face turned pale and she was shaking.

[What is wrong...

What on earth happened...]

Finally, Wan Zhenghao stopped puking. He lied on the chair with his head hanging there and spoke weakly, "Hurry... Hurry... Clean it up... Change clothes... Orhhh..."

He felt like throwing up again, yet there was nothing for him to puke at all. He just lied there.

Master Guan left to change his clothes with a dark face. He was now soaking in whatever came from the big boss's mouth...

The maid had a quick reaction and she moved fast. After just a while, she had already finished cleaning the whole room. And then she brought up some sugar ginger soup for the big boss...

After a long while, Wan Zhenghao finally took a deep breath and moaned, "Oh my god... I must be the first one who have done such a thing and praised it... I... I may kind of create a record in the history..."

He was both sad and angry at the same time.

The door opened and Master Guan got in angrily. His face was still dark, "What happened to you, boss?"

He had been working in the salesroom for his whole life and he actually got puked on by his boss just now. And it was right after he had finished a good meal. He was really mad.

Wan Zhenghao turned his head weakly and looked at Master

Guan. He opened his mouth trying to say something, yet he couldn't.

[What can I say?

Do you want me to tell you... that those fat you ate was from me?

Do you want me to tell you that... I ate the fat that came from myself? And I praised it?

You want me to tell you that all of you have eaten the fat from my body and you all praised?

Well... I still have a sense of shame.]

Wan Zhenghao thought hard about what he should say, "Anyway... That fat... The cook can't use it anymore... No one is allowed to eat that. No one!"

Yet he felt like it would draw people's attention on this, so he smiled and said, "From now on, whatever is cooked with that kind of fat, I won't eat it. Hmm. Not only that fat, all dishes that contain fat, I won't eat them. I am losing weight. Understand? I am losing weight. No matter how delicious it is, I am out. Okay? Understand?"

Everybody was stunned.

[Losing weight?

That is a good excuse.

But do you really think you could possibly cover your strange behavior today?]

They all felt suspicions, yet none of them dared to ask more.

Apparently, their boss tried to cover up something...

He was the big boss, so even if it was a worst excuse, it would be the strongest excuse.

An excuse that no one could question.

However, foods that were cooked with that precious fat had become popular in the salesroom henceforth.

No one wanted to miss the food that was cooked with that fat. People held their bowls waiting in the canteen for the food. Nothing else could make them care more...

It was too precious...

That fat showed up in a fixed interval.

Sometimes, there would be a lot of it, while sometimes, there was just a little after being out of stock for decades ...

Whenever people were waiting for it, Wan Zhenghao would stand there with a strange expression on his face.

There was a tale saying that only the big boss could get this kind of fat. No one else could find it, no matter how powerful he was...

In fact, that was no tale at all; that was just bullshxt. Of course there was only Wan Zhenghao who could find it.

Well... Looking at the fat that was drawn out from his own body cooked into dishes and eaten by lots of people... That must be a unique experience of Wan Zhenghao in the history.

The complex feeling in his heart... must be difficult to describe even for people who were rather good at writing.

A feast was held because of that fat.

At the beginning, there were tens of tubs of that fat in the salesroom...

That was such a happy year.

It wasn't so priceless that year, because there was lots of it.

However, it was out of stock for a long time.

No one could find it anywhere.

After a hundred years, it showed up again... but there were only two or three tubs of it.

Whatever was rare became priceless. That was so true.

The day when the fat showed up again became a grand festival.

It was the Divine Fat Food Festival.

As time passed by, the salesroom became bigger and bigger under the lead of Feng Zhiling.

Thus, this Divine Fat Food Festival became an important day in the Land of Han-Yang.

That was an annual festival on the 18th of July.

After ten thousand years, no one in the world would remember when and why they started to have this festival. Probably even no one would know the exact name of this festival... However, this festival lasted forever.

It became a tradition of the Land of Han-Yang...

...

The next night, Ye Xiao came to the salesroom as he had promised.

When he entered Wan Zhenghao's room, he felt something strange in the room.

Wan Zhenghao looked like decades aged within only one day. He was filled with the aura of death. He just lied there like a dried fish.

He didn't even have the strength to blink normally.

"What the hell? What happened?" Ye Xiao was shocked. He was confused.

Although he should feel bad and uncomfortable about being somebody's servant, it was a bit unbelievable that he lied there waiting for death.

Wan Zhenghao was like a dying man who could only breathe.

It was a little bit better than how the 'bone-melted' Ye Xiao looked like.

"Master Feng..." Wan Zhenghao rolled his eyeballs forcibly. He looked alive a little bit when he saw Feng Zhiling, "Finally, you

came..."

He stood up after struggling for a while. He was staggering; weak like he could be blown away by the breeze.

It was actually a rare scene on Wan Zhenghao...

Wan Zhenghao didn't want to get up at all, because he was too uncomfortable. However, he didn't dare to in front of Feng Zhiling, who was the figure that concerned his future after all.

"I have made up my mind. From now on, I will follow your lead." Wan Zhenghao spoke.

That was committing loyalty; it should be powerful and loud.

However, he had been throwing up for a whole day. He was too weak and he felt like his feet were floating. He really didn't have the energy to speak any stronger.

"Brother Wan, it seems you have had a long day." Ye Xiao felt a bit pity for him and spoke gently, "Well, I can understand how you feel in your heart. It must be hard for you to change your loyalty. Well, over time you will get to know what a wonderful decision you have made today."

Wan Zhenghao was a bit anxious. He said, "No, no, no. I know it now. Being on Brother Feng's side is definitely the most marvelous decision I made in my life."

Ye Xiao was confused, so he asked, "But... Look at you... You don't seem to be understanding, do you?"

Wan Zhenghao twitched his lips like he was going to cry. He wanted to say something, but decided against it.

Ye Xiao didn't ask anymore. He said, "Did you use the dan bead I gave you? How was it?"

He was confident about the dan bead. However, because Wan Zhenghao was truly too unbelievably fat and he was now in a bad condition, he couldn't tell whether Wan Zhenghao had lost weight or not.

Wan Zhenghao sighed plaintively and said, "It worked. It worked well... I drew out 50 kilograms of oily fat for real... It was truly some wonderful dan bead..."

"Ah? Shouldn't you be happy about it?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

[Since it worked, he should be rather happy about it. Is he too happy that he had gone crazy?

He looks really abnormal anyway. I don't remember the Slimming Dan has such a side-effect. He should merely feel pain on his muscles. It shouldn't have made him look like this.]

"I am happy! I truly am. I am really, really, really so happy... I am overjoyed..." Wan Zhenghao moaned, "But those bastards didn't throw away my fat..."

"Urh..." Ye Xiao was confused. [What does that mean?]

"Hmm. The fat... What happened to it?" Looking at how miserable Wan Zhenghao was, Ye Xiao thought of a possibility which was hardly possible to happen but could explain the current situation. He nearly burst out laughing as he asked, "You didn't eat it back, did you?"

Wan Zhenghao was so upset that he nearly wanted to kill himself. He said, "Those lads... They cooked with the fat... I didn't know... So I ate them... Honestly, they were tasty dishes... Yet when I found out the truth... I became how I look like now..."

He was still overwhelmed with sorrow while talking about it.

"What?"

Ye Xiao opened his mouth looking at the sad Wan Zhenghao.

What he had guessed was actually the truth?

For a long time...

"Hahahahahahaha..."

Ye Xiao burst out with a world-shocking laughter. He kept rubbing his belly and slapping his legs; he trembled in laughter as tears went down on his face.

...

Chapter 161: The King's Concern

Wan Zhenghao's face was twitching as he looked miserably at Feng Zhiling who was laughing wildly at the moment. He felt embarrassed... Yet there was nothing he could do. This gloating man has become his boss now...

...

After a while, they finally calmed down. They sat together. For the first time, they had their friendly intersection... discussion!

"Master Feng, I just want to ask when we will start our cooperation."

"Haven't we started already?"

"Well then... The dan beads I need... I wonder when you could give them to me?"

"Haven't I handed it to you already? Apparently, it worked well, the Slimming Dan bead!"

"Hey... I mean urh... The other ones..."

"You want more Slimming Dan beads? Also the Life Extending Dan beads?"

"Yes, yes. Well I can hold it some days for the Life Extending Dan beads, but I am going to need the Slimming Dan beads urgently!"

"Heh, heh. No problem. But I don't have time for that."

"Why? Do you have any difficulties?"

"You asked while knowing the answer. Haven't I told you that I don't have enough materials for that? The Slimming Dan bead I gave you was just a half-done work, because I didn't have enough materials."

"I apologize. It's my fault... I shouldn't have asked..."

"So, when I can give you your dan beads depends on when you can prepare the materials for me."

"I see. Please give me a list of the materials. I will try whatever I can to collect them as soon as possible."

"Oh right. I have to let you know that the materials for these two kinds of dan are not rare ones, but it is still difficult to get them all in a short time!"

"I will do my best."

"I don't care. It is you who want the dan beads so much, not me."

"Yes. I understand!"

...

"Since we are in the same group now, I think we should have a title for you. Can I reveal your identity to the public?"

"Well, as you wish."

"Good. How should we call you in work then?"

"Hmm, call me... Monarch then."

Thus, in the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom, there was a Monarch who had an extremely high position, even higher than the big boss, Wan Zhenghao... This event had shocked the world!

...

"Feng Monarch, is there anything I can offer you?"

"What I need are quite a lot, including dan-making materials, weapon materials, treasures. I will need them all. Oh, and all kinds of rare metals. All kinds of rare jades and stones. I need them all! All of them..."

"Ahem... Well.. Urh... If all these resources are offered to you,

the salesroom will... urh..."

"It won't be a problem. Give me whatever I want. Every now and then, I will give you some supreme dan beads for the auctions. It will perfectly solve the financial problem..."

"Really?"

"Absolutely! And there may be other precious things other than the supreme dan beads. All in all, from the day I am in the salesroom, it will never lack good objects to auction. So there won't be any financial problems. The salesroom is going to earn dozens of times more money than before."

"That's great. No problems then..."

"I think the next time when we put the supreme dan on the auction, we should make the auction much bigger than the last time. That will make the dealing price much higher."

"Okay."

At the end of the conversation, as Ye Xiao told more and more, Wan Zhenghao felt it unbelievable that he actually knew that much. Bit by bit, he became more and more respectful to Feng Zhiling. It was a sincere respect from the bottom of his heart.

Besides, although Ye Xiao was in a higher position, he didn't show any fierce vigor like Gu Jinlong did. Instead, he was like a

spring breeze blowing to the face silently, which could change people's thoughts...

Gu Jinlong only had the key that kept Wan Zhenghao alive.

Yet Xiao was controlling everything of Wan Zhenghao after all!

His life was under control.

His weight was under control.

His pleasure was under Ye Xiao's control!

Even the possibility for him to regain his male capability was held in Ye Xiao's hand!

Step by step, Wan Zhenghao became fully loyal to Feng Zhiling!

That was a complete loyalty!

In fact, it was not hard to understand. He had been loyal to Gu Jinlong before.

Now he just shifted his loyalty to another master. That was all.

Besides, he would gain lots of profits that he couldn't have received from his past master and didn't dare to even dream of.

In fact, it was quite a happy situation for Wan Zhenghao being like this.

Well, it would be perfect if he didn't eat that meal... in which all the dishes were cooked with his own fat...

...

On the other side, something happened in the Royal Palace.

It was filled with sorrow.

The king's second war affair meeting had lasted for two days.

The officials had thought of all they could. At the moment, both bad and good officials, as long as they were not provocateurs, all racked their brains because of the crisis of the kingdom. They had tried their best to figure out any practical methods to save the kingdom.

People in the military group were all asking to join the fight.

Even though they knew they would very possibly lose, they still wanted to offer their strength in the battle.

The kingdom was in vital danger. None of the soldiers would be stingy on offering their warm blood!

So far, there were many things that had been proposed.

The only thing they wanted was to defend. They wished to seize all chances to defend the kingdom and delay the time of the war!

The longer, the better...

There was going to be a chance showing up!

Some important passes were marked clearly. Those were the keys of the whole war.

"The most practical method should be the Tortoise Tactic in all the four battles! No matter what the enemies do, we don't answer. We don't attack! We draw back our neck and wait! They attack our camps, we defend. They stay out of the line of our camp, we stay still. Even if they abuse everyone in our clans, we don't move!"

The Zuo Prime Minister's words had aroused many disdainful emotions. Especially people of the military group, their eyes were sharp like knives!

[We are all honorable men! Yet you see us like tortoises...]

After rounds after rounds of discussions, all the officials found that this Tortoise Tactic seemed to be the only method to deal with the current situation!

It was the only practical and efficient tactic!

The camps were definitely strongly fortified; as long as the commanders were not fools. The camps must be full of traps. If the enemies forcibly attack the camps, they would inevitably pay a big price.

If they didn't attack, no one would move. There was nothing the enemies could do about it...

"First of all, the royal stock holds still. We call up food and materials from all over the kingdom. At the same time, we control the prices in the market quickly, so that there won't be any inside disturbance aroused. All the officials in their city should start transferring the resources to guarantee the supply to the battle..."

"We will not use a single thing in the royal stock until there is an urgent need for it. The over years' stockpile in the royal stock can surely support our armies for three years... Three years should be more than enough."

"Secondly, recruit young soldiers in a national range. Announce an urgent mobilization order. Increase the amount of rewards and punishment in order to arouse the minds of war."

"The king should make a decree to comfort all citizens."

"Inform all the spies to make disturbances in the enemies'

kingdoms and make their forces start inner-fights."

"Send some good men to get deep inside the enemies' place to make troubles. Even putting a granary of a town on fire would do better than nothing!"

"Send some assassins to get into the heart of the armies to kill their leaders and to kill some important figures in their court... Even if they fail, it will stir up some disturbances."

...

There were hundreds of this kind of suggestions being proposed!

The king went through all of them and listened carefully. In the two days, the recording officer had nearly tired his own hand to the point of disability...

The meeting in the main hall finally came to an end after two days.

The king returned to his study room and called for the two royal doctors and one master.

"How is Ye Xiao in the House of Ye?" The king asked directly.

"It doesn't look good. He is most possibly not going to survive this." Master Sun's rugate face was solemn, "We have tried our best

on it, and we have even used the supreme dan bead. Although all we did have kept Ye Xiao breathing, he has merely ten days."

The king was silent.

It was a rather unexpected result.

As Ye Xiao was dying, Ye Nantian would definitely come back.

His son was dying. The king couldn't be that cruel not to allow them to have a final meeting, could he?

The man was Ye Nantian after all!

"You highness, is General Ye going to... come back?" Master Sun hesitantly asked, "Now it is the dangerous moment of the kingdom. If General Ye comes back, especially for his son... he is ignoring the need of the kingdom."

The king sighed and smiled bitterly.

He knew that others might not come back. Took Prince Hua-Yang for an example, even if Su Yeyue was in vital danger, he would probably stay focused on the war first. However, Ye Nantian was different.

The reason why the king could have the support of Ye Nantian was that he wanted to save his son, Ye Xiao!

Things he had done for his son had clearly shown that he was a man who could ignore everything for his son!

If his son was okay, he would fight for his best in the battle and frighten his enemies.

However... everything was wrong when his son was in danger!

Even if the king gave a hundred orders to forbid him from coming back, he would absolutely never hesitate to come back!

...

Chapter 162: The North! The North!

If Ye Xiao died, everybody in both Minister Jiang and the Right Prime Minister's families would be killed, and Ye Nantian might even get mad at the royal family.

The king was sure that an angry Ye Nantian would think nothing of their relationship as sworn brothers if Ye Xiao died.

He should be thankful if Ye Nantian wouldn't come to him.

[I have been guarding your kingdom and kept my son in the capital. He has been right near you, yet my son got killed after all! The man who killed him should die for sure. But how about you, my bullshxt sworn brother, the king who failed to protect my son?]

"I don't know all the details. I only know that Ye Nantian's wife is locked by some powerful force for some special reasons. She is quite an important woman for Ye Nantian and for the whole Ye Clan... Ye Xiao is the only reason that she still has hope and also the only reason Ye Nantian still strives on living."

"If Ye Xiao dies, how is General Ye going to face the mother? I think... That should be the reason why he can ignore everything for his son..."

The king spoke sadly, "Well, it truly couldn't be blamed on Ye Nantian."

"The Ye Clan?" Master Sun frowned, "There is no clan named Ye in the Land of Han-Yang. It is such a powerful clan that could raise a heroic figure like Ye Nantian. And there is also the powerful force that could lock up his wife. Well..."

The king shook his head and didn't explain anything.

Master Sun and Wang looked at each other. They both felt confused. Suddenly, their eyes lit up with a glint of astonishment.

[There is no Ye Clan in the Land of Han-Yang?

Then... how about the upper realm?]

They were enlightened at the same time.

[It turns out... Ye Nantian is...]

The king felt upset.

The whole kingdom's future was lying on the shoulders of Ye Nantian alone...

If Ye Nantian still fought after Ye Xiao died, the Kingdom of Chen would be safe.

If Ye Nantian became downhearted, the kingdom was surely

going to end.

Among the four battles, they could only depend on Ye Nantian in the north. The others kept holding the battles because they were waiting for Ye Nantian's help after he defeated the Grassland Wolf. That could surely turn the tables of the war.

That was the only way to save the kingdom.

If the north battle was the first battle they lost, then the other battles would fall one after another. The Kingdom of Chen would come to its end.

The king really wanted to kill every single man in those foppish lads' clans.

That would still not be enough to express his anger at the moment though.

"Stirred up such a trouble for the kingdom at this particular moment." The king was furious, "They deserve to die!"

...

It was in the north.

The flags were flying on the broad grassland.

Countless soldiers were moving among the grasses like tide. Their armors were clean and sharp and they looked disciplined. They were Ye Nantian's Northern Army indeed.

The 300 thousand men were marching in eight groups. Although there were lots of men, they weren't in a muddle state at all.

There was an extremely grand flag flying at the center of the army.

It was the commander's flag of Ye Nantian.

As long as this flag was there, the mind of the northern army would never collapse.

This flag had been filled with all the spirits of the northern soldiers.

There were a bunch of autochthons fleeing away. A general in the troop behind them held up his bow and shot ten arrows out at a time. Ten of the fleeing autochthons became dead bodies after he shot.

The sound of the arrows was echoing sharply time after time. There was only one man shooting, yet the sky was like covered by the black arrows...

It seemed never going to stop.

Till all the fleeing enemies were down, the arrows never stopped.

The man put down his bow.

His eyes were cold and sharp. He was surprisingly young.

A voice sounded behind him, "General Ma, the Great General summoned you."

"Alright."

The young general looked at the dead bodies far away and his face was still cold. He kicked the horse and shouted, "Yay!"

He directly returned to the camp immediately.

It seemed the order of the Great General was like the god's decree for this young Grand Archer.

It seemed wrong to merely hesitate.

The other seven generals who were chasing after the defeated enemies on the other seven different directions all headed back to the camp immediately.

It was the order of the commander.

It was even important than the king's decree.

It was in the camp.

A middle-aged man who had a clean face with no beard sat on the commander's chair quietly. He sat straight up. He was dressed neatly. He wasn't even careless with his hair.

He had a handsome face. Surprisingly, he looked a bit learned and refined. He seemed to be a wise man who had read lots of books. Strangers wouldn't guess that he was an invincible Military God who was ruling over a million soldiers.

Only the ancient sword that was hanging behind him could show his real identity as a cultivator.

He was Ye Xiao's father.

He was the Northern General of the Kingdom of Chen. The real Military God on the Land of Han-Yang who had never lost a single battle.

Ye Nantian.

Hurried horse steps sounded outside the camp.

Strong and vigorous figures entered the main camp one by one.

The eight of them all returned at the same time.

Except the eight men, there were two of them who had been staying in the camps. That made it ten of them.

In fact, there were ten more who were having their holiday at the moment.

The twenty generals were called by Ye Nantian 'the Ten Dragons and Ten Tigers'.

Ye Nantian's army was divided into five groups, East group, South group, West group, North group and Middle group.

There were two generals in each group. So there were ten of them. Ye Nantian called them the 'Ten Generals'.

Each of the Ten Generals had two men from the Ten Dragons and Ten Tigers as their vice-generals.

So there were one general and two vice-generals in a group.

In total, there were thirty generals.

The thirty generals would never show up in the north at the same time.

Even if they were in the very moment of the battle, there were still five of the Ten Generals and their vice generals in vacation.

Ye Nantian had given an order to not allow them to come back.

"Soldiers are human too. They need to rest. When they are resting, they have to fully enjoy it. When they are in the fight, they have to try their best to fight."

That was the order of Ye Nantian, a long-lasting decree in the north.

"There will never be a thing that will be ruined because of your absence except your own business. When you are gone, the world is running. When you are here, the world is running the same."

"So in the battle, you are soldiers. You fight your best for who you are. When you are resting, the war has nothing to do with you... There will be somebody else doing their best here. It is not your turn to worry yet."

That was Ye Nantian's theory.

He made things clear.

Half of his men were on vacation. That was like a wonder in the Land of Han-Yang.

It only happened in the northern army which was led by Ye Nantian.

Even though half of his men were off, his army was still invincible. That was why his army was called the "World's Strongest Army".

A general, no matter how great and how honorable he was, would speak with respect and envy, "That is a miracle. A miracle that only belongs to Ye Nantian."

Ye Nantian's camp wasn't big at all.

There were only fifteen seats other than his own.

The five seats in front surely belonged to five of the Ten Generals. Behind them, there were ten smaller ones.

There were only fifteen generals who could enter his camp freely.

The generals who had made many meritorious exploits, or soldiers who had made huge contributions could enter his camp and receive the reward from himself once.

To enter this camp, this simple thing was the most elevated goal of all the soldiers in the northern army.

It was the crowning honor in the northern army.

Whoever entered the camp and came out in a short time would become like a superstar in the northern army.

"How is it?" Ye Nantian smiled while looking at the thirteen men.

"Complete victory."

A general with black beard smiled and answered.

The others started to laugh too.

"It seems your perfect tactics have never led us to any bad results."

"I believe the Hu-Lun Wolf King would never have imagined that their so-called 'million troops grassland union' were actually like a bunch of chickens and puppies in front of us... Hahaha..."

"Hahaha..."

The Hu-Lun Wolf King was something like a demon or a nightmare to the army before Ye Nantian arrived.

After Ye Nantian took charge of the army, it became something the soldiers would casually make jokes with. It became like the

name of a clown.

It was a huge change.

"The battle is never within our expectations. There will always be some kind of changes. We mustn't be reckless." Ye Nantian smiled and warned, "Hu-Lun Wolf King is not easy to deal with. The fights these days were merely his probing attacks... His main force, the Wolf Head Troop, hasn't shown up yet."

"Even if that Wolf Head stupid Troop really gets to us, they will be like pxssies in front of our great Commander Ye." The generals all laughed.

...

Chapter 163: I Am Not a Hero!

The generals truly looked down upon the Wolf Army, even though it was the most famous force in the Northern Grassland.

It was full of laughter in the main camp.

The cruel and bloody battle outside the camp seemed to be a funny game to them.

As long as Commander Ye was here, the battle was just like a funny game to them.

It didn't threaten anyone at all.

However, something absonant happened.

The messenger shouted outside the camp, "Lord Commander, an emergency letter from your family."

Ye Nantian frowned, "An emergency letter? Why now?"

The young grand archer, General Ma, was sitting outside the camp and he laughed, "Well get it in then. Our beloved commander hasn't received anything from his family for half a year already."

He walked forward to the messenger and walked back to the camp with stride. He came to Ye Nantian and showed him a letter

on his hands, "Lord Commander, it is indeed an emergency. There is a blood club's stamp."

Ye Nantian nodded blandly and got the letter. He unsealed it in the camp.

After just a glance, his face changed.

The calm and vigorous face suddenly became pale like a paper.

His big and strong body began to tremble.

The generals realized something was wrong. [General Ye has always been calm like a mountain, how come he is acting like this?] They all stood up immediately and asked anxiously, "Lord Commander, what happened?"

[Something big must have happened in his family that it could actually make our commander act like this.]

Ye Nantian seemed deaf. His hands shivered and the letter fell off.

A general with black beards grabbed the letter before it touched the floor. He put it close and read loudly, "Big brother, quickly return please. Xiao-Xiao has been hit by the Melting Bone Palm. His bones all became like cotton. He is in vital danger. Please, come back to see him one last time."

He got stunned before he finished.

Everyone in the camp heard it.

The camp became extremely silent.

They were all astonished.

The words were like endless thunders striking loudly upon everyone's head. It stroke in their hearts. They felt their heads resounding bombs. They felt a bit dizzy. They just couldn't believe what they had heard.

[Xiao-Xiao is the commander's only son.

Now he is in vital danger?

How come?]

Ye Nantian was shaking. He clenched both of his hands.

At the same time, a purple glow started to appear on his body.

An extremely shocking vigor appeared and filled the camp.

The sword that was hanging on the wall suddenly came out 15 centimeters from its sheath, shining in cold glow.

And then an enormous killing intent suddenly covered the entire grassland.

At the moment, it was like the sky was falling down.

The black-bearded general took a deep breath in and continued with the letter, "... The army of Hua-Yang departed and Xiao-Xiao saw them off. The grandson of the Right Prime Minister, the son of the Revenue Minister, the son of the Rites Minister... Several foppish young lords came and made troubles after the army was gone... Xiao-Xiao returned to the house and suddenly spat blood and passed out. His bones were soft like cottons... It was obviously the Melting Bone Palm... I reckon that it must be those foppish young lads who secretly assaulted..."

The black-bearded general couldn't help shouting in anger when he read up here, "Fxck those political dogs. They have done nothing but make shxts all the time."

It was full of anger in the camp all of a sudden. Everybody's eyes were red.

"A bunch of assholes! We are fighting with our lives in the frontline, and they are having good days behind us. Fine, no problem. Yet they actually messed with our families!"

"God damn it! How dare they actually hurt our young lord so bad. When I am back there, I am going to wipe out their clans!"

"Fucking assholes!"

"We are splashing bloods here! Countless brothers died in the battle far from their families. Those bastards are enjoying the peace we made with our lives, yet they are actually bullying our families!"

"They are a bunch of sick bastards that are even worse than pigs and dogs!"

The generals were shouting in great anger.

Many concerned eyes were looking at the quiet Ye Nantian.

[The Great General only has a son.

His son is all that his hopes rely on.

Now... his son is dying.]

"Lord Commander, go home!"

"My lord, go home quickly. The young lord needs you now."

"Lord Commander!"

Ye Nantian sighed and spoke in sorrow, "In my whole life, I have a clear conscience with which I can face the sky and the earth fearlessly. Yet there is one person that I feel sorry to.

That is my wife.

My wife has been locked up till now for me, for our son, and for our clan. I am a man, yet I am not able to suffer for her. I can't save her. I am truly ashamed.

Xiao-Xiao's life has been the only thing that she is concerned with.

So I care about my son the most. He has lost his mother since he was a baby, so I have tried my best to raise him...

That's why I would sacrifice anything for my son... That is the ultimate cause of the current situation.

If I can't even protect my Xiao Xiao, I..." Ye Nantian took a deep breath and spoke coldly, "I don't think I deserve to live in the world any longer!"

He turned around quietly looking at the sword on the wall.

He reached his hand gently and the sword and the sheath were in

his hand.

"Country..." Ye Nantian was in a pain and he murmured, "Where there is my country, there could be my home. Where my home exists is my country. Country and home, which one is more important? My home has been broken. Who is going to help me though?"

Selfish?

Maybe I am selfish.

But... I am just a person with blood and flesh. I am a husband and a father.

I have to return.

It may leave me a disgraceful history, but I can't care about that now."

Ye Nantian talked to them blandly with his back to them, "Please, brothers, you should continue the fight here. My mind is distracted. I cannot come up with any good plans though..."

If my son dies, I will never come back."

His eyes were cold looking at the air and said, "If my son dies, I will kill a lot of men in the capital for revenge.

Maybe I will come back and fight with you guys side by side as long as my son is alright.

I am not a hero. I can't be selfless.

I apologize, brothers."

Right after he finished talking, his figure flashed, and he instantly vanished without a trace.

A broad and bright sword light suddenly flashed in the sky and then disappeared.

The fierce killing intent that covered the entire grassland rapidly moved south.

Ye Nantian left alone.

He didn't even bring a trustful guard of his.

All the generals in the camp looked at each other without talking.

The leader in the north was gone.

The black-bearded general suddenly shouted, "How the hell can we just stand here doing nothing while our beloved commander's

family is in a misfortune! The 300 blood guards take the order! Immediately hurry back to the capital and support the Great General. Follow every instruction of the Great General!"

"Yes."

The 300 blood guards answered with a shout outside the camp at the same time.

The 300 blood guards were the best guarding force of Ye Nantian. These guards were strong enough to get in and out from thousands of enemies safely. They were the best force of the northern army.

Ye Nantian kept them here to help with the battle. However, the black-bearded general's order made the 300 killing machines leave for the capital.

The next moment, a sharp voice sounded loudly, "Brothers! Follow me! To the capital for our commander!"

Within a short time, it was full of the sound of horse steps outside the camp. The 300 blood guards, the most intimate troop of Ye Nantian, left rapidly like a big mass of dark cloud.

They were marching south with flying dusts.

It was like a huge Chinese dragon, long and vigorous, moving on the land.

The generals felt a bit depressed watching the flying dust getting far away.

"If the young lord couldn't make it... I am afraid the commander will really wipe the capital down..." One of them spoke worriedly.

Another guy humphed and said, "Wipe it down then! Those bastards deserve to die anyway! I hope none of them could escape! The only person I am worrying about is the commander... I wonder if he will ever return to the north."

Everyone sighed.

The black-bearded general sighed, "You may not know this... The commander... He never belonged to our world. He should be from the upper realm above the sky... The reason why he stays here guarding the north is that he owe it to the king, because the king saved his son. If the young lord really couldn't make it, there will be nothing that could hold him here in this world... Why should he return to the north then?"

Everyone was sad.

It meant they had just spent their last time with their beloved commander.

"I usually hear people saying... that there was some hero who always care more about country than his own family. The hero's

parents died and he didn't even go back home and just kept busying himself with the war affair while holding his tears. It became quite a moving story..." A young general sighed and spoke, "Well... I thought our commander may be the same..."

"Bullshxt!" Another man shouted angrily, "That man didn't even go back home to see his parents even though his parents were dying! That made him the most disgusting animal! And it is a moving story huh? I am going to punch you down to death if you dare to say that again!"

"That's just a story." Another general humphed and spoke, "Let me ask you something. We fight so hard here, and for what?"

For the safety of our country, surely. Yet if you spend your whole life in the army and you couldn't even get a single damn piece of silver, will you still stay here? Will you? Of course you won't. But why? You are here to protect your country aren't you? What's wrong with the silver then?

...

Chapter 164: A Leaf to the South; The Distant Snow of the Moon Palace

The general stared at the young general who had just talked and spoke coldly, “Vice-general Qu, you talk like you are such a noble and honorable man. From now on, why don’t you just give your salary to me. You can just live with your honorable ideal and be a noble royal man, can’t you? There are food and drink and clothes in the army anyway. It will keep you alive and enjoy your unforgettable glory. You will be a legend. You will be the next moving story.”

The vice-general’s face turned red and he said with anger, “Bullshxt. I didn’t finish yet. Why are you all talking against me? When did I say the commander shouldn’t return? I meant heroes are humans too.”

Everyone else humphed with disdain.

The black-bearded general spoke in a low voice, “For the country. For our home. Protect our home country. But what is a home country?”

He continued blandly, “Home country is a home and a country. They are never the same subject.

If there is only a country without a home, we never fight with our lives. If there is only a home without a country, we will live in danger... It is a question that will never be answered. Look at you quarreling? What’s the point?”

The others all lowered their heads sadly.

“We are just worrying about the commander... I wonder whether he will come back...”

“This misfortune... Really is a big strike to him...”

“That’s true... Will he come back?”

“No matter if he will... or not, we have to protect the north.”

“We will not disgrace the commander.”

Would Ye Nantian come back to the battle?

It was a question even Ye Nantian himself didn’t have the answer.

At least at this moment, he didn’t.

He hadn’t even thought about this question.

He just kept thinking about whether he could make it to see his son for the last time.

He was rushing like a lightning all the way back to the capital.

There seemed to be a mass of burning fire inside his heart.

He had always been calm, but was utterly upset now.

It was like he had been stuck in a ten thousand years old ice cave; like his blood was all frozen.

“Xue-Er, I am afraid I can’t keep our son well.”

“Xue-Er, I am so sorry.”

“Xue-Er, I am such a loser.”

“I can’t help you with your suffering. I can’t save you. Now I can’t even keep our only son alive. I am such a useless loser.”

“Xue-Er.”

It was dozens of thousands miles from the north to the capital.

Ye Nantian rushed on the land like a shooting star crossing the sky.

A leaf rushing to the southern sky; [the distant snow of the moon palace](#).

[I am Ye Nantian. My wife is Yue Gongxue. My son is Ye Xiao.]

A sword kept rushing south.

[I am coming back.

Xiao-Xiao, hang in there.

You must wait for me.

With father, death itself will have to give up.]

After Ye Nantian just left the army, the enemies of the Kingdom of Chen in different directions all gave out an order.

The order suddenly spread all around the Land of Han-Yang resounding inside every killer's heart.

“Reward is 50 million taels of gold. Stop and kill Ye Nantian on his way.”

The northern battle was always their strategic point. Ye Nantian had been the only difficulty that stopped them from snatching it. He was worse than a nail in their eyes or a thorn inside their flesh.

In fact, lots of assassin associations had placed their men in the

north preparing to assassinate Ye Nantian at any moment.

However, Ye Nantian had always been staying inside the camp that was surrounded by countless soldiers and guarded by his trustful men. It was not easy for any countries or organizations. Thus, for a long time, all hostile forces were just watching.

They knew they had to be sure they would succeed before they took a move. Otherwise, they will be cruelly stricken.

If the soul figure of the northern army was messed with, the millions of soldiers would get furious at the same time.

There had been far more than a dozen tribes in the northern grassland; a total of twenty-three. The head of them was not the Hu-Lun Wolf King; it was the Snake King, Tie Mujia, who had been brave and vicious at the same time. He had been rather powerful that over seven tribes had pledged permanent loyalty to him. He was heroic and strong, and that made him in the highest position of the northern grassland. He had a cruel heart with which he would do anything to get what he wanted. His name had been a scary thing to mention in the north at that time.

He had been the biggest threat to the Kingdom of Chen. He was even more dangerous than the other two kingdoms.

However, Ye Nantian's presence had ended the dominating path of Tie Mujia.

Sixteen years ago, when Ye Nantian first arrive in the north, he led the soldiers of the Kingdom of Chen to fight against the united army of the grassland tribes that was led by Tie Mujia. Even though Ye Nantian's troop was short in number, with his smart tactics, he won all of the seven fights and overwhelmingly defeated the united army of the grassland.

The Snake King realized that Ye Nantian was a powerful opponent. He didn't dare to fight against Ye Nantian in a frontal battle. When Ye Nantian was heading back to the capital because of some other reasons, the Snake King set up lots of traps and men on his road trying to kill him. However, Ye Nantian survived all those like a myth. He returned to the capital safely and got his work done quickly.

When Ye Nantian came back to the north, the nightmare of Tie Mujia started. In the coming one and a half years, Ye Nantian kept making fatal strikes to Tie Mujia. The end of the Snake King's nightmare was death.

The dominator of the grassland, Tie Mujia the Snake King, finally fell down under the sword of Ye Nantian.

The seven tribes that had sworn loyalty to the Snake King were also defeated by Ye Nantian. These tribes were all merged by other tribes and their names became historical records too.

If Ye Nantian didn't come to the north, there would never be a place for the Hu-Lun Wolf King. Every tribe in the grassland wanted to kill Ye Nantian, yet no one dared to move, because if they failed, they would be messing with death itself.

That was why the tribes of the grassland still didn't dare to move, even though the war had been in an important moment.

Ye Nantian finally left the north. They all knew it through the spies.

Ye Nantian was never the invincible commander when he left the army. That meant it was possible to kill him now.

So all the forces gave off the killing order at the same time.

Countless assassins started to move.

That was a job of millions of gold.

The ten thousand miles long way suddenly became full of dusts and fierceness.

Countless killers all crowded along the road for the super reward.

Before Ye Nantian completely get out of the grassland, he had encountered three assassinations.

One was more dangerous than another.

However, he showed a truth to the entire grassland; even to the

whole Land of Han-Yang.

The truth was that the myth about how he survived the endless traps of the Snake King was true. He truly had that unbelievable kind of strength that was like a miracle.

Ye Nantian was holding his only sword rushing alone. He killed every man or thing that ever tried to stop him. All the way to the south, nothing could really stop him even a bit. He was like a sharp blade cutting through the sky. It was utterly sharp. He kept rushing madly.

He was like a glowing shooting star flashing away on the land.

To the south.

To the south!

TO THE SOUTH!

However, there were still lots of killers and traps waiting ahead of him.

Those were men that didn't believe in myth or miracles. They never knew that they were not expecting the reward of millions of gold. Instead, they were only waiting for death.

In the Land of Han-Yang, there had never been a man's head that

could be worthy of 50 million bars of gold in the history.

If there really was one now, that meant he was a man that could never be killed in the Land of Han-Yang. After Ye Nantian killed countless men and created a ten thousand miles long blood path, the whole land had come to this conclusion.

All this way, the path he trekked on was afterwards called ‘the dead path of assassins’.

In the coming millions of years, every assassin would feel scared when stepping on this path.

They realized that there was a myth and also a miracle in the world.

In fact, another order was given off right after the first order was out.

“Kill Ye Xiao immediately.”

At the end of this order, there was a signature. It was a misty lotus with a drop of blood on it.

That was a first-class killing order.

Apparently, the enemies knew that if Ye Nantian was impossible to kill, they better kill Ye Xiao before Ye Nantian arrived.

As long as Ye Xiao died, Ye Nantian would turn mad, and he would never serve the kingdom.

The man who gave off the order clearly knew it.

It was a more secret and private order than the last one.

It was a perfect way to solve many problems.

If Ye Nantian wanted revenge, he could naturally kill whoever had laid his hand on Ye Xiao. It wouldn't have anything to do with other people or organization.

An order with a sense of blood entered the Chen-Xing City.

The northern wolf troops were overjoyed too when they knew that Ye Nantian had left. They immediately made crazy strikes to the northern army like mad. All of a sudden, the battle was rather tensed.

It was even scorching in the north now than the other three directions.

As the situation was getting worse, the Kingdom of Chen started to feel overwhelmed.

...

Ye(叶) means leaf. Nan(南) means south. Tian(天) means sky.

Yue(月) means moon. Gong(宫) means palace. Xue(雪) means snow.

Chapter 165: You Are Too Needy!

It had been only one day since Ye Nantian left the north. The king was aware of it already. He held the letter that was delivered by the Million Miles Eagle and made a long sigh.

He was hoping that Ye Nantian might think more about the country and stay in the north.

Even though he had always known it was like a dream, he didn't give up the hope. Now that the truth was right in front of him, he could only sigh.

At the moment, the three princes were at his side.

They all heard the king say something clearly.

"All these years, there have always been just several men in Ye Nantian's house. It should have been suppressed by other clans long ago, yet it has always been fine in the capital. Do you know why?"

"The other clans never made any real troubles these years, even though they are a bit out of restraint."

"Now things have become different. And the changes began when you three started to be against each other."

"If anybody tells me that Ye Xiao's misfortune has nothing to do with all of you three... I won't believe it."

"Your eagerness for the throne... may have led to the fact that... the hundreds of years old Kingdom of Chen is collapsing because of this son of a general."

At the end, the king sneered, "If the kingdom collapses, what is going to be left for this throne though? You are still fighting for the throne, but if the kingdom falls, do you think you can have the right to even kneel under this throne?"

And then the king shouted in a deep voice, "Get the hell off here if you understand."

The Crown Prince and his brothers hurriedly left the place filled with cold sweat.

"Do you think you can have the right to even kneel under this throne?"

That was like a thunder striking above their heads at the same time.

It had stricken the three of them so badly like they were over-burned.

The king, of course, knew about the fights among the three princes. He had punished those officials, yet he didn't condemn the

princes. However, what he said had just made a clear warning to them.

[I know whatever you three have done.

This is a warning.

Or you may see it as a notice. If the kingdom truly falls, then you three...]

The three princes stood at the door of the palace. They looked at the reports coming to the Cheng-Tian Hall of the Royal Palace one after another.

They looked at every bearer's face and hoped that they could find any positive expression. Because that might mean they had gained victory somewhere...

As long as they had won any battle, it meant there was a chance they were winning the war. It would make everybody in the kingdom feel stronger.

However, all the bearers were in a hurry with sweats and sorrow.

The four battles were falling at the same time.

That was a real tense situation.

Even though they knew they should delay the time of the war, they had no idea how to.

The Kingdom of Chen was a super kingdom that had been dominating the whole Land of Han-Yang, yet it actually seemed to be falling down within only over ten days.

Maybe the kingdom had just escaped the fate that it would fall.

Several days ago, the king had just announced that the Kingdom of Chen would become the exception of the collapsing dynasties in the history. Now it was like a big joke to everybody.

The main cause of the current situation actually was a well-known foppish young lord.

Human beings had always been toys to the gods.

The king was in the study room. After dealing with some reports, he frowned and shouted with an order, "Send a group of the sky-level guards of the inner hall to the General's House. They should protect Ye Xiao and make sure he stays alive till the moment Ye Nantian returns."

"Yes." A voice promised outside.

The king looked at the war reports with a bitter smile and murmured, "Even if you want to fight against me, I... I should let you see your son for the last time after all."

And he sighed again.

"Even if you don't really see me as your brother, I have only sworn brothers to others for once."

"If you want to leave, I won't stop you. If you stay... Brother, if your son dies, will you stay?"

The king's face was covered by sorrow.

A foppish young lad was the reason of all this.

Lord Ye, Ye Xiao surely didn't know how big a trouble he had made recently.

Because of his Uncle Song's help, he didn't even play a wounded man in the house.

He was in the Ling-Bao Hall, enjoying the feeling of being the Monarch.

The breaking news in the whole kingdom was surely with a title like "Ye Xiao is dying! Nantian is coming back!" The second piece of news should be all the other forces began to attack the Kingdom of Chen. The third one would be that there showed up a Monarch in the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom all of a sudden.

The most interesting thing was that this Monarch, Feng Zhiling, was just an unknown man.

Nobody had expected that the powerful Ling-Bao Hall, which had always been a powerful presence in the world, would suddenly have a new boss, the Feng Monarch. For so many years, nobody was able to challenge the Ling-Bao Hall.

Ling-Bao Hall officially put it clearly that the Monarch was a position that was even higher than Wan Zhenghao.

That meant Ling-Bao Hall had changed their chairman.

That was quite a piece of breaking news.

"Ok. That's the plan of the next auction." Ye Xiao spoke blandly to Wan Zhenghao, who seemed to be excited with a glowing face.

"Good, good, good! That's awesome!" Wan Zhenghao was thrilled, "With all those beautiful objects, I am so going to clean up all those rich guys' pockets... Otherwise, I must be wasting my life in this business..."

"How much do you think we can make?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Well it really depends..." Wan Zhenghao looked at the objects displayed in front of him one by one. His eyes lit up and he was short of breath. He said, "These things are in such a high range. They will surely bring us a huge amount of money."

Ye Xiao spoke casually, "I know. Can you give me a rough number?"

Wan Zhenghao thought for a while and said, "All these things will at least bring us several billions... other than some treasures and priceless materials."

Ye Xiao nodded, "That's fine."

Wan Zhenghao looked at him admiringly and he seemed a bit embarrassed, "Master Feng, you are really a broad-minded man. You know what. What you are going to earn at one time is equal to what I could earn in ten years."

Ye Xiao spoke surprisedly, "What? No way. How can you earn just that little?"

Ling-Bao Hall was a well-known wealthy place. Ye Xiao thought that what he had brought this time were although dramatically valuable, still shouldn't be precious enough to move the heart of the boss of the Ling-Bao Hall. Wan Zhenghao had been serving Gu Jinlong for over a thousand years after all. Even though he was just a servant, he was a thousand years old servant.

[He asked me 'how can you earn just that little'?

Comparing to billions of money?]

Wan Zhenghao was shocked.

He looked at Ye Xiao and opened his mouth like he was about to cry, "Well... What do you expect me to say as a response?"

Ye Xiao spoke with a deep voice, "I can only tell you it is not a huge number you were talking about."

Wan Zhenghao opened his eyes widely, "Master Feng, you are not kidding, are you? I am talking about several billions regardless of the treasures and materials."

Ye Xiao sighed and spoke, "Hey... There is something you just cannot understand."

He was a bit blank though.

[I think I have underestimated Gu Jinlong's narrow mind. Wan Zhenghao has been serving Gu Jinlong for such a long time, yet his knowledge is still the mortal world's level.

He didn't understand at all that many things in the Qing-Yun Realm are much more expensive than billions in this world.]

"Wan, you don't need to care too much about it. When you have experienced enough, you will understand it. Let's stop the discussion about the auction now. Listen. Don't you think that with our power, it seems to be wasted to just do auction business?" Ye Xiao pointed at the forces map of the Land of Han-Yang that

was taken out by Wan Zhenghao. He frowned, "We plan and plan, and we just earn that little money. You are the boss of the Ling-Bao Hall. You actually acted like that when you merely heard the number of several billions. It really shouldn't be like this."

Wan Zhenghao was stunned. He didn't know what to say. [My business should be the kind that is the best in the world. Several billions should be a huge number that most people will never have the chance to see, yet it seems to be so little for my new boss...

What the hell?]

Wan Zhenghao spoke with a bitter face, "Master Feng, well, why did you say that? We... I mean... Ling-Bao Hall has a full range of customers, which were mostly the martial forces in the Land of Han-Yang... Well, it took me a thousand years to have such an achievement though... I have no hobbies, you know, except for making money..."

He sighed, "I can always make the official forces feel good about our existence, but I have always been afraid that if we go too far, we might get destroyed. I really wouldn't want that to happen."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "What if I tell you that from now on, no matter what we do, there will be no bad results returned to us. How about that?"

...

Chapter 166: Emotions; The Nature!

Wan Zhenghao widely opened his eyes and said, "You... Monarch, are you actually able to do such a thing?"

Ye Xiao humphed and said, "First of all, we need our own intelligence network. All the branches of the Ling-Bao Hall should be a unified intelligence network. Second, we need to spend a lot of money to build our own assassination department. We need to show up with initial success as soon as possible. Third, spend whatever it takes to do charity. Don't be chary. The money we are going to make will be far beyond what you can imagine. Last and the most important one is that we need to arrange our execution department."

"We should show no mercy to the villains. I won't stand soft." Ye Xiao raised his head and looked at the night sky through the window. He spoke blandly, "Since I have to stay here in this world for a period of time, I guess I should do something that should be done."

Wan Zhenghao nodded, "Yes. I will be right on it."

"I don't care how you do it. I just want you to do it secretly. Ling-Bao Hall will still be the old Ling-Bao Hall, just a place for auctions." Ye Xiao spoke gently, "You are an experienced man. I believe you know what to do, right?"

"I do. There is no need to worry." Wan Zhenghao replied.

"Besides, we don't need many people in our assassination department, because all the cultivators in the world can be our assassins." Ye Xiao said blandly, "Post some rewards."

"Let's call it the reward board..." Ye Xiao thought for a while, "We call it... the Life and Death Board."

"Life and Death Board." Wan Zhenghao murmured and his eyes slowly lit up. He said, "I got it. I understand."

"What we do here with the board is to fight against the House Of Chaotic Storms." Ye Xiao spoke blandly.

"Remember though, if anybody posts a reward on our board and turns out that it they want to take innocent people's lives, the one who posts it and the one who takes the reward should be put on our board and be hunted by other assassins."

Wan Zhenghao's face twitched.

[Isn't it a bit too difficult to be against the House of Chaotic Storms?]

"Everything should be undercover." Ye Xiao said, "And I just want to know the outcomes. I don't want to know any bit of how things are done."

Wan Zhenghao's face turned dark; he seemed to be upset.

He was now working for a man who only saw the outcomes and left everything else to him. The good side with it was that he didn't lose any of his power in the Ling-Bao Hall. However... he would need to be concerned with more and more businesses.

"After the auction... Your Slimming Dan Beads should be ready." Ye Xiao smiled. Apparently, he had just thrown a bait.

Wan Zhenghao was thrilled, "Oh!"

As nothing was better than this for him, how could he not be happy about it.

However, he was shaking with over 500 kg fat on his body. Ye Xiao saw it and felt truly disgusted, so he had to leave right away...

Wan Zhenghao made the Xiao Monarch retreat by only shaking his body. He should have in an important position in the history.

...

It was in the House of Ye.

Song Jue had left the bed and went around the house for a while, yet he returned to the bed and said worriedly, "Xiao-Xiao, do you think maybe we have gone too far on this? The king has come and all the officials have come. I feel that something wrong has

happened along the line..."

Song Jue looked at all the presents that were piled up in the room and spoke with concerns, "I think the kingdom is going to collapse soon..."

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and said, "There are emergencies, while there are also ordinary issues. Meanwhile, there are things we have to do. What we have to do now is to protect ourselves. We have to stay safe and then we can figure out something to take those bastards lives. If we didn't make such a big issue this time, how could the king be so cruel to his good officials... The last thing we should worry about is the question you are asking. I know the kingdom is going to fall, but it hasn't yet, has it?"

Song Jue sighed. He was a bit upset.

"I followed my big brother here, the Land of Han-Yang... I have been through those days with swords, spears, horses, battlefields..." Song Jue looked out through the window sadly. He was a bit sentimental.

He was not a native in this world, yet he had been in the army for some time. He had been protecting this kingdom for quite some days. He had emotions for this country, and he had the sense of responsibility as a soldier.

Now he was here looking at the kingdom, where he had put a lot of contributions, falling slowly. How couldn't he be upset about it.

Ye Xiao was a bit worried when he saw Song Jue like that.

Although he was a well-experienced man, he hadn't lived in this world for long. That feeling for the country was something he lacked.

So he never cared about anything of this kingdom really.

However, looking at Song Jue, he felt that maybe he had done something wrong this time. Maybe he had been reckless on something.

[Home country.

What is home country?

Home country... Home country...]

The two words kept showing up in his heart. He seemed to feel something, but actually not.

Song Jue was lost in the sad feeling. Ye Xiao looked at him and thought of the day when the Army of Hua-yang departed; although those soldiers knew they might die far away from home, they were still brave and excited.

Ye Xiao thought of something.

[Protection.

Guarding.

Responsibility.]

Suddenly, his dantian seemed motivated.

And then a mass of purple qi suddenly expanded in it.

It was like there was a door opening inside him. He felt relaxed and enlightened at the same time.

There suddenly showed up four golden and shiny words in the boundless Space.

Ye Xiao's body suddenly shook.

He finally understood what he lacked, and what he truly needed. And he kind of understood why he couldn't break through the peak of the Dao Origin Stage in his previous life.

The four words were "sentiments of the nature".

Ye Xiao was stunned.

Four simple words had already explained many things.

"So it is. That is the real rule of the natural law." Ye Xiao took a deep breath.

A bleak voice, which seemed to have come from the ancient times, suddenly resounded in his heart.

"Sentiments... of... the... nature..." The voice was so special. It seemed the sound that showed how the universe came from nothing...

"It is said... If the nature have emotions, it will also grow old; if the moon doesn't hate, it will stay full... Yet that is wrong. The nature, the whole universe is growing older and older. It watches how mankind suffer, and the nature is suffering at the same time."

"There are rules and responsibilities of the nature. The moon and the sun have their responsibilities. The grass and the woods have their responsibilities. A man has his own responsibility..."

"A man could only stand up straight with responsibilities. A man should never betray his country. Cultivation is something against the will of nature. If a man doesn't dare to take responsibility in the world, how can he cultivate?"

Ye Xiao listened to it and he was sweating because of embarrassment.

"Mankind has seven kinds of emotions, while the nature has one

criterion. Why does mankind have seven? Why does nature have one criterion? The seven emotions and six desires are man's nature. The one criterion of the nature is the paramount rule. The one paramount rule is sentimental and it never ends."

The voice seemed to be tired. It was bleak and blank, like it was going to disappear at any moment.

Ye Xiao didn't know where it came from and how it came to be.

"Happiness, anger, sadness, fear, love, antipathy and hatred. These are people's seven emotions. They all followed love, so humans have only one true emotion. They are happy for love, angry for love, sad for love, annoyed for love, hateful for love, fearful for love, and they love for love."

"There are seven emotions based on love. Love creates six desires. Love mankind; that is the sublime love. Love your country; that is the fundamental love."

"Your body belongs to something; your heart belongs to something; you yourself belongs to something. That is your home. All heroes belongs to their homes. That's what makes them heroes at the first place."

The voice kept sounding.

Ye Xiao lied in bed. He just lied there and breathed calmly. He focused on listening.

Song Jue thought he was asleep, so he quietly left.

Listening to the voice talking, Ye Xiao felt like his mind was traveling outside the universe. Those that he couldn't understand in his previous life were now turning clear one by one.

Love.

Because of love, people got mad. Their beloved ones being messed up would make people angry. People felt sad because they lost something or someone they love. Because they love their lives, they feared death...

Everything was because of love.

[But...

Did I love in my previous life though?

I have been solitary all my life, and I always laughed at people in the world. It looks cool but who knows how sad it is to be alone all the time? I cultivated the Pure Yang Martial Art and couldn't love and be with a girl. I was also an orphan, so I never experienced the love of family.

I have never loved.

How could I possibly have responsibility if I didn't love? What was I going to protect?

Yet I actually wanted to be on the way to the paramount position.

Wasn't that a joke?

A complete joke.]

Ye Xiao's heart was shaking at the moment.

[I turned out to be such a loser in my previous life...

I actually had nothing.

No. Actually, I did have...]

He couldn't help thinking of the beautiful girl in white dress in his previous life.

Her sad eyes and her crystal teardrops. Those were like glowing pearls dropping down on the floor.

A true and beautiful affection had been waiting for him, yet he never saw straight to it those days. He ignored it like it was something useless. How he blamed himself for that now.

Ye Xiao was sentimental. He murmured inside his mind, "If I have the chance to meet you in this life... I won't fail you. I will hug you the first second I see you."

Suddenly, the images in his mind changed. He seemed to see himself as a child being bullied and begging among the crowd on the endless streets. He felt painful.

[Why did my parents abandon me...?

Why?]

...

Chapter 167: Breakthrough! Enlightenment! Assassination!

Ye Xiao felt painful in his heart. That was something sticking deep inside his heart and could never be removed.

[I actually had nothing in my previous life.

What I had was only the world-shocking cultivation capability. That's all.

My only friend got killed...

This life...

Although I am in another Ye Xiao's body, since I am living in this body, it should be my body, my responsibility and my home.

In my present life, I have parents and friends. I have families, brothers, lover and home country.

They are all my responsibilities. They are what I should protect.

I turned out to be so wealthy this life.

Those I longed for in my previous life, now I have them all.

Ye Xiao took a deep breath. It seemed he had to let it go... Or maybe he just suppressed the feelings. He was relaxing himself.

[I have them all.

I should protect them all.

I am protecting them all.

I have them, and I don't want to lose them.]

Su Yeyue's adorable face showed up in his mind looking at him smilingly.

Ye Xiao was motivated. He couldn't help smiling.

[This little girl is truly cute.

I will live this life carefully for all the things and people I should protect.

I will never miss any bit of the wonderfulness in my life.]

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts. Gradually, he became fully relaxed.

While he was relaxing, the purple qi inside his dantian was running.

A mass of purple qi bursted inside his dantian and filled it up.

The change inside Ye Xiao's body actually caused the change of the astronomical phenomena.

It should be a cloudy dark night, but suddenly, the clouds were all gone and the moon was hanging in the sky brightly splashing the silver glows to the world.

A few rounds of purple glow appeared around the moon.

That was a wonderful night.

Lots of people looked at the moon; this night was a night they would never forget it until they died.

Yet nobody knew that, at the moment, the purest purple essence in the world was bursting in the moonlight towards somewhere in the world.

One after another, streams of purple light entered the Chen-Xing City, the General's House, the back yard and entered Ye Xiao's body.

The purple qi in his dantian was increasing in a crazy rate.

In the Boundless Space, the purple qi was like huge waves. It

nearly made the whole Space covered by a layer of crystal purple color.

In the place where the egg stayed, a huge amount of purple qi had gathered. It nearly became solid. It was like a big piece of purple amber. The egg was swallowing the purple qi like mad. Every single bit of the purple qi was absorbed immediately when it entered the egg's range. At the moment, the purple qi in the world was rushing toward and into Ye Xiao's body. Thus, even though the egg was swallowing the purple qi wildly, there was endless purple qi for it. That was balanced anyway.

As more and more of the purple qi entered the egg, the egg became more and more crystal-like. The patterns on the egg became clearer and clearer, and it became as big as a small watermelon from as big as an apple...

The nine spaces were also filled with purple qi. Luckily, the purple qi didn't work like the gelid qi. It didn't hurt anything in the Spaces. Instead, it was helping the Spaces.

In the Wood Space, the precious plants grew crazily fast after being touched by the purple qi. The Tree of the Cultivating Tea actually became as thick as a bowl. The leaves were growing bigger like a huge umbrella. After a while, the crown of the tree became ten meters big.

The leaves became a bit crystal silver like the moon light.

Ye Xiao didn't know any of all this.

Because the voice was still sounding inside his mind. Ye Xiao was like swimming in the long river of life. He couldn't feel anything else.

The purple qi had filled his dantian after just a while. His dantian was completely full. His dantian turned out to shrink automatically. It was actually purifying the purple qi by compressing it. And then his dantian was full again and it compressed the purple qi again. Again and again...

When it was full the ninth time, it exploded along with the compression.

The pure purple qi that was compressed for nine times suddenly disappeared, and there showed up a small bit of purple light.

At the same time, Ye Xiao felt extremely comfortable. He unconsciously threw out some dark purple thing. He didn't feel painful. He didn't even wake up from his mind trip.

After a while, the world became normal again.

The moon was bright in the sky. The moonlight was splashing around the earth. There was nothing related to the purple qi anymore.

Ye Xiao opened his eyes slowly. His eyes were bright. He felt that his body had become totally different now.

He was no more a man without destination.

He was no more a man without love.

Families, lovers, brothers, home, country...

Ye Xiao breathed out and murmured, "God, is this how you make up for me?"

Suddenly, he felt the Space shaking.

The reason it shook was that the gate to the second level of the East-rising Purple Qi had opened a crevice.

Ye Xiao was of course overjoyed seeing so. He motivated his mind and peered at his sea of consciousness to check on it.

At the moment, he suddenly had a scary feeling.

A sharp light with a bunch of sword breaths rushed over from outside the window like a lightning.

It was a sword move filled with killing intent.

It was a killing move.

It was an assault from an assassin.

It must be from a top-ranked assassin.

He was here to assassinate Ye Xiao.

At the moment, sounds of shouts appeared around the House of Ye. Countless black figures jumped and flew over to the house. Some of them were coming from outside, while the others were jumping in the house.

There were over fifty men in black. There were also about forty men fighting against them with swords.

A horn was resounding in the sky from the watchtower.

"Assassins!"

Song Jue shouted loudly and his voice had shocked the silent night. There was a stream of a bloody red color with blue and yellow covering the long-sword in his hand. He was rapidly running to Ye Xiao's room. The weapon had a name, Blood Glow.

However, there were six masked men trying to stop him on his way.

One of them seemed to recall something. He suddenly shouted, "Blood Blade General! Are you Song Yidao? No wonder you haven't

shown up in the battle for so many years. You have been hiding in the House of Ye."

Song Jue's eyes were sharp. He shouted fiercely, "You know shxt!"

The Blood Glow moved like the wind. - Boom! Boom! boom! - The six men spat out blood at the same time and staggered back.

Six men at ninth level of the Earth Origin Stage actually couldn't stop Song Jue's fierceness.

One sword move had already caused huge damage.

"Wait... You are not Song Yidao... Even the Blood Blade General doesn't have the capability of this..." The man was coughing as he shouted, "Who are you? Who the hell are you?"

Song Jue's sword flashed again. He didn't stop rushing. He was like a long rainbow moving forward as he spoke coldly, "I did tell you that you know shxt! You don't even know shxt!"

He swayed the sword and six heads dropped down to the floor.

With the color of blood shining, Song Jue didn't stop a bit. He was rushing forward like death itself.

There were two other masked men in black trying to stop him.

Although they were just two men, they were much stronger than the six men earlier.

When the two of them moved, there were blue glows flashing. They were apparently cultivators of the Grade of Tianyuan.

Yet they had tried so hard and just temporarily stopped Song Jue.

Song Jue shouted to the sky, "KILL!"

A fierce vigor of killing suddenly filled the whole house.

The desire for killing in his heart was now fully released at the moment.

He felt so oppressed.

He felt even more oppressed than when he had lost all his cultivation. Now he had already recovered, yet he was still oppressed.

He had the capability that was over the limit of this realm, yet he was restrained because of his injury. He was so angry that he had actually been stopped by two men that were only at the Sky Origin Stage.

He wasn't just saying. "You know shxt!"

[Song Yidao?

Yep! I am Song Yidao, the Blood Blade General indeed.

Yet you will never know who I really is!]

He was not only oppressed, but also hurried.

How could he not be hurried. The enemies had apparently sent out their main force this time. They must have wanted to finish it all at once.

The assassination was a huge one.

Among the assassins that had already shown up in the House of Ye, there were forty over the eight level of the Earth Origin Stage. There were also eight men at the Sky Origin Stage. It was enough to even kill a king.

Yet now they were all here to take Ye Xiao's life.

They had only one job. They just couldn't let Ye Xiao live.

That meant it should be the Absolute Killing Order in the assassination world.

...

Chapter 168: Kill or Be Killed

The assassins tried everything to stop Song Jue.

They knew that once Song Jue got Ye Xiao, things would be totally different.

Song Jue kept trying to get through, but he couldn't. He was quite anxious. His condition hadn't fully recovered yet. Sometimes the enemies were showing their shortcomings. He could see them clearly, yet he just couldn't seize the chance. He had no choice but to keep roaring with a voice like a thunderclap, "Go protect the young lord, you bunch of dead men! Go quickly!"

The assassins kept defending Song Jue's attack and sneered, "Song Yidao, no more dreams now. The one who should be in that room is one of the most famous figures in the assassination world. Liu Changjun, Brother Liu, the one called Instant Killer. Ye Xiao should be dead right now."

Song Jue was shocked and several fatal attacks got over to him. He forcibly kept himself stable and defended the attacks. He shouted, "Liu Changjun! I, Song Jue, swear that if you dare to kill Ye Xiao, after tonight, everyone in your clan, old or young, women or men, will all get killed one after another!!!"

The man opposite to him sneered, "Hahaha. That's a scary useless threat. You should say that when you survive, well, if you can. And I think I should tell you that Liu Changjun is always solitary. He just belongs to no organizations and has no families. Hahahaha."

Song Jue was furious. He kept attacking more and more fiercely. The situation became rather tense at the moment.

However, nobody knew that the so-called Instant Killer, Liu Changjun didn't really dare to move now in the room.

Earlier than this, Liu Changjun used his fiercest sword move, striking a sharp sword light through the window of Ye Xiao's room.

It was a killing strike.

That was Liu Changjun's most famous move.

A long sword sent his enemies to the grave.

The sword light was sharp and fast.

He thought that Ye Xiao would surely die for it, so he started to think about how he could escape a thousand miles away. He thought that even though Ye Nantian was a powerful man, he wouldn't be able to find him.

However, when he was feeling extremely confident and entered the room vigorously, what he saw was the black cotton quilts.

When Ye Xiao saw the sword light getting close to his body, he

knew that the guy who struck it must be some superior cultivator. The sword light was pure blue. It meant the man was at least at the middle levels of the Sky Origin Stage.

Ye Xiao had improved a lot recently, yet he was still not a match to such a strong opponent.

Since he couldn't fight against him face-to-face, he had to use some tactics.

He got off the bed and casually threw the quilts that had been under his body. The quilts flew like a spinning dark cloud and became a perfect parclose.

He was covered behind the quilts.

The whole process made Ye Xiao feel that his body was so light all of a sudden. He was lighter than a swallow. No. It was more than that. He was actually lighter than fog. He didn't even feel difficult doing all the moves. He felt like he could do much more than just escaping the enemy's attack.

At the moment, the hidden energy inside his body suddenly bursted.

He felt like he would explode if he didn't emit the energy as soon as possible.

He had moved faster than he thought. He just casually struck

with his palm.

Liu Changjun's attack missed. The breath of the sword had torn the quilts apart, and the cottons flew over the room.

He realized that no one was there and saw a white palm coming so close to his face.

The counterattack was so quick, yet he knew that the one who struck was not strong enough. [He must be lower than the Sky Origin Stage. Look at his attack. It isn't even light blue.]

So he humphed and sneered, "He was over-confident."

So he didn't even think much and struck his left fist on it.

A fast attack and a fast counterattack.

- Boom! -

The palm and the fist crashed.

Liu Changjun thought that it was merely the attack of a low-level cultivator. He was striking a full power fist back. He thought he should have at least broken the palm at once.

However, things were out of his imagination and against the

natural law.

Ye Xiao wasn't damaged at all. His hand was fine. He just staggered a bit; his face suddenly turned purple for a second and then recovered to normal. He didn't step even a single step back.

There was a more astonishing thing.

Liu Changjun felt a stream of gelid qi, which seemed to be able to freeze the whole world, enter his hand through the palm.

That was too surprising. He didn't have the time to react, and his body was completely frozen. His fist was covered by a layer of hoarfrost. Half of his body was unable to move even a bit.

This weird gelid qi that had never appeared in this world had truly shocked Liu Changjun. His Jing and Mai were instantly damaged.

[What the hell! What happened?]

He was, however, an experienced guy. He didn't panic. He took a breath with his spiritual qi in and out. All of his cultivation power burst forth. His arms were shining with blue glow. That had quickly removed the gelid qi inside his hand. He was already sweating coldly.

He felt like he had already gone around the door to hell for three times. If Ye Xiao was a bit stronger, he would have died ten times

for now.

"What is this martial art? Who are you?" He suddenly realized the man he was dealing with was never a small figure. That palm had proven his high-level cultivation capability. He realized that his opponent might be even stronger than himself.

"You are here to kill me, yet you're asking me such a question. Are you here to kill me or to amuse me?" Ye Xiao smiled and sneered.

"You are Ye Xiao?" Liu Changjun shouted in astonishment. He felt scared at once.

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "You are so smart. I have to praise you for that."

Liu Changjun felt like being fooled.

He was so confused at the moment.

He had heard a lot about Ye Xiao. He was told that Ye Xiao was extremely useless, and he was at his last breath.

However, it turned out Ye Xiao was vividly alive.

[I am here to assassinate such a superior cultivator who has been faking ill...]

He was blank and confused. [Well... Is this supposed to be a trap?

Well urh... As an assassin, am I here to kill or to get killed?]

Ye Xiao clapped his hands twice. - Pah. Pah. - His one hand became golden, and the other became pure white. They were a golden hand and a gelid hand.

The palm strike he had made had given him much confidence.

He realized his cultivation capability had improved by leaps and bounds.

He struck it because he felt he had to, yet he still felt the same after that because the energy in his body was still bursting.

Most importantly, the strike had caused nothing harmful to his body. He even noticed that his strike was a bit light blue.

That was shocking to Ye Xiao.

He should have been at the fourth level of the Earth Origin Stage.

But he was stably at the eighth level now.

And he didn't feel it would become unstable at all.

[The enlightenment to me earlier must have boosted my cultivation. It was just the understanding of love that opened the gate to the natural law. It must have given me a surprising improvement.]

He was thinking while his hand was attacking. The golden one was flashing with golden flow, and the other one was striking cold qi. He was smiling coldly. His eyes were looking at the masked assassin.

His hair was flying in the air while he kept moving his hands.

What his feet did was the famous move of the Xiao Monarch, the One Laughter in Skyline.

Three marvelous martial arts struck together. Liu Changjun was complaining of suffering. He tried so hard to defend. He almost didn't have time to breathe. He was so focused on defending from the attacks. He had no time to speak, not to mention looking outside the window.

He could just curse in mind.

[This... Is this the 'useless foolish foppish young lad' the employer told me? Is this what they say 'hanging there with his last breath'? Is this Ye Nantian's useless son?

Who the fxck posted such a reward? That is simply deceptive!

It is going to fxck me up so bad this time!]

Liu Changjun couldn't help cursing in his mind. Other than that, he even wanted to cry.

The guy in front of him was obviously a vigorous and healthy man, and the guy even had an outstanding cultivation capability.

[So this is the 'dying man' you all have been talking about huh?

HE IS ACTUALLY FXCKING STRONGER THAN ME!!!

And he seems to be more experienced than I do...]

...

Chapter 169: Fishing in Troubled Waters

The thing that confused and upset Liu Changjun the most was that... the guy who was called a useless loser was even better at assassination than himself.

That was totally a nightmare to him.

Was the end of the nightmare his death?

Liu Changjun had one of the most outstanding capability in the assassination world, yet he couldn't use any of it in front of Ye Xiao.

That's right. He was at the middle levels of the Sky Origin Stage already. That was way beyond Ye Xiao's. Even though Ye Xiao had improved a lot, there was still a huge gap between them.

Such advantage didn't give Liu Changjun a bit of confidence at all.

His opponent's martial arts were really too aggressive. The golden hand was nearly invincible. It was an extremely sharp weapon crashing against his longsword. The longsword started to be breached, yet the golden hand was still totally unharmed.

If the golden hand didn't hit the sword and instead hit his body, he would be smashed.

The other hand, the gelid one, it was even more horrible.

Liu Changjun could at least defend the golden hand with his sword, yet he could only keep dodging the gelid qi. He totally didn't want to touch the gelid hand at all. He didn't even want his sword to touch the gelid hand.

The gelid qi would transfer through any materials and freeze him in an instant. That was totally freakish.

As the fight went on, the room became a gelid ice cave.

Liu Changjun started to feel really cold. His teeth were shaking. He became slower and slower bit by bit. When he struck, it didn't even show the blue color...

His eyes lit up as he started to step back.

He had made up his mind. He wanted to escape!

It was an impossible mission to him now. He had to escape and survive this.

[As long as I am alive, I will hunt the employer who posted this reward forever to the end of the world!

Fxck that shit! It sucks!

I am a fox and you told me there was a rabbit here who was supposed to totally have no power to fight back. You told me he was like a dish. I fxcking jumped in here and found the rabbit turned out to be a big tiger, you motherfxcker!

It is a tiger with sharp teeth and claws!

Wasn't it a trap?]

"Oh, you want to leave? So soon?" Ye Xiao slowed down and smiled.

"I was fooled! Am I supposed to get killed here? I am able to leave now. I might lose this chance soon." Liu Changjun shouted in a low voice.

And then he continued discontentedly, "Even when you are well, you shouldn't be so good like this... What is that with you?"

Ye Xiao raised his golden hand again, and it struck several times in an instant. The gelid qi was flying in the air with golden glow. He grinned and said softly, "Oh, it was a true information you got though. You just came here at a real bad time. When you just got here, I hadn't broken through yet. However, when you entered the room, I just finished the breakthrough! You are a lucky man. Don't you think?"

"What the fxck!" Liu Changjun nearly passed out.

[Lucky? I am a lucky man?

Is it a lucky thing?

Wait... Did you mean if I got here a tiny bit earlier, I wouldn't have fallen in such a mess? And if I got here a bit later, I would have avoided facing your bursting qi? Yet I got here right at the moment you got strong?

And you think I am a lucky man?

Lucky your mother's ass, you asshxle!]

"From now on, I will never return to this place!" Liu Changjun kept defending. He felt like his blood veins were all going to be frozen. He felt difficult to even defend from the attacks.

What he just said was apparently showing his thoughts. It was like begging for life.

"But if you go out, my secret will be revealed." Ye Xiao grinned, "So you can't go."

"Do you have to kill me?" Liu Changjun's face turned green.

Ye Xiao threw up his eyebrows and said, "As an assassin, didn't you just break the professional ethics?"

Liu Changjun nearly cried his tears down.

[You are really an abnormal weirdo. You actually talked about my professional ethics...]

Liu Changjun was technically much stronger than Ye Xiao for sure. However, under the threat of such strange martial arts, he couldn't have a way to fight back.

It was like facing an inherent bane to him.

He felt himself moving more and more slowly.

Now he realized that he couldn't even escape this. Ye Xiao was not only handling some marvelous martial arts, he was also good at flying art. Liu Changjun couldn't be a match to him even when he was in a perfect condition, and now he was influenced by the gelid qi.

Ye Xiao smiled, "I have been fighting without weapons against you with a sword. Now it's time I take out my weapons."

Liu Changjun was totally frightened. Ye Xiao had beaten him like shxt with only his hands. Now he actually started to use weapons...

[That is so going to take my life.

This is bullying...]

He saw something flashing in Ye Xiao's hand rapidly getting over to him.

He actually couldn't see what it was.

He raised his sword to defend, yet he could only feel something blink in front of his eyes. His sword missed the attack. He felt his chest was stabbed with a strange needle as quick as lightning. It contained the gelid qi that exploded inside his Jing and Mai. After it got into his chest, it stopped his energy from running.

"It's over."

Ye Xiao sighed. Under Liu Changjun's unbelieving gaze, Ye Xiao hit eighteen palms on his chest in the blink of an eye. Liu Changjun staggered back and fell to the floor like a pile of mud. He felt sweet in the throat, yet the blood was forced back before it was spitted out.

His entire Jing and Mai were locked by Ye Xiao.

He was totally unable to move.

- Shrag -

Ye Xiao took off the black clothes of Liu Changjun.

Liu Changjun was scared. He shouted, "What are you doing?" He was anxious and he thought, [Don't tell me he is gay, please!]

I am still... a virgin!

Oh no, that is not cool... That is such a shame!]

"What the hell are you thinking? Don't make sweet dreams! I am just borrowing your clothes, that's all!" Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I don't want people to know my true capabilities."

- Shoot shoot shoot! -

He took off all of Liu Changjun's clothes and put them on himself. And then he covered his face with the mask too and nodded, "You can get some rest here, dude. When I finish the mess outside... I will be back here to talk to you about some life stories."

Liu Changjun was relieved, [Thank god... He isn't gay. That was close. That nearly scared the hell out of me. I have never seen anybody who will take off the opponent's clothes...]

After that, he felt worried again.

[This man is horrible!

I am afraid I am going to beg for death in his hand this time.

The most scary part is that this Ye Xiao is always calm and casual doing all these things. He isn't even a bit anxious.

Every move was so elegant.

Yet that is the most terrifying thing to his enemies.

He must be the scariest opponent to his enemies.]

Liu Changjun felt a bit jealous, [If... If I can be like that too, I will definitely be some great figure as an assassin in the world. It is such a shame this Ye Xiao isn't an assassin... What a waste... However, I am confused with one thing. All these should never be found on a teenager.

Is this freak... a sixteen years old young man?]

- Poof! -

Ye Xiao didn't care about what Liu Changjun was thinking; he just put him under his bed. And then Ye Xiao span his body and became a dark shadow flying outside the window.

In his hand, it was the longsword of Liu Changjun.

It was a narrow longsword.

It was shiny with a blood-colored glow.

At the moment, the battle outside had become dense. Song Jue was striking his longsword like mad. He was alone against eight assassins at the same time, trying his utmost to get close to Ye Xiao.

No matter how hard he tried, there were people stopping him with even their bodies. The enemies just didn't let him through.

The eight of them kept stopping Song Jue.

The blood guards were busy fighting too. The royal guards had already flown up the firework asking for help several times. Many shouts kept coming from outside the house. Apparently, more and more enemies were coming. They just wanted to make sure Ye Xiao's death.

Ye Xiao was in black clothes, and he moved lightly and rapidly. He was full of killing intent.

That was actually the special aura of Liu Changjun.

He actually acted so well.

The eight men saw "Liu Changjun" and felt relieved. They just wanted to talk but Ye Xiao talked first, "Finish it quick!" And he struck.

- Shoot! -

The longsword was struck out.

The eight men heard the words "finish it quick", so they turned around to attack Song Jue at once. They thought their chief was going to join them. They became extremely confident and concentrated on the battle.

However, after a sword light flashed, eight heads dropped down to the floor at the same time.

The eight pairs of eyes on the heads were filled with confusion, [Why... did chief do this to me?

Why...]

...

Chapter 170: Complicated

Ye Xiao moved like lightning. He passed Song Jue, intentionally blinked twice to him, and then just left him. His sword flashed several times and some other assassins fell to the floor bleeding.

Song Jue was surprised and then realized what it was, "What the hell!"

He recalled that blink was kind of Ye Xiao's signature move.

Ye Xiao was wearing black and rushed to the crowd like a tiger striking the sheep. Wherever his sword reached, blood splashed like the rain.

Within only a short moment, there were already over a dozen assassins dying under his sword.

The assassins couldn't believe what they saw. They saw Liu Changjun, the best assassin among them, so they didn't prepare to defend at all. They didn't even have time to react before Ye Xiao rushed into the middle of the dense crowd. They thought he was their powerful support and felt like relaxing a bit, but he turned out to be the one who was to take their lives.

Many of them still didn't know what was wrong when their heads were off.

Within just a moment, dozens of men fell down in confusion.

The other assassins finally realized it. They tried to do something about it, yet things were out of their control now. They had lost many good men, and that made them unable to fight back. They could just try their best defending.

Ye Xiao looked around and knew he was going to win. He moved quickly and swung the sword. - Shoot! - He rushed up to the wall and then disappeared.

He used the One Laughter in Skyline again!

It was an easy job for him to use the One Laughter in Skyline now, even though he was still a bit weak. He just wanted to let everyone lose sight of him.

No one knew how the man in black just disappeared after killing dozens of men.

Anyway, Ye Xiao's absence didn't release the pressure on the assassin's group.

Some superior cultivators from the Royal House were attacking fiercely along with Song Jue. There were also horse stomps echoing from outside the house. Apparently, a lot of reinforcements were coming over to them.

As a whistle sounded loudly, all the assassins turned around and rushed out. Yet they were stopped by the soldiers outside who were coming to help the House of Ye. A few superior cultivators

had successfully escaped. The others were surrounded by the soldiers and got killed.

The superior cultivators from the Royal House followed Song Jue to Ye Xiao's room right away without checking the number of the dead assassins.

Ye Xiao's safety was apparently the most important thing at the moment.

Nothing else was more important.

If Ye Xiao died, they would be sentenced to a death punishment no matter how many assassins they had killed.

Song Jue was surely feeling quite well. He was the only one who knew that Ye Xiao was alright after all. He was only worrying whether Ye Xiao could get back to the room in time...

If he got caught to be faking his illness... That would be a huge trouble... Lying to the king was committing treason...

Song Jue was leading the others. He opened the door and saw the room in a mess.

Luckily, Ye Xiao was quietly lying in bed with a yellow face. He still had the same dying look. Everyone felt relieved at once.

Song Jue felt relieved because Ye Xiao made it back to the bed in time, while the others were surely relieved because Ye Xiao was still alive. Song Jue was confused though, [How come the kid is so good at flying martial art. That was an outstanding move out there. It was just as good as I did when I was in my best condition.]

"Thank god."

Some royal guards wiped the sweats on their forehead and felt pleased.

It was good that Ye Xiao survived.

The next moment, they started thinking about something strange back there, "Who was that guy in black? He was dressing just like the other assassins, and those assassins seemed to recognize him. Yet he actually helped us, and when he left, that was quite a shocking and brilliant flying martial art he was using. We actually couldn't understand how he left. That was creepy!"

They were all confused. The man didn't even give them the chance to say thank you...

Song Jue, the oscar-winning actor, casually said, "I don't know.

How should I know? Who am I gonna ask about it?"

The guards were more confused, [This is your house, man. We can only ask you, right?]

The royal superior cultivators went back to their spots guarding the house. Ye Xiao was lying in bed like a dead man. Song Jue was still watching him without even blinking his eyes...

Nobody knew that there were two groups of men that didn't show up but had a big fight too.

There were eight men in black hiding somewhere in the house when Ye Xiao rushed out as an assassin. They wanted to follow him right away, yet another man in black showed up and stopped them.

That man in black was much more stronger. He played so well with his sword. He actually stopped the eight of them easily.

That happened only in seconds. Then he just disappeared.

Ye Xiao was long gone then.

The eight men were furious.

"You bastard, Ning Biluo!" They cursed.

The man in black who stopped them was Ning Biluo. They knew well about Ning Biluo as they had fought against each other for many times. When Ning Biluo struck, they recognized him at once.

The cyan sword light was just too eye-catching.

"We took the order to protect Ye Xiao here. That was the Master's order... We haven't had the chance to move and actually got stopped... And it was the No. 1 assassin in the world who stopped us..."

One of the eight men angrily said, "How can we explain this?"

They all felt upset.

Finally, he continued, "Luckily, Ye Xiao is still alive. We can tell the Master and see it as a job-done. However, I feel so bad about being stopped like that. That was the most embarrassing thing that ever happened to me."

"Why does the Master want to save Ye Xiao? He has nothing to do with us..."

They talked and disappeared in the dark night.

When they completely disappeared, Ning Biluo showed up and smiled, and then he disappeared again.

As the No. 1 assassin in the Land of Han-Yang, he surely got the order, so he came to the house quite early...

He had to do it.

What he had to do was not to kill Ye Xiao; it was to protect him.

[I am not going to follow your lead, but I have to return the favor for saving me that day.

I will do something if you need it.

If you don't need it, nobody would know I have ever been here.]

He didn't worry about Ye Xiao's safety. He just worried about... whether Ye Xiao could stay undercover, so he hid inside the house and waited...

In fact, even if he didn't stop those men, they would have never succeeded in following Ye Xiao. Yet Ning Biluo still did it. It made him feel better...

[I finally did something for you though.]

There was another group of soldiers guarding Ye Xiao's house now.

That was rather secured.

Under Song Jue's gaze, Ye Xiao suddenly opened his eyes. He intentionally twisted his lips down.

Song Jue got closer, his eyes full of confusion, "Hmm?"

"Hmm." Ye Xiao nodded.

Song Jue looked under the bed and found a naked guy who was unconscious.

He was shocked and said, "What the hell!"

"An assassin." Ye Xiao said quietly, "He must be the head of them. I was wearing his clothes back there."

Song Jue opened his mouth widely.

[Isn't my nephew a crazy nut?]

He slapped Liu Changjun on the face and the man woke up. He realized they had failed the mission this time.

He closed his eyes and despondently said, "Kill me."

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "Oh, you want to die? That will be a lucky thing to you. Don't you know it is always the hardest to beg for death?"

The answer scared Song Jue a little bit.

[The guy is begging for death already. How could it be a lucky thing...]

"Who sent you here?" Ye Xiao asked gently.

That was a question he had been thinking about for a long time since everything happened.

The assassination was obviously in a hurry, yet whoever planned this was actually able to gather such a large amount of assassins. And Ye Xiao knew that those assassins were definitely from different assassination groups even though they had the same clothes.

That meant whoever planned this must be some really powerful figure. He should be horribly powerful that he had such a capability to gather the assassins.

An enemy like that hidden around Ye Xiao meant a sharp knife hanging right over his head.

It was such an enemy that even Ye Xiao didn't want to face.

"I don't know." Liu Changjun was still a bit dazed.

He really couldn't believe that he would have failed under the hands of such a teenager boy after spending half of his life in glory.

Now he actually didn't have a chance to get away of it.

The whole thing seemed so unreal to him.

...

Chapter 171: I Am Not Afraid of Death!

"You don't know huh..." Ye Xiao nodded calmly and spoke blandly, "What does that mean?"

His voice was calm and indifferent. Liu Changjun could feel how cold those simple words were to him. He felt like he was going to be frozen to death at any second.

If he didn't answer the question, or if he gave an unsatisfying answer, he would be cruelly tortured!

"I really have no idea. We all have seen the assassination reward. That's all. We kill for money. We just couldn't say no to such an enormous amount of money." Liu Changjun anxiously explained.

He was a top-class assassin. He didn't care about life or death. He doesn't care about the target's life and not even his own life. However, facing Ye Xiao, he felt extremely terrified from deep inside his heart!

It was so obvious.

He felt like it would have been a lucky thing to die instantly!

"Assassination reward." Ye Xiao raised his head and thought for a while, and then he continued, "Your name is Liu Changjun, right?"

Liu Changjun answered, "Yes."

Ye Xiao said, "No. 49 on the assassin's list of the Land of Han-Yang. The Instant Killer, Liu Changjun?"

Liu Changjun blushed.

He would always feel proud when somebody talked about his title and his ranking, yet now it was like a huge disgrace to him! He had become a prisoner at the moment... He just felt shameful.

Ye Xiao stared at him while slowly pacing around in the room.

"Liu Changjun, you have two choices! First, follow my lead! Second, you die!" Ye Xiao spoke decisively, "Two choices! Now choose!"

"I'll follow you!" Liu Changjun didn't hesitate at all.

All of a sudden, he and Ye Xiao were both shocked.

Ye Xiao didn't expect such a proud assassin would promise to follow him so quickly. He didn't even say something to attract him, "follow me! I will help you become the assassin king!"

[He said yes!

Why did he said yes?

That was too quick!

He wasn't hesitating at all! Why?]

Liu Changjun kept his eyes wide opened. He was full of confusion too.

He couldn't understand why he said yes so easily. When he heard Ye Xiao, he just subconsciously chose to follow!

After saying yes, he didn't feel less shocked than Ye Xiao at all!

"Good." Ye Xiao's sharp eyes lit up as he said, "That was a quick answer. I am surprised. Very surprised."

"Me too. How could I answer so quickly. I don't understand. How come I just said yes so quickly." Liu Changjun was embarrassed.

He was trying to make something up in order to bring back a bit of dignity to himself...

[How could I surrender so easily...]

"First thing's first, you have to take this dan bead." Ye Xiao took out a dan bead and said, "You know. You gave me your word.

That's true. It was a quick word. But I just cannot trust you that much. There is something maybe we don't need to do in the future, yet it is necessary at the moment though."

Liu Changjun looked at the dan bead. His face showed a complex expression.

He understood that if he took the dan bead, he would be no longer an independent assassin.

He would become a servant to somebody!

He kept thinking about it. After a few seconds, his forehead was already full of sweat. His face twisted like he was sick. After a while, he said, "Can I say no to that?"

His voice was full of begging!

If somebody told him he would have to beg like this, he would feel disdainful and maybe beat that guy to death. He would never admit begging for something!

However, right now, he did say that!

The reality was so cruel to him and made him frustrated.

Ye Xiao smiled and answered blandly, "No."

Liu Changjun sucked in a deep breath and closed his eyes.

"Fine!"

...

And Liu Changjun had left.

He was carrying Ye Xiao's jade token to the Ling-Bao Hall.

Ye Xiao had told Wan Zhenghao that they were going to build an assassination group!

He wasn't just saying. He did something for it!

Liu Changjun might not be a perfect choice, but Ye Xiao saw it as a surprise.

The perfect choice was surely Ning Biluo.

However... Ning Biluo wouldn't follow him

He was a proud and free man.

That was why Liu Changjun was not a match to him!

When Liu Changjun was about to leave, he hesitated at the window, turned around and said, "I said yes very quickly, but it doesn't mean that I am afraid of death!"

Ye Xiao looked at him and smiled, "I see! I know!"

Liu Changjun nodded. His tough face actually showed a sense of softness. He wanted to say something, but he didn't. And then he just left through the window like a black bat disappearing in the dark night.

"Not afraid of death..." Song Jue sneered, "That was hilarious."

Ye Xiao said seriously, "I can feel it. He is not afraid of death indeed!" He said, "He has penetrating sensations! He just doesn't know how beneficial his choice yet..."

And he continued blandly, "It is... a marvelous gift though!"

He was so serious.

Song Jue stared at Ye Xiao blankly. He didn't understand what Ye Xiao was talking about at all.

...

"Well, I guess this is it. We should focus on developing our force at the moment."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly.

"You just let him go? Why do you trust him? Because of that dan bead?" Song Jue looked at Ye Xiao with astonishment.

Liu Changjun obviously showed them that he could die for his ambition. That was not faking. If Liu Changjun secretly hung himself somewhere, then what Ye Xiao did would become a waste.

"The hardest thing is to die. That is not just a simple saying. If one can survive, how much will he want to die!" Ye Xiao nodded, "I can't totally trust him yet, but after no longer than half a year, I believe that even if I tell him to leave me, he wouldn't."

Song Jue didn't buy it at all! He just twisted his lips.

[That is Liu Changjun you are talking about!

In the assassination world, Liu Changjun may not be as good as Ning Biluo, but he is still in the top-50 list of the Land of Han-Yang!

How can he possibly fully surrender to you?

You can control him now by controlling his life and death. That could work for some time, yet it is never a safe solution. And you want that guy to follow you with his true heart?

That is just a huge joke!]

What Ye Xiao had said about gift and sensations stuff, Song Jue saw those as if he was farting. [There is never such magical things in the world!]

He just felt that everything Ye Xiao was planning was beyond reality.

Ye Xiao closed his eyes casually.

[Liu Changjun? So what?

If he truly doesn't want to follow me, he is simply asking for death.

If he can be loyal to me, I will of course help him in some ways. If I teach him some martial arts, he can even become one of the top-class assassins in the Qing-Yun Realm!]

Well, everything depended on how Liu Changjun would make his decision then.

There was another problem Ye Xiao should think about. That was getting betrayed.

Ye Xiao closed his eyes and thought, [Well I captured him today...

He doesn't even have the capability to betray me!]

He sneered in his mind.

"Why Ling-Bao Hall?" Song Jue finally asked before he left.

When Ye Xiao told Liu Changjun to go to Ling-Bao Hall, he didn't do it behind Song Jue.

Ye Xiao smiled, "Uncle Song, I don't want to lie to you, but it is just not the time to tell you yet... You will know it sooner or later. Now please keep the secret for me. That... may be our last pull-out plan and our most powerful support."

Song Jue was quiet.

He just nodded and then left.

...

It was in the Ling-Bao Hall.

Wan Zhenghao looked at Liu Changjun and didn't know what to say.

He hadn't even thought that Feng Monarch would truly send an assassin to him right after telling him they needed an assassination

group. And now the assassin in front of him was a famous one.

That was so quick.

"What do you say?" Wan Zhenghao licked his lips.

"What do you mean what do I say? Somebody told me to come here. Here is the token. He wants you to do some arrangement for me." Liu Changjun said while looking at the huge meat pile in front of him. He felt suppressed somehow.

[What the heck.... He is actually a man!

How come he hasn't died from being too fat... This is truly my first time to meet someone with such a huge body.]

Wan Zhenghao was the boss of Ling-Bao Hall, and to the majority, he was a mysterious man. Liu Changjun was a famous assassin in the Land of Han-Yang, but he might still be too weak to be treated well by Wan Zhenghao. If he didn't have the token from Feng Zhiling, he wouldn't have the chance to see Wan Zhenghao in person!

"Is the man... Feng Monarch?" Wan Zhenghao asked.

"All I know is this jade token." Liu Changjun would absolutely not tell him Ye Xiao's secret.

After all, his life and his future, all of them depended on Ye Xiao!

...

Chapter 172: The Purple Qi Descended

As Ye Xiao said, it was always the hardest thing to die on one's own wish. When a man's wish to die failed, he would be more afraid of death than other people!

Whenever Liu Changjun thought of Ye Xiao's smile, he would tremble.

However, he was never a coward.

At one moment, he was suddenly enlightened. He realized it might be a change of his fate! Once he bowed, he might actually receive a brighter future!

That was his instinct; his real thought.

So he didn't even hesitate to say yes to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was right though.

Liu Changjun didn't realize how lucky he was to have such an instinct! He didn't even know what it was.

"Fine. I will do some arrangements then. Look, what we need to do is..." Since Liu Changjun had the token, Wan Zhenghao had to accept Liu Changjun and explain everything to him.

Talking to an assassin so closely... That was truly his first time in his life. Before this, assassins were the crowd that Wan Zhenghao feared the most.

He was a capable man and was always mysterious, yet he was truly afraid of death. So when he faced Liu Changjun, he felt terrified somehow. That must be some kind of instinct he got!

He didn't respect Liu Changjun though. As he said, "why should I respect the poor trash?" However, he would still feel fearful.

That wasn't contradictory... I guess?

Wan Zhenghao finally finished talking about the great plan of the Feng Monarch. It was the first time he realized that the things that Feng Zhiling only used several sentences to explain had actually taken him an enormous amount of effort to say...

Liu Changjun was shocked. He said, "You are going to rule the assassination world?"

Maybe Wan Zhenghao didn't realize it.

As a famous assassin in the martial world, Liu Changjun surely got it.

Getting into the assassination world with such power and wealth, it was going to turn the assassination world upside down.

That meant no matter who, as long as he was an assassin, he was bound to be one of this special assassination association!

That was scary.

Liu Changjun was thrilled though. [It... is a great business!

And it seems very possible to succeed!

I don't know much about Ye Xiao, that mysterious guy, but look at the guy in front of me! The big boss of the Ling-Bao Hall!

He is quite a mysterious figure in the world too!

Ling-Bao Hall has a huge amount of money to support such plan, and it will be the cover of the assassination association... It will just be a matter of time for the association to rule the whole world.

And I must be the first one who join... That means I am one of the founders... My name is going to resound for centuries in the assassination world. I am going to be the legend, a long lasting myth...]

"Life and Death Board..." He murmured as he felt his blood boiling.

"And our goal is to surmount the House of the Chaotic Storm..."

He suddenly felt full of the sense of mission!

Who else on earth dared to aim on surmounting the House of the Chaotic Storm?

A huge danger meant a huge opportunity!

The one who won would be the rightful king, while the one who lose would always be a thief. He would love to fight for the glory!

As they had shared the same goal, they started to discuss with huge passion... They discussed everything, including how they should begin with it, what they should be noticing, how to use the money, how to hide from behind, how to charge, how to attract customers, how to get well known...

They were in full swing.

What surprised Wan Zhenghao was that the one who talked "too much" was the... cold-hearted assassin!

[Is he really one of the top-50 assassins? ...] He thought while looking at Liu Changjun's mouths which was incessantly moving. [He is actually chattier than me...]

...

The young lord of the House of Ye, Ye Xiao, surely didn't care

about that. Since Liu Changjun left, he had continued playing sick. His spiritual mind didn't rest though. He was in the Boundless Space.

After receiving the purple flare of the moon, his East-rising Purple Qi had finally entered the second level.

Ye Xiao had been waiting eagerly for a long time to get inside and see what really changed.

When he entered the Space, he felt the difference right away.

The dense purple qi in the space made it difficult for him to see his own figure!

When he just entered it, he even felt hard to breathe. He breathed in a dense mass of purple qi and coughed for a while.

That was a luxurious experience for him though!

"Cough, cough, cough..."

Ye Xiao coughed and murmured, "I mustn't get used to those rubbish food. I can taste such a great thing now, yet my body actually couldn't handle it. That is a hard thing to do..."

The Nine Spaces were still there.

The dense purple qi was obviously a great nutrient for the Spaces. The Wood Space was extremely lively at the moment. He felt refreshed when he entered it.

Things were changed on the egg too!

The strange egg, which could kill a cultivator of the Grade of Daoyuan... was actually as big as a watermelon now!

That was like a totally different egg!

A watermelon was nothing special, yet an egg at the size of a watermelon was quite an eye-catching thing!

Ye Xiao got close and touched it. There seemed to be nothing inside... It must still need a long time to hatch.

Most importantly, in the main space, there was a table. On the table, there were two books.

One was "Purple Qi Descends".

That was the second level of the East-rising Purple Qi. The first one was the "Purple Qi Arrives", and the second one was actually "descending"!

"When the world began, the East-rising Purple Qi first arrived. The rivers and mountains were formed among the chaos. When

the purple qi descended, it was colorful and dazzling. With my name, it will last forever..."

The golden words rushed into Ye Xiao's brain when he just opened the book. The formula of the second level was clearly much more domineering than the first one! Ye Xiao instantly began to cultivate with all his heart, as though he had forgotten everything including himself.

When he focused on cultivation, he just ignored everything, so he didn't noticed at all that the egg was swallowing the purple qi. It was all going to the egg like tides.

Ye Xiao's physical body was changing now. He should look pale in the face, yet he actually looked a bit glittering now...

He was like a fine jade flashing its glow silently.

Song Jue entered the room after his job was done. When he looked at Ye Xiao, he was terrified.

"What the fxck!"

He was shocked!

[What the hell is going on? It only happens when someone achieves some success in cultivation and gets to the stage of the three flowers blooming and five qi starts.] His eyes nearly popped out because of being surprised. [Usually, it requires a cultivator to

reach the latter period of the Spirit Origin Stage to have such a phenomenon. How come this lad...

What the hell happened?]

As an experienced cultivator, Song Jue realized Ye Xiao was at a very important moment right now.

He knew he couldn't disrupt him!

He quietly left and gave out the order, "No one is allowed to enter this room! Whoever defies this order should be sentenced to death!"

And then he sat at the door to guard. He was confused, "What... is going on?"

It was in the Spaces.

After quite a while, Ye Xiao came back to himself. He opened his eyes and murmured, "I see!"

He stood up and took a breath out.

The first stage of the East-rising Purple Qi was the aura of living, while the second one was the aura of hegemony!

That was... the purple qi descending when the sun was rising. It was incomparable!

No matter what happened, the fierceness of it was never going to change!

And it was never going to be stopped!

"That is the East-rising Purple Qi!" Ye Xiao made a long sigh. His eyes were sharp.

And then he looked at the other book.

It was the "Cultivation of Love".

"The nature has rules while mankind has love. A man with love can go for the rules of nature. A man with love can get through the mortal world. The seven kinds of love are the foundation of mankind. To cultivate love, is to live the life..."

"Cultivation of love..."

Ye Xiao murmured. He felt like he understood it, yet he did not .

Love!

Cultivate love... That seemed cruel...

Ye Xiao sighed and murmured, "I hope my love doesn't need to be cultivated.... Because... cultivation always takes sacrifices!"

"I don't want sacrifice!"

He was a smart guy. When he read those, he realized the future of his cultivation life would be totally different from now on...

There would be a lot of things on his cultivation path. There was nothing among them he could escape.

...

Chapter 173: Chuchu Is Coming

A wonderful life might be awaiting him, but... there would surely be many difficulties and sacrifices ahead of him. It was simply unavoidable.

Ye Xiao's heart perfectly fit the words, "love of the nature".

[The beautiful things in my life are things that I never want to lose.]

[Man.]

[Responsibility.]

[Protection.]

[Improvement.]

[Descending.]

[These must be the reason why I acquired the Purple Qi Descends and the Cultivation Of Love at the same time.] Ye Xiao thought and then he murmured, "Because a man has love while the nature has rules."

Dramatic things kept happening all the time in the Land of Han-Yang. The battles were on heat. Everyday, there were over dozens

of thousands of letters going in and out the kingdom through the sky...

It was in the frontier.

The armies were fighting and bleeding in the battle. About half a million men were fighting and shouting in the battle. It shocked the world. Endless blood was splashed on the battlefield.

Not far from the battle, there were two figures sitting and drinking tea on the top of a mountain. They just watched the fights with cold eyes, like everything was normal to them.

They both had long hair and wonderful bodies. They were two beautiful ladies.

- Chic.-

A bird sounded clearly.

A swallow rushed down through the clouds making a beautiful arc in the air. -Shoot. - It stopped in front of the two ladies. Its little eyes quietly stared at them.

One of them was covered by white silk on the face. On the silk, there was a mist lotus.

She reached her hand and took a small pipe from the bird's body;

there was a note inside.

She unfolded the note and read it. Her eyes flickered.

"117 assassins went to assassinate Ye Xiao. 114 of them died, while two of them escaped with severe injuries. Liu Chang-Jun is missing. Ye Xiao was completely unharmed."

It was quite a short note.

The lady murmured, "It is almost a total destruction... Is the House of Ye really such a dangerous place?"

The other lady softly said, "Chuchu, what happened?"

"My Assassination Reward failed." Chuchu smiled blandly, "Almost all the assassins were slaughtered."

The other lady nodded slightly and said, "I see."

She sounded like nothing special had happened.

"It is reasonable though." The girl who spoke was surely Wenren Chuchu. She said, "Well, since the House of Ye is under such protection, I don't think it is a good time to arrange another action... Master, we need to move."

The other lady looked at Wenren Chuchu and said blandly, "Oh?"

"Master, we need to go to the Kingdom of Chen immediately." Wenren Chuchu spoke with anxiety, "Your illness brought by your martial art is getting real dangerous now. Trust me. The guy, Feng Zhiling, he is truly able to cure it."

"..." The other lady in white looked at the sky for a long while and then murmured, "I surely trust you. Your existence is the best proof for it. However, I don't want the way he cured you. I would rather die... than let a man's hand touch my body."

Speaking of that, Wenren Chuchu's face turned like a big red napkin. She spoke embarrassedly, "Master, you don't have to be like that in front of the chance to survive... You... You..." She couldn't finish the talk because she was too embarrassed about it.

She herself had been touched by that man the other day...

"Master, if you don't want to go... Then I... I..." Wenren Chuchu gritted her teeth and said, "Then I would have been touched by a guy for nothing... I..."

When she thought about the day when that warm hand touched her belly... she felt that hot and soft feeling, and she felt like she was going to lose her mind. She blushed even more.

"Master... No matter what you think... You have to go and have a try... Maybe there can be an alternative... If you really abhor it..."

She gritted, "We can try something else. There will always be another way..."

The lady in white frowned and stayed silent for a long while. And then she sighed.

She raised her head, looking at the anxious eyes of her apprentice. She felt soft.

"Chuchu, I know you care about me. Fine then... I shall go with you." The face of the lady in white was also covered by a white silk. She was obviously troubled. She then said softly, "Even if there is nothing useful for me, I can go and clean some troubles for you there."

Wenren Chuchu's face turned pale, "Master, how can you hold such thoughts. We should only think about one thing this time when we reach the Kingdom of Chen. It is to find a way to cure your disease."

"I know you truly care a lot about me." The lady in white reached her hand gently to touch Wenren Chuchu's hair. She spoke gently, "That's why I want to do something for you... If there really is no proper way to cure me, I will spend every single second of the rest of my life to wipe the troubles in front of you and for your father's hope. That's what I should do to cherish the sincerity between you and me."

She smiled, "You are a good child. I know you are not doing all this for yourself. If you do... maybe I won't do anything for you

then."

Wenren Chuchu embraced her master and felt warmth in her heart. She murmured, "Master..."

The lady in white smiled with eyes full of kindness. She was not upset about the truth that she was dying at all.

She had made up her mind that she would never let Feng Zhiling touch her body even if he really could cure her... [I won't let a man's hand reach my body. I would rather die. If I eventually cannot continue my life and break through a new level, I will accept death and stir the Kingdom of Chen upside down before I die.]

She came to the Land of Han-Yang to spend more time with her good prentice before she died... And she saw that as the last period of time in her life.

Wenren Chuchu closed her eyes and kept her head in her master's arms. She made up her mind that no matter what happened, she would cure her master.

Her master was a very sensitive person, so she kept ignoring everything when she was with her master.

Her only concern was how to cure her master.

[There is still time for the ambition... And I only have one

master.

If I have to choose one between my ambition and my master, I will choose my beloved master.]

At the moment, they held each other tight. They were thinking about different things though, but they both felt the warmth from each other.

In the afternoon, Wenren Chuchu gave an order to pause all military or political affairs she had been planning.

She wanted to focus on being with her master.

"I am in a sect of the Qing-Yun Realm after all. I can't stay in the mortal world for too long. The wealth and the dominant position in the mortal world are yours anyway. So you need to fight for them yourselves."

She said.

It gave people a feeling of dignity. Those who had insisted she shouldn't hold a post now shut their mouth.

[She is our princess, the daughter of our king, but she is now halfway to immortality. She doesn't belong to this world... Why should we force her then?]

However, Wenren Chuchu said something to leave a backup plan for herself.

"Maybe I will do something, but... Well let's just see what will happen. I only hope that nobody interrupts my decision anyway."

That day, she and her master left the army. They were heading to the Chen-Xing City.

When they left, it was the fifth day since Ye NanTian left the battle, and the second day since Ye Xiao accounted the assassination.

That night, there was a world-shocking news about Ling-Bao Hall in the Kingdom of Chen. Wan Zhenghao, the mysterious boss of Ling-Bao Hall, decided to hold an auction of supreme dan beads after one month.

There would be some supreme dan beads at the auction.

The supreme dan beads were as follows:

First-class dan, Pei-Yuan Dan, 50;

Second-class dan, Muscle Stretching Dan, 10;

Third-class dan, Bone Ablutionary Dan, 10;

Third-class dan, Mai Connecting Dan, 10;

The upper fourth-class dan, Limit Breaking Dan, 3.

The news had shocked the whole world. It even overwhelmed the news about the wars.

The last time when there was a supreme dan bead auction, it created a miracle, and it was just selling some Pei-Yuan Dan beads. Not long after that, now there were going to be some second-class, third-class and fourth-class dan beads.

And those were all supreme dan beads.

[Where did they get those dan beads really?]

If Ling-Bao Hall wasn't a famous salesroom in the whole Land of Han-Yang, no one would believe such news. Ling-Bao Hall had never lied about such things after all.

That was why the news truly aroused a huge disturbance.

And then Wan Zhenghao made a public announcement: If there was anything fake in the auction, Ling-Bao Hall would dismiss right away in the Land of Han-Yang.

Those were some powerful words he announced.

A super salesroom which had billion of billions of gold made such an announcement to the whole world... If the auction was fake, then Wan Zhenghao must be mad.

But was Wan Zhenghao mad?

...

Chapter 174: The Crazy General Ye!

If Wan Zhenghao was a mad man, he would have never developed a small salesroom to a huge salesroom!

All the sects and clans, including some hidden sects that hadn't shown up last time, all prepared to attend the auction!

Endless superior cultivators and dan-makers were moving towards the Chen-Xing City.

So many super powerful forces were going to get together in the Kingdom of Chen.

This time, it was much more like a big scene than the last time! All the elites in the Land of Han-Yang seemed to be moving towards the Chen-Xing City! It was bound to be an influential event!

It was right in the middle of the war!

People felt there must be something tricky about it.

After that, Wan Zhenghao added another announcement. It truly pleased the Kingdom of Chen though, so the Kingdom of Chen provided many supports to Ling-Bao Hall this time. Suddenly, the Ling-Bao Hall had some official background now.

"It is the year of war. It shouldn't be a good time to hold such a great event. It is also inappropriate to have so many foreign cultivators in the Chen-Xing City... However, now that my country is in danger, I, as a citizen of the Kingdom of Chen, have the responsibility to protect my home country. So, 60 percent of the profits we gain in the auction will be devoted to the national treasury, hoping that it would help our soldiers win their battles!"

"Moreover, we will take 10 percent of the profits to support the lives of the families that had lost their men in the war. I hope that they can feel my warm heart even though I will only offer some tiny thing."

Even the king was shocked by that announcement.

The sum of the trading prices of the auction this time should easily reach tens of billion. It might even reach a hundred billion!

If it really fetched a hundred billion, there should be at least fifty billion as the profits. And there was ten billion which should be paid as the tax, so there should be forty billion for the Ling-Bao Hall. 60 percent meant 24 billion!

The Kingdom of Chen wouldn't have such an amount of money even after fifty years of saving!

It was apparently an extremely huge number!

It was enough to change the result of the war!

It was no doubt a benevolent event for both the kingdom and the citizens.

So the king gave an order, "Nobody and not any force is allowed to disrupt the auction! The auction should be held successfully!"

In the peaceful time, the king would never make such a "frank" order, but in such a dangerous time, the auction was a super powerful support of the kingdom. It was truly providing warmth in the cold winter.

The military group was pleased about what Ling-Bao Hall promised. Ten percent for the families of the sacrificed soldiers. Ten percent wasn't a big number, but it amounted to an enormous money! That ten percent was several billions!

That was enough for those families to live much better.

It could even ensure they all could be fed well for the rest of their lives!

So the military group was supporting the auction this time. Many superior cultivators in the army decided to protect the auction themselves. Some troops around the city had cancelled their vacations to help with the auction.

If there was anything that happened against the Ling-Bao Hall, they would show up and suppress it!

People all believed Wan Zhenghao's words, because they knew Wan Zhenghao would never dare to lie on this.

It was an imperative action once he made the announcement!

If he lied about that, what he was going to face would be much horrible than getting his whole clan killed.

Wan Zhenghao specifically emphasized, "The event is all decided and arranged by the Feng Monarch, Feng Zhiling of Ling-Bao Hall.

The Feng Monarch regards money as dirt. He full-heartedly concerned about our country and our beloved people. He made such a suggestion and decisively put it into practice for everybody other than himself. I feel shameful when compared to him..."

Well!

The name Feng Zhiling became famous all over the world all of a sudden!

Suddenly, he became a new hero in the Kingdom of Chen, an idol. Nobody even know what their idol looked like though.

Many citizens made tablets and put them in their house to show their worship.

Some of them just had marvelous imaginations. [This Feng Zhiling benefits the country like this, he really is putting himself behind all others. He must be a heroic figure. He must be generous, handsome, kind-hearted, expansive and strong.]

Many girls in the Kingdom of Chen shouted "I will only marry one man, Feng Zhiling!"

So, Feng Zhiling's name suddenly resounded all around the world!

So, some people summarized this event and gave it a name, "[Feng Ling Tian Xia!](#)"

...

"Feng Zhiling?" The lady in white who was heading to the Kingdom of Chen asked. She frowned and looked at Wenren Chuchu, "Is he this guy that everybody keeps talking about? How come he is so popular?"

Wenren Chuchu bit her lips and said with uncertainty, "Uhhh... I didn't know he was the monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall though... Since when was there a monarch in the Ling-Bao Hall? I urh... I can't be sure..."

She said she was not sure, yet in her heart, she was quite sure about it!

This Feng Zhiling must be the guy who had cured her!

[I truly didn't know that he actually hid himself so deeply!]

She gritted with her teeth!

[Humph! No wonder that bastard was capable to get the supreme dan bead that day...

Humph! What a prick! He actually treated me as a fool!

I am going to give him some lessons the next time we meet!]

The lady in white looked at Wenren Chuchu and said, "You should always keep behaving yourself. Do not make any mistakes!"

Wenren Chuchu once again bit her lips and spoke in a hushed voice, "Yes, master. I will."

"The martial art of our sect requires a virgin body. Once you lose your virginity, you lose everything you achieved." The lady in white sighed, "You are the only hope among the young generation of our sect. Do not fall down in your bright way to the top of the cultivation. You will regret it the rest of your life."

Wenren Chuchu took in a deep breath and said, "Master, please don't worry. I know what to do."

She then smiled and said with confidence, "I believe it is difficult enough to steal my heart..."

And then she laughed playfully.

While they were chatting...

Something was happening in the Chen-Xing City.

The guard on the wall at the border of the city saw an extremely bright sword light rushing over like a flying star. The next moment, a figure bathing in blood had arrived at the city gate.

"Open the gate!"

The figure shouted with extreme vigor.

The whole wall seemed to shake under his shout.

It was so vigorous and fierce as if the heavens were frightened!

"The General Ye of the north!" The guarding general recognized him and shouted with fear. He shouted, "Open the gate! Quick!"

The city gate opened slowly. Ye Nantian rushed in like a lightning, and then he disappeared right away!

"Why is General Ye so hurried? His body is full of bloodstains. I wonder if he is hurt... What the hell happened anyway?" There are people asking.

Someone who knew about the truth sighed, "He must have rushed out after the numerous traps of the enemies... Ah... His son is now in a very dangerous condition. I heard that his son only has a slight of breath. I think he only has a few days left... General Ye is surely in a hurry."

"Urh... What happened? Tell me something."

"It is said that... The Minister Jiang and some other officials' children sent an assassin to take Ye Xiao's life because of some small reason... Ah... Now that General Ye is back, I am afraid the Chen-Xing City is going to fall into a crisis!"

"Those bastards! They should have been punished long ago! Now that General Ye is back, they are going to meet their bad days now!" Most people are happy about it.

"They will suffer for sure, yet I hope the young Lord Ye can survive this. It will be good for both the House of Ye and our country."

The guards all lowered their heads and prayed.

At the moment, an explosion sounded in the air above the city. A fire rocket exploded in the sky. It was in black color like the dark of

the night. It appeared as a word!

It was "Ye:!"

The next moment, a shout loudly echoed out, as if the whole world was shocked.

"Soldiers of the north army! Gather in the House of Ye!"

The vigorous shout was surely from the owner of the House of Ye, Ye Nantian!

People in the capital were all shocked!

[General Ye must be crazy this time!]

He hadn't even reached his house when he gave the gathering order. He commanded all the soldiers of the northern army to gather straightaway. It seemed that if the young lord truly couldn't make it, he was truly going to wipe down the whole city!

The next moment, there sounded the voice of soldiers from all directions like thundering!

"Yes, General!" That was what they were shouting.

And then the horse steps were like thunderclaps that echoed

everywhere in the city.

The shouts actually made the whole city become silent like the the city was facing the end of the world!

All citizens felt their hearts shaking!

Those who had been messing with Ye Xiao before were especially scared. Their faces were all pale! They were like losing their souls!

The feeling of death kept haunting them.

The soldiers of the northern army all gathered in the city. Some of them got close to the gate and directly took over the position of the guards!

Their general had given them the order to take over the city. The whole Chen-Xing City was immediately restrained. People were only allowed to enter the city, but not leave the city!

The shout of Yen Nantian shocked the kingdom! Now the whole capital knew that Ye Nantian, the General of the North, had returned!

...

It was in the Royal Palace.

The king sighed with a complex expression in his eyes.

In the Crown Prince's Palace, the crown prince's face was ashen.

He heard the noise outside the palace which came from the air, causing his body to tremble.

This was the first time they discovered about the anger of Ye Nantian!

...

Feng Ling Tian Xia. Feng Ling means the name Feng Zhiling. Tian Xia means the world. And Feng Ling Tian Xia is the author's name... (Ya, I know... narcissism...)

Chapter 175: Home! And Got Shocked...

The Crown Prince finally understood why his father treated Ye Nantian like an important figure.

He finally knew about the furious side of the gentle Ye Nantian.

The invincible war god had shown his power at the first second he arrived in the city.

He had perfectly shown his control of his men.

It was so law-breaking and so fearless.

[If Ye Nantian wants the throne, can we even stop him?

If Ye Xiao can't make it this time, and if the crazy Ye Nantian assaults the city and wipe down the capital, can anybody stop him?

If Ye Nantian knows that I am the one who should take the responsibility for his son's death...]

He didn't dare to continue the thought. He would have been frightened to death if he kept being lost in such thought.

[Please, gods. Please don't let Ye Nantian know the truth. When he turns mad, please make sure he won't come to me.]

He was lucky to be in his palace at the moment. If he was looking outside the city from the top of the city wall, he would have truly been frightened to death.

What could be seen were one rolling dust clouds after another going up to the sky. Apparently, an extremely strong troop was heading over to the city in a haste.

The blood guards had finally arrived at the city too.

Several thousands of their war horses died on their way.

They had been following Ye Nantian's steps getting to the city in time.

Everyone was tired.

Yet their eyes were all sharp and vigorous.

...

It was in the House of Ye.

A whirlwind blew away, and the big figure of Ye Nantian showed up in front of the door. He frowned and looked at the words "General's House". He felt like his home was somehow unfamiliar to him.

He was hurrying to know about his son's condition, yet when he stood at the door, he actually hesitated whether he should get in or not.

Because he was scared.

He was afraid that he would see his son lying in bed, enjoying his last breath.

He was afraid that he would confirm that his son was impossible to cure.

"General Ye, you are back." A few men greasily gathered around.

They had been waiting for a couple of days.

They were surely from the Right Prime Minister's house, Minister Jiang's house and the other stupid houses. Their lords had been forbidden to get out of their houses, so they were the ones here to represent their lords. They had been waiting in the House of Ye for a chance, even though they all knew that it was nearly impossible.

People in the House of Ye hated them deep inside their bones. They surely wouldn't let them in, so they had to wait at the door.

Now they finally met Ye Nantian.

Ye Nantian frowned, "What do you want?"

The steward of the Right Prime Minister's house smilingly said, "The Right Prime Minister has been forbidden to leave the house by the king. He sent me here to take whatever punishment General Ye requires... He said that no matter what you want, we will accept. We will say no words to bargain. If you still couldn't get over it, we can hand over our young lord, Li Chengze. You can punish him as you wish. We won't complain anything. Even if you kill him, we will see it as something he himself deserves."

The steward didn't make it up. The Right Prime Minister had truly said that. He had stayed in the court for decades and was one of the two most important officials, because he always knew what he should do. And he was a tricky man. He did say that Li Chengze would accept any punishments, yet he believed Ye Nantian wouldn't kill a young lad. Killing Li Chengze would be a disgraceful thing for Ye Nantian. Even if Li Chenze truly ended up dead, it was a good deal to sacrifice a young stupid lad to solve the problem.

The other men saw the steward had talked with Ye Nantian, so they got over to say their kind words.

Suddenly the place was full of kindness.

"Get the fxck off! All of you!" Ye Nantian didn't have the mood to listen to their words. He swung his sleeves and a fierce powerful wind was made. Those over forty men were all stricken out like a ball rolling away.

Not all of them were ordinary people though. Some of them were superior cultivators, but none of them had reached the Sky Origin Stage. These cultivators were hired by those houses with high prices to guard their houses. Those houses knew that Ye Xiao was assassinated earlier, so they sent their best cultivators here to help protect the House of Ye. However, all of these cultivators had no capability to defend just a sleeve's move of Ye Nantian.

Their faces all turned pale looking at Ye Nantian.

That was truly a terrible force.

Far from the house, Guan Zhengwen was watching this. When he saw the move of the sleeve, he felt an extreme fear deep inside his heart. [That... That is absolutely not just the strength of a man in the Sky Origin Stage...

Ye Nantian is absolutely much stronger than the Crown Prince said. He is... actually a master superior cultivator above the limit of this world.]

He felt cold inside his heart all of a sudden.

He felt himself fooled badly by the Crown Prince this time.

[If Ye Nantian knows that I am the one who hit Ye Xiao, I am afraid... I am at the end of my life.]

He heard Ye Nantian spoke with a sneer, "While I was in the north fighting with my blood for the country, my son was actually bullied in the capital. I have heard that the families of my soldiers are being bullied. I was thinking about taking care of this problem when I return with victory. Yet you damn bastards actually went so far. You actually dared to lay your hands on my son. Don't ever say anything about Li Chengze again. All the lives of your clans were never as important as my son's life!"

He coldly continued, "I have no time to chat with you. Get the fuck out here and tell your masters that I won't accept anything from you. If my son make it through, I will still get to you about all that you have done. And if my son dies... You..."

Ye Nantian pointed at every one of them and said fiercely, "Your whole clans... I, Ye Nantian, promise, every life in your clan, even a dog or a chicken in your house, will have no chance to live."

"Leave!"

He shouted and the dozens of men all ran away in embarrassment.

Even those cultivators were trembling. The killing intent around Ye Nantian had scared some of them to the point where they pissed in their pants.

"General!"

The four guards at the door kneeled at the same time.

"How is Xiao-Xiao?" Ye Nantian took a deep breath and tried to sound peaceful.

"The young lord... He..." The four blood guards kowtowed and said, "We are to be blamed. We failed to protect him."

"Get up." Ye Nantian sighed. He calmed down a bit. It was at least not the worst situation. His son was still alive. Since he was alive, there was still hope. Now that he had returned, he thought that he might bring a chance to save Ye Xiao. So he entered the house with big strides and said, "Take me to him."

His figure was big and vigorous. He resolutely walked, yet from his back, he looked sad and piteous.

And there was the aura of huge anger that was about to explode.

As he headed forward step-by-step, the anger was getting stronger.

If it exploded, the whole city could have been destroyed within seconds.

However, Ye Nantian couldn't see Ye Xiao again anymore...

Well, it was because Ye Xiao wasn't at home.

So Ye Nantian couldn't see him at the moment. That was the simple truth.

It was hilarious somehow, yet it was the truth.

He was now in the Ling-Bao Hall, discussing about the auction with Wan Zhenghao. He had no idea what was going on in his house though.

Song Jue surely knew it. He was now covering himself tightly with the quilt in the bed. He restricted his own breathing signs and pretended to be a living corpse for his nephew.

So he also had no idea what was happening outside.

He didn't know that his beloved big brother was back.

- Peng! -

The door was opened.

Ye Nantian entered the room and saw a man in the bed. He felt no signs of life from the man, so he was scared. He waved his hand and the door was closed.

He moved closer to the bed like walking through endless mountains and rivers.

"Xiao-Er..." Ye Nantian stood in front of the bedside and sighed.

He slightly lifted the quilt...

The tears that had been held in his eyes almost dropped down at this moment.

The person lying in bed was the only hope he had in his life. Now, his son was in such a dangerous situation. If his son died... How could he face his wife who had given up everything for him and their son?

[You are the only son of us...]

However, the next moment...

Song Jue had arranged some guards at the door to keep everyone from entering the room while he was pretending to be Ye Xiao. So he didn't care much about it. Even the king couldn't get in the room as long as the guards were standing there.

He was sure about it.

So he was half asleep.

Yet the door was actually opened and then closed. It suddenly became eerily silent.

"Are the blood guards coming to check here?" Song Jue was just wondering, and then he felt the quilt was taken away from his head.

[What the hell! Who the hell dares to do this?

It is breaking my perfect set-up here!]

He instantly opened his eyes and shouted angrily, "Fxck..."

He didn't even finish his words when he suddenly saw the man in front of him who was also extremely shocked.

Song Jue was stunned. He suddenly lost his bearing as he blankly stared like a fool.

...

Chapter 176: I Am Pissed!

Song Jue's face was dramatic at the moment.

It looked like there were tears in his eyes.

Yet Ye Nantian's eyes were like looking at a freak!

[Why is this face so familiar...]

Song Jue was stunned!

[Big brother!

Ye Nantian!

Holy motherfxcking hell! I... an accident actually happened in my perfect plan!

My perfect plan actually encountered an accident!]

Ye Nantian was obviously the accident!

Song Jue truly hadn't thought that he would get caught by his big brother while he was pretending as his "ill" nephew!

[Why am I so unlucky!

I am so going to die!] That was Song Jue's thought at the moment.

Ye Nantian instantly calmed down from being shocked. He half-closed his eyes, and two cold lights came out from his eyes!

Ye Nantian was such a wise man. Although he didn't fully understand what was going on, he realized that... somebody was playing some tricks on this. Most importantly, he reckoned that his son was fine...

Otherwise, Song Jue would have been crazy with anger at the moment and would never be so leisurely playing as a fool like this!

"That seems to be comfortable!" Ye Nantian gritted with his teeth while looking at Song Jue.

"Urhh... Bi... Big Br... Big Brother..." Song Jue totally didn't know what to say at the moment. His brain went blank.

"Does it feel good lying to me?" Ye Nantian's face seemed to be even colder.

"I... I urh..." Song Jue's forehead was full of sweat. He looked around in a panic. [Where is that little prick? Where is he? Why isn't he here to bear the anger of his father for me... I... I want to cry...]

"What the hell happened? Talk to me!" Ye Nantian spoke with a deep voice while gritting his teeth.

Song Jue hurriedly got up and spoke bitterly, "Big brother... Big... Big..."

He just couldn't finish a full sentence.

If somebody else saw him like this, it would be the most memorable thing in his life!

However, there were only two of them in the room!

"Since you have been faking this, please do continue! Lie back down!"

Ye Nantian raised his foot and stepped on Song Jue's belly. He was so fierce at the moment, "Song Jue! Look what you have done! Heh, heh, heh, heh... Nice! Very good!"

Song Jue was under the quilt when a mighty foot suddenly struck him. He couldn't move even a bit. He begged with a bitter face, "My beloved old brother, let me explain... The truth is... It is that..."

"Old? Am I old now? You profligate sick liar!" Ye Nantian didn't let him finish talking. He turned furious and hit him with a fist!

- Boom! -

"Oww..." Song Jue screamed in pain. One of his eyes turned black, "Brother, you... you..."

- Boom! -

It was another one!

"You scared me to death! You son of a bxtch! You prick! You... You..."

Ye Nantian was truly mad.

He had nearly killed himself with depression because of the letter from Song Jue. He hadn't stopped traveling for 2300 miles. Normal people would have to spend over a year to go that far, yet it only took him seven days this time!

He never stopped whether it was day or night, and he had encountered over a hundred attempts of assassination!

His way home was full of blood...

Yet everything turned out to be a big lie that was made up by his sworn brother and his son!

How could he not be angry about it?

And his son was not home at the moment...

There was only Song Jue covered by a quilt!

How could Ye Nantian not be angry!

He hit Song Jue to half death and finally felt better. He picked up Song Jue like picking up a fish. He spoke furiously, "Talk to me! What the hell is happening? Why did you stir up such a big trouble! Do you know what severe consequences you guys are making?"

Song Jue was moaning and murmuring, "You... You... Brother, put me down please... I... I... I can't breathe..."

After a long while...

He finally finished telling Ye Nantian everything. Ye Nantian's mouth remained opened. He just didn't know what to say about what he had heard.

He couldn't believe that his beloved son had actually made so many troubles in such a short time...

And he actually made up such a huge lie...

Ye Nantian was stunned and he looked at Song Jue.

Song Jue spoke bitterly, "Big brother... It truly is not my responsibility... Please you have to understand this..."

He shouldn't have said that though... Ye Nantian turned furious again and beat him up again. "Not your responsibility! I don't blame you! I don't! Okay! Then who the hell should I blame?!"

"Oh god. Oh no. I am just a scapegoat..." Song Jue was so upset. He was beaten up again and his eyes began to roll up.

Some noises resounded outside.

The blood guards from the north had rushed into the house.

Somebody was shouting with anger. It was the head of the blood guards shouting at the thirty blood guards who had been staying in the house. "You bunch of rubbish! You are here to protect the young lord! Look how well you work! You bunch of bastards! How can you still live so well when our young lord has become like that?"

The thirty blood guards were standing in row while their heads were lowered. They felt shameful.

Those other blood guards back from the north glared at them like

they wanted to kick their asses hard.

Inside the room, Ye Nantian was listening to the guard shouting. He felt his face blushing...

He wanted to curse someone so badly, [FXCK!]

Stirring up such a huge disturbance and it turned out to be a complete lie!

The footsteps sounded.

Some of the northern army soldiers who had been in vacation were getting into the house.

They stood in rows and waited in the yard.

"General! What should we do? We are waiting for your order!"

"As long as you give your order, we will go anywhere and do anything! To the mountain of knives or to the sea of fire! We will just do it!"

"Screw the Right motherfxcking Minister or the others! We hated them for a long time!"

"Please give the order, General!"

All the soldiers shouted.

Ye Nantian looked at Song Jue, "Look what you have done to me! Tell me! What should I do!"

Song Jue was upset, he murmured, "I swear to god. I had exactly no idea things would reach this point..."

Ye Nantian was furious. He shouted with a low voice, "You have no idea! Tell me what you know then! You bastard! I should have known that if Xiao-Xiao was truly in danger, you would have lost your mind before I came back! Yet you actually sent me a letter! I would have seen your dead body when I returned! Now you are doing so well, yet all the others are anxious like hell! You stupid fool! You never have brain! Your brain must have been eaten by a dog or something!"

Song Jue lowered his head, "I truly didn't know..."

Ye Nantian made a long sigh and pushed him with a finger. He spoke angrily, "My good son has been taught to be so awful by you!"

Song Jue raised his head, "Brother, you can't say that... Please... Be reasonable... Your little son is truly foxy and tricky... I am the one who has been taught..."

Ye Nantian got even more furious. He pointed at him and his

finger was shaking, "You... You... You bastard! I am not done with this yet! Wait and I will get to you again..."

Song Jue murmured, "Not done yet? I have been beaten up like my mother couldn't even recognize me now... How will you get to me again... I am so wronged being beaten like this... I am so done in you and your son's hands... The younger one is shameless, while the older one is a monster. Why am I so unlucky!"

Ye Nantian sighed. He was upset and didn't say anything for a long while. There were so many soldiers waiting for him outside.

He just said to the soldiers, "Brothers... Go back to your places and wait for my instructions after I check on my son's condition... I think I have returned in time and it may be possible to cure him... Let me work on it for now... You have done well, and you have been through a long day, brothers."

The well-known war god finally lied for the first time in his life.

Yet it was all because of his son and his sworn brother. He simply had no alternatives...

The soldiers were all happy about it though. [The young lord can be cured!

Fantastic!

That is some real good news!]

"Let us go see him and show our concerns!" They all shouted.

Ye Nantian was frightened, "No, no, no... I am working on it right now... Just wait. Let me keep him stable..."

The soldiers suddenly felt shameful, [That's true. We are being too impetuous... We truly deserved to be blamed...

General Ye must be working so hard to cure the young lord, yet we have disturbed him several times. We should be blamed!]

They all had the same thoughts. So they just kept their mouths shut, and suddenly, the house was silent. Even a needle dropped on the floor could be heard!

In the room, Ye Nantian wiped the sweat on his forehead. He sat down to the chair and still felt angry about all this, so he kicked on Song Jue's butt and said angrily, "Look what you have done to me!"

Song Jue screeched in pain while holding his butt. He felt wronged and said, "Can you just stop? Your son is the boss of all this! Why don't you kick him? You just keep beating me up! You are bullying only the weak!"

Ye Nantian was furious. He nearly beat him up the third time. He spoke with anger, "When that little prick gets home, I will show you what a punishment should be like! If I fail to let you two know how important it is to behave yourselves, my past life must have

been wasted for nothing!"

...

Chapter 177: Who Are You?

Song Jue felt the wounds on his face and spoke happily, "Well, I kind of feel better now hearing this... That little prick will get his punishment after all. No matter how arrogant and shameless he is..."

Speaking of that, he actually felt comfortable.

Ye Nantian was stunned.

Looking at his sworn brother, he was speechless. [What kind of person are you? Is that how an uncle should be? That must be rare in the world...]

Yet he didn't know that Song Jue had been "tortured" for a long time by Ye Xiao recently. Song Jue nearly lost his mind because of that, and he actually couldn't say a word about it. He was even too embarrassed to say anything to Ye Nantian.

What could he say though?

[Your son is truly a genius. He is a wonder. A miracle. A legend. No, he is actually a complete monster.

He is more experienced than me. He is smarter than me. He is foxier than me. He is even stronger... Hmmm, well he is not stronger than me for now, but he could actually easily capture a man who was even much stronger than me. And he fooled around

someone who was more capable than me. It is just a matter of time before he becomes stronger than me...

I am going to be driven crazy by your dear son.

Your son is just a monster. I admit that I can't handle him...

Those troubles your son has made, I couldn't solve most of them. I have just been someone who only do something to act like I am helping him...]

Yet he didn't say anything about all these words. He would be embarrassed to death if he said so.

Besides, he could imagine how Ye Nantian would react. [What the hell are you talking about? Xiao-Xiao is a monster? My son is a monster huh? You can't handle him? You old bastard are this older than my son. Have you been living as a dog or something? You can't even handle a sixteen years old kid? What the fxck have you been doing then?]

Or maybe it would be like, [You are so much stronger than him after all. And you actually can't handle him? I wonder if you have been eating rice all you life or you have been eating shxt? Are you insane?]

Ye Nantian would surely say that easily.

He would just say anything to his brother.

So, Song Jue would never say anything to him.

[I see. I should just let you handle your son. He is your baby son after all, not mine.

When you realize what kind of a monster he is, you better cry somewhere in private.]

Ye Nantian's face was dark. He sat in Ye Xiao's room and breathed heavily.

He was so mad.

Nobody would have imagined that a war god like him would be like this.

The sky was turning darker and darker, yet Ye Xiao was still not home.

Ye Nantian was still breathing heavily. Song Jue didn't even dare to breathe. He just stayed at a corner pretending to be a wall. He was praying that Ye Xiao would come back soon though... [I can't stand the horrible face of your father anymore. Just come home soon to share the pressure on me... I am going to freak out under such pressure...

I think I must be owing this life to you... I don't even dare to

breathe any heavier in front of your father, and I was actually being played like a fool and became a scapegoat for you...]

Well, the gods always answer your prayers.

Ye Xiao had thoroughly enjoyed the pleasure of being the monarch in the Ling-Bao Hall. He was finally home. He sneaked to his room and saw that the room was dark.

He smiled, [Uncle Song is really good at faking. He can actually bear it for such a long time. Even I admire him about it...]

He sneaked into his room and laughed in a low voice. "Uncle Song, I am back. Have you rested enough for today?"

Nobody answered.

Yet he obviously sensed someone in the room. And there was more than one presence. He was alerted, so he asked again, "Uncle Song?" When he was talking, his body was suddenly moved away from where he had stood just now.

And he felt a slight sound of movement at the place where he once stood.

He was shocked, "Who are you?"

Truth could always be seen through some tiny details. That

movement showed that there was a master superior cultivator in the room. This cultivator was actually stronger than everyone Ye Xiao had met since he was reborn. Song Jue was not a match to him. Even Guan Zhengwen, Master Guan, from the royal house and the No. 1 assassin, Ning Biluo, were all under his range.

He was sure that if this man got to Uncle Song, Uncle Song wouldn't even have the time to react. Ye Xiao had called Song Jue twice and no answers were made. He felt worried. [Did Uncle Song die in this man's hand?]

Thinking of that, Ye Xiao suddenly raised his killing intent. He swung his left hand and clapped his right hand. Suddenly, a golden glow appeared, and the gelid qi showed up; they surrounded his body. While carefully observing his backside, he suddenly made an attack.

In the dark, a big hand, as though breaking the rule of nature, came to Ye Xiao's neck through a weird path. Ye Xiao stepped back and turned over with some tricky steps. He shouted, "Where is my Uncle Song? Who are you?"

That man kept silent. His big hand was still aiming for his neck in an even faster speed.

It had been real fast the first time, yet the second time, it was even faster. That was horrible. Ye Xiao actually couldn't dodge. Luckily, he was clever. He raised his golden hand and struck on the wrist of that big hand.

- Pang! - That was a firm hit.

He was just feeling happy that he made it, yet he suddenly felt that his arm was in pain. It was actually nearly broken because of the reversal impact. He was frightened, so he immediately took his hand back.

Ye Xiao thought he was overestimating the enemy, yet he was actually underestimating him. That golden hand's attack was combined with the gelid qi. It was the limit of Ye Xiao's cultivation capability at the moment. Ye Xiao was confident that even superior cultivators at the grandmaster levels of the Sky Origin Stage would not want to be hit by that. It should have been an indestructible attack. Yet the man wasn't even affected at all, and his own attack even damaged himself. His arm nearly got broken. He was wondering about this man who was so strong in cultivation.

It was at least over the Sky Origin Stage.

"Oh?" That man was surprised, yet he didn't stop his hand; it continued its onslaught towards Ye Xiao's neck.

It was like impossible to get rid of.

Ye Xiao's golden hand attack didn't really work, yet it had slowed that man's hand. Within a short time, Ye Xiao had changed about eighteen kinds of comportments to dodge. He was even operating the gelid power in full range. He instantly struck with eighteen palms and eighteen fists on the enemy in the darkness.

Ye Xiao knew that if the golden hand couldn't hurt that man, the gelid power couldn't hurt him too. He still used the gelid power only to try to slow down that man. The man's attacks were truly too fast. Although the man just kept trying to attack his neck, it was just some super powerful move. Ye Xiao had been trying his best to defend, and it was the only thing he could do.

That man was truly unbelievably strong in cultivation. It was totally unreachable. The gelid qi was almost doing nothing good at the moment.

That man didn't even dodge at all, yet that big hand had always been close to Ye Xiao's neck.

That was perseverance.

Ye Xiao thought for a second and stamped on the floor. His body was like a lightning, rapidly getting away.

The enemy was too strong to deal with. Since he couldn't handle it, he should just escape for a while and think about what to do next.

If he kept forcibly defending, he would only find himself in an even more perilous situation. Maybe he would even lose the chance to live.

He didn't hesitate at all.

"Little bastard truly moves fast though." That man said in a gleeful tone as that big hand acted even faster. It was like breaking the limit of time and space. When Ye Xiao was getting out of the room, it actually grabbed his foot at once.

That was even faster than light.

Ye Xiao didn't have time to react at all.

He didn't panic though. He turned his body and a flying knife flew out from nowhere right to that man's throat.

And then he moved his head aside as two flying needles flew out like lightning to that man's eyes.

He operated the gelid qi in full power on his foot that had been caught. Suddenly, that foot was cold like a thousand years old ice. Ordinary people would have been frozen by that.

That man spat and shouted, "Where did you learn such evil moves?"

And then he took in a deep breath and spat it out fiercely.

That was like a huge river floating. That breath had actually blown those knife and needles down to the floor. He dragged with his hand and Ye Xiao's body flew back into the room. The next moment, that man's hand was firmly holding on Ye Xiao's throat.

Ye Xiao sighed and gave up fighting. He just felt helpless.

He wasn't acting slowly at all. It was just that his enemy was too strong. It was far beyond what he could handle at the moment.

The opponent's strength was even above the cultivation limit of the Land of Han-Yang.

That man should even be a top-ranged superior cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm.

That was more than the Sky Origin Stage or the Spirit Origin Stage. It was actually in the Dream Origin Stage.

And it was at a high level.

Ye Xiao couldn't even escape facing such a strong enemy, not to mention fighting back. Even if that man stood there and let Ye Xiao just punch and kick him, Ye Xiao would never be able to hurt him at all.

That man was not stronger than Gu Jinlong though. Yet it was a fact that he was invincible in the Land of Han-Yang.

Who was it then?

Haha, who was this man?

...

Chapter 178: Come on! Keep Bragging Then!

"Who are you?" Ye Xiao was caught on his neck. His life was simply in the enemy's hand. He just stopped fighting and asked calmly.

Since things had turned for the worse, being scared wouldn't help at all.

So he just calmed down and tried to figure out what was going on. Since the enemy didn't kill him at once, he might have the chance to survive this.

That man's eyes flashed weirdly. He asked slowly, "Your martial arts are strange and complex. Who taught you?"

Ye Xiao humphed and spoke proudly, "You are asking a stupid question here, man. I am the son of the great general. My martial arts are surely from my father."

That man's voice was a bit weird and he said, "Your father... Ye Nantian is truly that strong?"

Ye Xiao sneered, "Absolutely. My father can shock the whole world, and he can just look down upon the whole universe. Why should I learn my martial arts from somebody else?"

That man answered, "That is reasonable."

He then turned quiet in the dark. Ye Xiao could feel that the dark night was turning even darker.

That man was actually a spatial cultivator.

Ye Xiao finally understood.

That was reasonable.

He should be able see anything in any dark situations as long as he operated his martial art.

Yet he was completely blind during the fight.

Even though it just lasted for a short time, things shouldn't have been like that.

Obviously, his enemy had been controlling the space. Well, he felt it was reasonable that he lost.

That was just too big a gap between their capabilities.

Thinking of that, Ye Xiao's face turned even darker.

The enemy was too strong, and Ye Xiao would be very likely dead tonight.

He was simply too weak in front of that man.

"As I know, Ye Nantian doesn't have the capability to teach you this though." That man spoke in the darkness, "At least his martial arts should never be so evil and complex. Hey, hey... The golden hand and that cold power, the moves of your steps... Those are mysterious martial arts that are rare in the world."

Ye Xiao felt relieved hearing that.

[This guy is strong indeed, yet he is not acknowledged enough after all. He only recognized the Golden Hand and doesn't really know about the gelid qi and the One Laughter in Skyline steps. He is just normal...]

Ye Xiao humphed and said, "You ignorant fool, let me teach you something then. Those are the secret martial arts of our clan."

That man seemed to cough as he said, "What? The secret martial arts of the Ye Clan?"

Ye Xiao sneered, "I don't think a little stupid bastard like you would have known anything about my clan. My clan is the No. 1 clan in the Qing-Yun Realm. Have you even heard about the Qing-Yun Realm? Heh, heh, heh... I don't think so! How can an ignorant fool know anything about how big the world is?"

That man couldn't help but cough once again as he asked, "Is the Ye Clan truly that powerful?"

He meant, "how come I don't know that?"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "That's why I said you are an ignorant fool. Am I wrong? Look, you better leave as soon as possible. If the superior cultivators of my clan come over, even though you are a little bit stronger than me, you will be instantly killed."

His voice was full of confidence. It was some kind of tone from a king or a dominator.

It was truly vigorous though.

He didn't seem to be fearing the man who was holding his life.

He talked like those "cultivators of the Ye Clan" were just around, and they would immediately come as long as he shouted the order...

That man seemed to believe him and got quiet.

The room was full of silence.

After a while, Ye Xiao spoke again, "It is always wise to bow to reality. As long as you free my Uncle Song and get out of here, I promise I won't get to you for this. I can swear with my life. Although my life is in your hand at the moment, there is some kind of soul compulsion in me, and if I die in your hands, no matter

where you go, my clan will hunt you down. So you cannot kill me. Killing me means you are a dead man too. Look, you must have been cultivating for a long time that's why you have become strong as this. You don't want to mess with some truly powerful enemy. That will break your cultivation dream, man! It is hard in the cultivation world. Don't be too harsh, otherwise, you will ruin everything you got."

That man coughed again and said, "Well that guy, Song Jue, you were talking about, what if I have already killed him? What if he has died for you?"

Ye Xiao's eyes were full of coldness and he said slowly, "Then I will give you the last advice. Well... Just kill me now. That would at least make your death more important. No matter what, if you killed him, there will be no other solutions except we get you killed!"

The answer made the man turn quiet.

After a while, that man said, "Song Jue, although he's your father's sworn brother, he is only a steward to you and to this house. Why do you think like that? It will get both you and me killed after all. Even if there is truly somebody in your clan that can take my life, you will die before me."

Ye Xiao sneered and said, "There are always things that a man should do. You cold-blooded stupid bastard will never get to know it. You will never get to understand what it means to be a real man."

"Well said."

That man actually praised when he heard the answer.

And then he said, "So... You mean you would rather die to keep this steward alive. Right?"

Ye Xiao sneered, "You are talking garbage. If Uncle Song died, you will be dead soon."

That man kept silent for a while and said, "The Ye Clan... I didn't know the Ye Clan was so powerful though... I truly had no idea..." His voice seemed to be a bit sad.

Ye Xiao said, "Look. It is difficult in the cultivation world. Life is always precious. Since you have already achieved such power in such a young age, why waste your future. Just listen to me. You and me, we will be cool after this. You go on with your cultivation and I with my wealthy life. We don't have to mess with each other. What do you think?"

And he continued slowly, "I don't think you would kill my Uncle Song before you meet me though."

That man laughed in the dark.

He seemed to be quite happy. And then the hand that held Ye

Xiao's neck loosened. The voice of that man was clear and loud; it was filled with comfort, "Good. You are truly a good son of your father."

A slight sound seemed to echo in the room. - Pah. -

And then Ye Xiao found that he was able to see things clearly.

That man had removed the spatial block.

What Ye Xiao saw was a tall and handsome middle-aged man standing with his hands on his back. The man was looking at Ye Xiao with warmth in his eyes like looking at a precious treasure.

The man had no beard on his face, and he had a big body. Yet he gave Ye Xiao a feeling of a giant tree. He was gentle and righteous.

And he looked solemn and vigorous. His smile actually made Ye Xiao feel relieved.

He just stood there and Ye Xiao felt he was like a huge mountain that was unbreakable. It was like millions of men and horses were behind him waiting for his commands.

That feeling didn't exist in Prince Hua-Yang who was also known as a war god.

Ye Xiao realized who the man was right away.

He was Ye Nantian, his present father.

He was totally stunned as he completely lost his bearing.

He had been bragging for such a long time, and it turned out he was bragging in front of his father...

On the other side, Song Jue was looking at Ye Xiao with tears in his eyes.

When Ye Xiao was caught in the dark facing death, he actually put Song Jue in a prior position in his heart, and he would even like to die fighting against the enemy for him.

That was real.

Under that circumstances, even if Ye Xiao gave up, Ye Nantian and Song Jue would never say he did wrong. It was always a smart move to take the shame and keep himself alive. Only when he was alive could he plan for the future. Yet Ye Xiao chose to die fighting without regrets.

That was some honorable spirit.

At that moment, Song Jue had the thought, [It is totally worth taking good care of you all these years. I will even die smiling because I have you as my nephew in my life.]

"Okay. Don't just stand there like a fool. Sit down and let's talk."
Ye Nantian nodded. Even though he had been missing his son for a long time, he had to calm down and act like a serious father.

Even though he had been worried for him;

Even though he had been fighting all the way home for him;

Even though he had nearly gave out his whole life for him;

Even though he had nearly cried out when he heard the horrible news about him;

When he saw him in person and discovered him well, he didn't mention any of them.

It was just enough to know he was fine.

[What I have done... Those are what a father should do. It is my responsibility.

It is simply not worth mentioning.]

Ye Xiao didn't realize that this indifferent father had been traveling over 2 thousand miles, through endless fights within seven days back home, just because he had heard the bad news about his son.

Did it really matter to him what he had done for his son?

It didn't.

...

Chapter 179: Satisfied

"Not bad." Ye Nantian couldn't help but praise, "You truly are one of the men in Ye Clan. I feel comforted that you cherish fellowships." He squinted at Song Jue and said, "Brother, how do you like my son?"

Song Jue was moved and he tried to control his emotions. He answered, "He is surely good, big brother. It truly is my first time to be given care by the young generation... I feel regret though, that I didn't marry a woman and have a son. If I have a son, he may be as good as Xiao Xiao."

Ye Nantian was proud as he loudly laughed.

He then spoke, "You two have made a terrible lie to everyone this time. You are making a huge disturbance in the kingdom. I was so pissed. However, now as I see Xiao-Er become a real man... I feel comforted."

"Most important thing is... what a man means, what responsibility means and what protection means..." Ye Nantian looked at Ye Xiao, "You now understand it."

Ye Xiao was a bit embarrassed. He just nodded.

He had actually just understood all that recently.

That was correct.

"It is worth coming back all the long way this time, now that I can see what a man you have become." Ye Nantian smiled blandly.

Ye Xiao nodded and his heart was full of admiration.

Ye Nantian was concerning about the war in the north though.

Yet in his heart, he cared much more about what he should protect.

Maybe there would be people talking about how he ignored the country and sacrificed endless families for his son... However, it was always a difficult thing to choose.

Ye Nantian chose to come home, and he was bound to carry the shame.

That shame was the life-long flaw of the invincible great general.

Ye Nantian just didn't care.

People might think that those who kept staying in the battle and put their families behind were the true heroes... However, if one could not protect his own parents, wife and children, how could he be a good man?

What was the purpose of fighting?

Home country was of course the noble reason, but... getting promoted and bringing good lives to their wives and children, wasn't that a reasonable reason too?

Wasn't it good enough?

When their families got seriously ill, those heroes might want to get home. But... because of the principles or the military regulations... they just couldn't. Who could clearly describe such complex situation though?

So that was always a question without an answer.

However, one should hold on with his own spirit and just ignore all others.

"Well I truly need father... to come home this time." When Ye Xiao said "father", he obviously paused.

He just couldn't get used to it.

It was a weird feeling.

Yet he kept persuading himself, [If my father in my previous life could care about me this much... I wouldn't want anything more. Now I have this body and have this father, why should I ask for more?

Isn't it the true love that I long for?]

"Oh?" Ye Nantian looked at his son and said, "I wonder what your reason is. If I don't think it is reasonable enough, you will get your punishment for sure."

He was surely proud that his son became such a real man, yet his son had actually stirred up quite a big problem this time. Since Ye Xiao wanted to explain, he surely wanted him to give a good reason.

"First, the Kingdom of Chen seems wealthy and powerful in the world. In face, it has been facing enemies from all sides. Once the war began, it needed the good men to support the kingdom."

"Second, inside harmony comes prior than the outside. Now that the kingdom was surrounded by enemies, it is dire that corruption still exists inside the city. The dead soldiers' souls will never get peace. Their families are all living miserably. The evil men have seized the key positions. The noble ones failed to have a chance to serve their country. If the situation remains to be the same, even though we have an invincible general and millions of soldiers, we will still be destroyed. It is simply the truth."

Ye Xiao smiled and continued, "Now that the battles are on heat, it is surely an important moment for the country, and there are opportunities to win the war. It is a good time to clean up the court."

"Father, you were restrained here for some reason in the old days, but I am sure you now have feelings for this country... It is your duty and responsibility to protect the country. If you can keep the country in peace, when we leave here, we can feel peaceful too... It is..."

Ye Xiao stopped for a while and said, "It is... that I have done all the best that I can and I leave with no shame. The days and nights here after I leave will have nothing to do with me..."

"It is a complete peace in the heart."

"This peace will concern our cultivations. It will make great influence to us with our great achievements."

Ye Xiao spoke seriously, "If we just let the court of the kingdom collapse with corruption, even if we defeat the enemies outside, we will feel regret to see the families of the sacrificed soldiers living in misery. It is surely the honor of a soldier to win the battle, yet it is also a general's responsibility to keep these families safe and well."

"If you can ignore it, you are still a good general though. But you will only be a war maniac. If you want to be better than that, we should begin with it now."

"We need to wipe out the evils in the court."

Ye Xiao spoke peacefully with a solemn tone.

Ye Nantian sighed and said, "That is reasonable. However, it is normal for a country to have such corruption when it gets strong and powerful enough. Even if we try so hard to make it right for justice, after a few years, there will be some other evils... When can it be stopped though?"

"When we need to leave, that will be the end of our responsibility."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "We only want to feel a clear conscience. You have to not let the soldiers who have been following you down, right?"

He raised his head and looked at Ye Nantian.

It was his first time to look into the eyes of his father.

He continued, "With your cultivation capability, Uncle Song's cultivation capability, my cultivation capability... how many years do you think we will stay in this world?"

Ye Nantian was touched. He looked at his son like it was his first time to truly know who he was.

What Ye Xiao said showed that Ye Xiao knew a lot of things.

"Since we will leave this world sooner or later, why not just leave good names behind us here?" Ye Xiao spoke sincerely, "A man leaves his name, while the birds leave their sounds... If we just try

to live with dreams, there will surely be our names in the history of this world."

"Of course, I don't really care about the names. What I care about is that there is something I can do better, and if I don't try to make it better, then it will be a flaw in my life."

"If there is a flaw in my life, then it will be a regret for me."

Ye Xiao continued, "It is surely meaningful to do it."

"Father, you have finally returned. It looks like the kingdom is in danger and our country is going to fall down. In fact, the kingdom stays firm. It is still far from being totally defeated. As long as you can do something in the capital and clean up those mistakes in the capital, it will be quite a motivational factor for the soldiers in the battles. All men in the battles have been concerning their homes back here, not just you."

"The war will still go on, yet the last thing we should be afraid of is the war."

Ye Xiao smiled confidently.

"Prince Hua-Yang cannot do the cleaning in the capital, because he will stay here and his clan needs to last here. You are different. Me too."

Ye Xiao said.

Ye Nantian was pacing in the room with his hands on his back. After a while, he said, "Since so, you need to keep faking your illness."

That meant there was an answer for the future.

Ye Xiao felt relieved.

When Ye Nantian and Song Jue left the room, Ye Xiao was alone in the room feeling happy.

[That is the feeling of being cared about by family.

That is the feeling to have family.]

Ye Xiao clearly knew how far it was from the north to the capital.

It must have taken a huge effort of Ye Nantian to get back home within such a short time.

Ye Xiao felt that he must be the most wonderful father in the world.

And Ye Nantian had been through endless traps and slaughter.

He would have died on the way if he had been just a bit careless...

"I am satisfied." Ye Xiao spoke to himself.

...

"Talk to me! What exactly happened?" Ye Nantian looked at Song Jue and asked all of a sudden.

Song Jue was surprised. He asked, "What do you mean what happened?"

"Don't play fool in front of me. How come Xiao-Xiao has suddenly become so strong in cultivation? In his current age, having such a powerful cultivation capability, that means he is a genius even in the Qing-Yun Realm. You surely understand this... Most importantly, I have just been away for two and a half years. Within only two and a half years, Xiao-Xiao actually improved that much? Don't you feel it's strange?"

...

Chapter 180: All the Questions

"Besides, Xiao-Xiao's martial arts are truly strange. They are all top-ranged martial arts. It could be normal that I haven't seen those martial arts, yet isn't it abnormal that I haven't even heard about them?

Except the cultivation capability, his thoughts are stable and wise. He is decisive too. He is like a different person since the last time I saw him. How could he change so much?

One thing that surprised me the most is that Xiao-Xiao understands cultivation even better than me! Who the hell has been teaching him all this? Who on earth have such a capability?

After hearing what he said, I felt comforted indeed. But I also felt strange. It is a good change after all. I have been looking forward for this day to come... But I just still need to ask you about it. I feel that you must know something, right? Why haven't you told me anything during such a long time? Is it a surprise for me? That is a good surprise. I have to say so.

And moreover... He actually knows something about the Ye Clan! Did you tell him anything about it?"

Ye Nantian stared at Song Jue with a frown on his face.

Song Jue held a bitter face and thought for a while. He said, "Well urh... Big Brother... These things... You should ask your son himself... You shouldn't expect anything from me."

Ye Nantian shook his head, "He is a real man now. He has his own secrets. If he wants to tell me, he would have told me just now. If he doesn't want me to know, it won't be good to push him. The whole thing is good after all though. Do I really need to question my son?"

Song Jue felt like crying, "So you keep questioning me?"

"Because you have changed a lot too! Both of you have changed. I can't question him, so I naturally can only question you at least!" Ye Nantian said.

"Changed a lot? Me?" Song Jue was stunned and murmured, "Xiao-Xiao has changed a lot indeed, yet I haven't changed a bit. What did I change?"

"Brother, you haven't changed huh? When I left home, you are in the grandmaster levels of Sky Origin Stage. I reckoned that you will fall down under the Sky Origin Stage in the two and a half years I was gone. And if you drank liquors during the time I was not here... It would be worse.... However, now you are still in the Sky Origin Stage. That is unbelievable. What surprised me the most is that the Golden Mai Palm wound inside you has been mostly removed. That is like a miracle! I didn't notice it back in the room, but I do notice it now." Ye Nantian stared at Song Jue, waiting for an answer.

"Hmmm... That you are talking about... The Golden Mai Palm wound... Hmmm... I truly don't know where to start the story. The

wound got cured... Well, I am still confused about it though!" Song Jue gave only such an answer.

"Jue, do you really think I would believe you with that nonsense?" Ye Nantian frowned and felt a bit pissed.

"Well, I can't force you. But it is true. I truly have no idea how I got better!" Song Jue answered.

"What on earth happened?"

"Well, listen. I guess the one who cured me was only at about the third level of the Earth Origin Stage. You won't believe this, will you?"

"Heh, heh, heh... Ya you tell me. Do you really think I will believe that?"

"No, you won't. Even I myself feel that it's nonsensical!"

"Then why did you say so?"

"I swear to god. It is the only thing I know about the one who cured me! Big brother, it won't help even if you force me!"

"You are the only one I can ask. You are the only person who is possible to know the truth." Ye Nantian said.

"I really really reaaaaaally have no idea!" Song Jue was nearly freaking out, "I truly don't know! I swear to god that I know nothing! We are brothers, please. If I know anything, I will tell you. But I don't!

I don't know why Xiao-Xiao knew about the Ye Clan and its hunting system. I have no idea at all!" Song Jue was upset, "I didn't tell him anything..."

"Can I take this as you have been living like a pig during the two and half years at home?" Ye Nantian stared at him annoyed, "You kept on saying you have no idea. Ok. I trust you. But when something like this happened around you, you actually didn't notice anything? And the only thing you know turns out to be something absolutely nonsensical! Don't you feel strange?"

Song Jue freaked out. He grabbed his own hair and said, "Why don't I ask you about it... And you got to me first... If I know anything, would I be driven by your son to run here and there and be frightened all the time! I couldn't even have a tight sleep at night!"

"Urh?" Ye Nantian looked at his sworn brother.

Song Jue was embarrassed, [Oh shxt, I said something wrong again!

Wasn't that exposing my own shame!]

Ye Nantian kept asking for a while and got nothing back, so he stopped.

"Fine. So be it. All things are good on our side after all. Xiao-Xiao is now a man. If he wants to keep it a secret, we don't have to dig it out! It is at least a good thing.

I am not sure who has been teaching Xiao-Xiao and the one who cured you, but at least I'm sure they must mean no harm to us. That is undoubtable..."

Ye Nantian spoke blandly, "Xiao-Xiao knows about the Qing-Yun Realm, about the true nature, about responsibility, about man, about the Ye Clan... That means the one who has been teaching him must be a good man. Besides, he must be someone outside the Land of Han-Yang. He is most likely from the Qing-Yun Realm!

There are not many people even in the Qing-Yun Realm that are powerful like this... I think this guy must be very strong in cultivation!

I don't think we have to piss him. It will make both him and us awkward though if we do something reckless. Just pretend to know nothing about it in front of Xiao-Xiao.

The days to come are going to be tough for us." Ye Nantian sighed, "If Xiao-Xiao has such a powerful support behind him, maybe he can keep Xiao-Xiao alive when the time comes. If we recklessly dig on this, it may expose the guy's true identity. That may piss that guy off..."

"Would it be someone of the Ye Clan?" Song Jue asked.

"Absolutely not." Ye Nantian felt sad.

Song Jue felt regret when he finished asking.

Ye Nantian let go of the topic and said, "Tomorrow, I will attend the court and begin with the cleaning! As Xiao-Xiao said, the soldiers are fighting with blood outside, we have to make them feel safe here!

Soldiers shouldn't weep while they bleed!

I will let those men in the capital weep and bleed!

That is what I should do. Let me get it done this time!"

Song Jue nodded, "Brother, I got your back!"

Ye Nantian nodded, "I have been worrying about your wound aside from Xiao -Xiao. Now I am finally free!"

Song Jue felt embarrassed, "The man who cured me was truly powerful. I truly thought that he was only at about the third level of the Earth Origin Stage. How can a man of the Earth Origin Stage cure my Golden Mai Palm wound. But why did he knock me out when he cured me? I would surely be pleased to get cured if he

could help me. He didn't need to knock me out."

Ye Nantian looked at Song Jue and nodded. He praised, "You are indeed Song Jue, my brother. You have been stupid like a pig since you were a kid! I have never made a wrong statement about you all my life."

Song Jue was stunned for a while, and then he said while gritting with his teeth, "How come I didn't know how good you are at humiliating people!"

...

Before Ye Nantian could get to the royal palace, the king had arrived at the House of Ye!

The king came to his official's house; the official should open the gate and welcome the king warmly, as though he was filled with thankfulness and honor.

Yet Commander Ye was quite different. He just stayed in his study room waiting for the king.

That was making it sound better to say "waiting" though!

Around the whole House of Ye, nobody greeted the king; not even a man led the road for the king.

Everyone of the House of Ye, led by Steward Song, were all full of fierceness and hatred. Their eyes were full of that green light as though they were wolves. They didn't show any amity. They were totally prepared to kill at any moment!

So the king went to the study room by himself.

Lucky for the king, he knew well about the House of Ye. Otherwise, he might get lost there.

All the royal guards were like losing their souls facing the horrible men in the House of Ye.

They had never seen any officials to just sit in their room and wait for the king to personally arrive!

That was regicidal!

Yet Ye Nantian just did it.

Ye Nantian was a great general who controlled a huge amount of soldiers, so it was reasonable he would do that during such a special time. Yet how come those servants and other people in the house also acted like that. Although people always said that a prime minister's families were all like ministers, how could they dare to treat the king like that?

Yet the king just walked to the room himself, naturally and stably.

He just ignored all the good advices from the guards and officials.

The king was sure, [If Ye Nantian wants to kill me, the number of guards I put around me would mean nothing. If Ye Nantian doesn't want to take my life, as long as he is with me, even if the world is against me, I will be fine.]

...

Chapter 181: A Private Conversation

"How is it?" When the king entered the study room, he asked. It was normal, usual and simple.

"Hmm. Not bad." Ye Nantian smiled. His answer was also simple.

"That's good." The king took a breath out.

"It must have made you suffer all these days." Ye Nantian said.

"Not really. I won't complain though. There are always reasons for the things happening now..." The king smiled, "What do you want to do? Just be frank with me me."

The king never showed himself high above in front of Ye Nantian.

Ye Nantian was used to it; he also wouldn't see himself lower than the king.

Especially when they were having a private meeting.

They never called each other brothers too, although they were sworn brothers for real!

They just never say anything like "younger brother" or "older brother". They just used "you" and "I"!

"The law-breaking Ye Nantian has now become a myth." Ye Nantian smiled, "It is a wonderful bad title indeed, but it is a good thing. There is always a bad side within the good side of all things."

The king nodded, "I understand. How is Xiao-Xiao?"

Ye Nantian sighed, "The kid had been holding it till I returned. Now... things are at least not in the worst case scenario."

The king felt totally relieved when hearing that. He said, "A tiger truly won't procreate a dog."

As long as Ye Xiao was alive, Ye Nantian wouldn't be mad and lose control. That meant there was an opportunity for the kingdom!

Ye Nantian sighed, "It is still giving me headache."

The king laughed loudly. He was happy.

"Don't be happy too early though. I am going to kill some guys this time." Ye Nantian spoke seriously.

The king's smile froze as he a sigh escaped his lips. He stayed silent for a while.

"This time, there must be somebody in the royal clan involved."

Ye Nantian spoke again with a bland tone.

He was so peaceful like talking about a glass of water. Yet what he had just said were some really shocking words!

The king twitched his face and said, "Ok."

The simple "ok" had set the baseline of what would happen in the future.

It was not that Chen Xuantian, the king, didn't want to protect his own people; it was that whoever was responsible for all this would never escape the punishment. Ye Nantian was just informing him, not asking him for opinions.

Since things had developed to such a situation, the king had to choose to just get over with the topic.

It was quite a wise choice though, although it was also sad!

"This time, the kingdom is in a dangerous moment. We have never been through such a bad situation. Nantian, are you sure you can handle it?" The king spoke with anxiety.

"If there isn't that guy controlling everything behind the scenes, I won't think there is any problem about all of this disturbance." Ye Nantian was also anxious, "However, that man and that house, they just make me lose my confidence. And that's why I want to clean up our inner problems first."

The king was silent after hearing that. After a while, he sighed and said, "The House of the Chaotic Storm... The chaotic storm... Bai!"

His voice showed his fear.

Ye Nantian said, "That is a man that can never be killed."

The words made the king felt depressed immediately. He said, "Can't you kill him even with your full efforts?"

Ye Nantian shook his head lightly and said, "No."

The king stayed silent with an ugly expression on his face.

Ye Nantian frowned and said worriedly, "I have all the information about that man in the recent thousands of years... If the information is true, any of the three of them can easily defeat me as long as they recover to their true strength. They can kill me easily! I am telling the truth!"

The king smiled bitterly.

And he murmured, "The House of the Chaotic Storm... Wan of the Cloud, Xiu of Tthe Heavens... Master Bai! Heh, heh..." He was helpless and he said, "That has been like a sharp sword hanging upon the kingdoms. Whenever they decide they should cut down

any of the kingdoms, it will just destroy it! And there is nothing we can do to stop it. Oh!"

Ye Nantian said calmly, "The only way to deal with that man is to face him head on while using schemes."

He continued blandly, "In fact... every time he showed up, he didn't really have a particular target! He never truly want a particular country to fall. He just wants to make the world fall into chaos and take advantage of it.

Sometimes I am thinking maybe they just want to get lots of people killed. They just need blood. If that's the truth, we may still have hope."

His words finally made the king feel better.

"I know something about the House of the Chaotic Storm too. You are stating it correctly. Usually, with regards to morality, nobody will want to kill the citizens in any country. The greatest success is conquering a country without killing any of its people. Yet I don't think we need to strictly follow such rule now. The first thing is to keep the kingdom safe. If the House of the Chaotic Storm get what they want and step back, we will not only survive this crisis, but also keep a certain amount of our force... This land will very likely be united in our hand!" The king was speaking with sparkling eyes.

Ye Nantian smiled and said, "Well, that seems to be true regarding the facts we know."

...

They had been having the private conversation for a long time that day.

When the king left the house for the royal palace, his face looked strange. It was not all desperation, but not delight for sure. He just kept frowning on the way back.

People who had seen him didn't dare to ask about it; they feared that the king would blame them.

However, there was a rumor spreading around. "The young Lord Ye couldn't make it this time and Ye Nantian will certainly go crazy."

They thought that was the reason why the king was so depressed....

When the king left, Ye Nantian stayed in the study room for a long time alone. And then he stood up and went to his son's room.

"Xiao-Xiao, tell me your thoughts. Why would the king be so depressed?" Ye Nantian asked.

It wasn't a question. It was just another test.

Ye Xiao frowned and thought for a while. And then he said, "Is he suffering hemorrhoids?"

Ye Nantian was shocked.

And then he heavily clapped on the table and shouted, "Be serious!"

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes.

[Is it necessary to talk about such a thing?]

"The king surely doesn't want me to kill anybody, but he knew that whoever I want to kill should be killed after all." Ye Nantian said.

"Because... the king needs to make the military group and the political group counterbalance each other. He needs to play some emperor's schemes to balance the court. He doesn't want either group get so much stronger than the other." Ye Xiao twitched his lips while showing indifference.

He thought that if he didn't answer Ye Nantian, he would never have the chance to rest. So he decided to answer with a good one.

"Tell me more details." Ye Nantian's eyes lit up. He looked at his own son and felt so happy about it.

"Our king surely knows who are the good ones and who are the bad ones in the court. But he just keeps the court in good balance all the time.

In a country, surely, not all the officials are bad, otherwise, the country would have fallen long ago. Yet they can't be loyal and good ones either, because that would leave the king no joy and freedom in his own life. The king needs some foxy men, bad men and yes men to relax himself in his daily work. It relaxes him and also balance the court.

Yet father, what you want to do are apparently wiping out all the bad guys." Ye Xiao went straight, "That is against the king's schemes that he has been using all his life. Those guys are supposed to be restraining the good and powerful men in the court, so that the king himself can hold the highest position..."

"That is the emperor's scheme." Ye Xiao said.

"That's right." Ye Nantian nodded, "But now we have to do it. Even if it will only be for the play you have put on this time, I have to do it."

"Sure. It has to be done." Ye Xiao seemed not so interested.

"In fact, the king is a good man." Ye Nantian looked at his son, hoping he could find something more in his eyes.

"The shame is that his three sons are all pricks. Even though we

are still not their people, it still sucks." Ye Xiao said.

Ye Nantian nodded. He felt oppressed. The lucky thing was that what Ye Xiao said only needed to be concerned in the future.

"I agree that the king is good at the moment. But that is built by the truth that you are still obviously useful to him..." Ye Xiao spoke blandly.

"Of course I know it." Ye Nantian nodded and said, "But things in the world are all because of profits. If you are useless, who would treat you well? It is not fair to judge a king with that."

"I am not denying him though." Ye Xiao said, "I just pointed out the main problem of the whole system. It is not only for the king, but also for everyone else, even normal citizens."

...

Chapter 182: The Life and Death!

"A person becomes friends with another in order to get something. It may be friendship he wants, or maybe love, respect, glory, money... Aren't these all profits he can get? A usual citizen wouldn't respect a beggar on the street and certainly won't be friends with him, because they are in different heights. One is giving while the other is simply taking."

"I felt comforted that you know that." Ye Nantian said, "But remember one thing: even though the whole society is built up under such rule, you can't just deny true love in the world."

"Sure." Ye Xiao nodded seriously.

Ye Nantian was making a good point.

Even though people are all living for profits, no one should never deny true love. Otherwise, those people would become less than a human being.

Human beings are, after all, sentimental beasts.

"Well, if we only think of the king, it is ok that we do something to keep the kingdom safe." Ye Xiao said, "Yet when I think about what kind of pricks his three sons are... The king passes away and the throne is passed to one of his sons' hand. I just can't feel good about it."

So we fight like mad to get an iron kingdom for such pricks? It is of course a problem in the future, yet it is just a matter of time before we have to face it!" Ye Xiao looked at his father.

Ye Nantian didn't say anything for a long while. And then he said, "The country should be in good hands."

Ye Xiao nodded.

Their conversation was coming to an end.

There was nothing more to discuss.

"You will do the 'cleaning' this time and the king may be annoyed, but we have to be concerned about something more important. We have to disregard the king's feelings. When the world returns to peace, there will be more and more people that need to be cleaned."

Ye Xiao smiled, "So... You can never wipe them out. The king will not be restrained all the time by those loyal guys, so I don't think you need to worry too much."

Ye Nantian stayed silent.

It might be the night that he stayed silent the longest!

He looked at his son and lost his bearings. He couldn't believe

that his son actually understood all these things so clearly. He still thought Ye Xiao was a bit extreme... but the way Ye Xiao talked made him sure that there wouldn't be any big problems in Ye Xiao's future...

He finally felt relieved. He smiled and stood up, clapped on Ye Xiao's shoulder and said, "Maybe there will be a place for you in the Qing-Yun Realm in the future."

Ye Xiao was shocked and he raised his head smiling, "That is a certain process of my life. My life goal wouldn't be so short."

[A place in the Qing-Yun Realm!

What a loser's goal!

Qing-Yun Realm will only be a temporary stop for my future!]

[Short?!

Is my son saying that's short?]

Ye Nantian looked at his son and couldn't say a word for a long time. It all became silent.

...

It was the next morning.

The generals in the northern army got together. Ye Nantian raised his sword fiercely!

He cut lines after lines of the people in the enemies' houses in a cruel way!

The sky of the Chen-Xing City was covered by the smell of blood. It was like a bloody hell.

The northern army rushed into the Right Prime Minister's house and locked the door. And then they drew out their longswords and cut heads one after another. They didn't say anything, so the opponents wouldn't have the chance to say anything to defend themselves!

They simply slaughtered.

In front of the blades, even the most marvelous words wouldn't work!

The next target was the Minister Jiang.

Jian Taisui, his son was the reason of all the mess. They surely wouldn't let him get away!

When the northern army got to their house, they found that all

men in the house were dead.

"To evil and corruption, we are here to take your lives!"

There were words left in the house which was followed by a sign - "Life and Death Board"!

In the Minister Jiang's house, there were 103 people's bodies, 2 dogs and 3 cats, as well as 80 chickens lying in the yard.

The people's bodies were in a row; the dogs' in a row; and the same with the cats and chickens.

Not a life could escape the punishment!

Not leaving even a dog or a chicken!

The only thing that was left were the blood words on the wall.

Among those dead people, Minister Jiang and his son were cut by their heads, arms and legs. They didn't even have a whole body.

The news had spread all around the capital within a short time.

At the same time, there were also news about some other evil officials getting their whole house wiped out. There were some cruel rich men too.

People knew they were killed by the same group of people because the same six words were always left on the scene - "Good and bad; Life and death!"

Countless citizens clapped their hands with happiness about all this!

Those who had always been bullied by these houses hung some fireworks and started to celebrate it.

Many of them decided to memorize their ancestors that day.

They all said something to their ancestors like, "Those who kept bullying us in the old days are dead. Good and bad; life and death! Please rest in peace..."

Although Ye Nantian's army was acting in high key, the "Life and Death Board" was apparently more popular these days.

Many officials felt terrified. Ye Nantian was accused of "ignoring the national safety and breaking laws; over-standing the king and being arrogant". In the future history books, he was described with many bad statements because of this.

However, the wise men surely knew how important the "cleaning" was for the kingdom!

Only some of the people Ye Nantian killed were proven to have betrayed the country. Most of them were just killed noncommittally.

The cleaning became only slaughter at the end!

However, after that day, the opponent kingdoms suddenly realized their intelligence network had stopped working. Their sources just disappeared...

Countless pigeons carried the news to all around the world.

It was said that there were two great generals in the enemies who had broken the tables and cursed that Ye Nantian was cruel and brutal! Well, it was really difficult to develop a spy network in the Kingdom of Chen.

They had spent a long time and a lot of human resources to build their intelligence network...

Many of the people that were killed by Ye Nantian hadn't really done any work!

In the court, there were many officials kneeling on the floor.

Ye Nantian had surely pissed many people this time.

Well, in face, maybe these people were just scared that Ye

Nantian had really gone mad!

Those who had been working well were lost in fears. They were scared that the brutal sword might get to their necks someday.

They thought that there was nothing a mad man wouldn't do!

And the mad man was a man with invincible power! What should they do?

They could only beg the king to do something!

So they kneeled down in the Cheng-Tian Hall and begged.

They only asked for one thing - punish Ye Nantian. They begged with tears.

The king just announced the court held a pause. He was also cruel.

"The kingdom is in danger, yet you guys are still concerning your own profits! How stupid! The inside peace comes before the outside success. The great general sacrifices his own reputation and work so hard to help the kingdom get rid of its shortages. He is doing it only for the kingdom! I don't have time to hear your nonsense talks!"

The king's words had set a baseline to the whole situation.

The officials were all lost in anxiety.

They didn't know that the king was showing a great kindness to them by saying some words to them. He truly had no time and no spirit to deal with those officials. The battles didn't stop for even a while. The war reports kept coming back to his room.

"Report!"

"The four battles are in a dire situation! Wenren Jianyin of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng arranged 600 thousand men to start the attack. The great general Wu Gonglie has been fighting with his full effort but failed to hold it. The Black Wolf Mount, the White Cloud Village, The Sky Horse Passage, The Wolf Teeth Mountain and the Jade Gate Passage are all snatched by the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. The great general Wu Liegong is putting all his men to defend the Iron Line Passage. But the enemy's force is too strong. General Wu is waiting for support!"

Bad news like this kept coming to the city, and all the officials felt like being dropped into the cold water in a cold winter. They felt extremely cold about the war. At the same time, the news about the war had drawn their attentions away from Ye Nantian for some time.

...

Chapter 183: The Four Battles Had Fallen; General Ye Took Charge

Even though people all knew that the Western General, Wu Gonglie, was very possibly not a match to the prince of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, Wenren Jianyin, nobody had expected that he would fail within such a short time so miserably!

It was only a half month, and 3 thousand miles of the western territory had already fallen in the enemy's hands!

Wu Gonglie was forced back to the Iron Line Passage. It was the last passage from the west to the Kingdom of Chen, an important place in military strategy. That was the only obstacle holding back Wenren Jianyin.

If the Iron Line Passage fell, there would be nothing to stop the enemy from getting into the capital.

If Wenren Jianyin broke the Iron Line Passage, that meant lots of lives would be massacred!

The situation had been under such a serious situation!

"What now?" The officials were all worried.

They were also worried about the killing monster around them - Ye Nantian. How could they not be anxious!

"Report! Urgent report from the east battle!"

Another report arrived with terrible news!

"What again? The east shouldn't be as bad as the west..." The officials all nearly cried out with tears.

"Report! Zhan Qianshan from the Kingdom of Tian-Yu has been leading millions of men pushing the eastern frontline! The Eastern General, Gonsun Nu, fought with full efforts but kept failing to defend. Now the battle has been drawn back 700 miles to our kingdom. The Army of Tian-Yu kept attacking at all times. The east battle is falling! They request support!"

...

Both the east and the west were in danger.

The officials looked at each other and couldn't think of any practical things to help.

It was the first time the Kingdom of Chen encountered such a severe situation since it was built.

"Report! Report from the north!"

"The tribes of the north have gathered as one troop. The

vanguard of the Wolf Army has 400 thousand men pushing through the borders. There are also another million men waiting behind them. They will get to our men straight away within a month... The northern army needs help..."

The north was at least temporally stable. However, General Ye wasn't in the north at the moment, if the enemy attacked, there would be 1.4 million men rushing over...

Well, it wasn't a good situation though.

"Report! Report from the south!"

"Prince Hua-Yang and his army has arrived at the south! He has won the first battle and struck back the enemy for 300 miles. The battle is still tense..."

That was at least a good news.

There was at least good news from one of the four battles. The kingdom wasn't falling in all sides.

However, people still felt hard to breath with such an enormous pressure.

The war was ongoing; the whole world was shaking in chaos.

The officials decided to make a report again, asking the king to

send Ye Nantian back to the north.

They all realized that the north would become the most dangerous battle of the four without Ye Nantian!

The wolves were gathering a million men. They apparently planned to take over the north once and for all and march to the south!

It was a situation that would never have happened in the past...

The tribes must have realized there was something happening in the Kingdom of Chen, because Ye Nantian took leave all of a sudden, leaving the whole army behind. They didn't care what was happening there. As long as Ye Nantian wasn't in the north, the men that were left there were never a threat to them. So they became encouraged and struck with all their forces...

The war was in a clear situation. It wasn't needed to analyze a lot to know which side was the most dangerous one.

If the Kingdom of Lan-Feng and the Kingdom of Tian-Yu won the war, the country would fall, but people could still have their homes.

If the wolves from the north got into the kingdom, it would be far worse than losing the country... All citizens would fall under the iron feet in misery.

It was the only wise thing to do to send Ye Nantian back to the war!

Because only Ye Nantian could control the north. Even Prince Hua-Yang wasn't able to!

...

The king was finally tired of receiving this kind of news all the time. He gathered the officials for a meeting.

When Ye Nantian entered the hall fully in arms, the officials were all silent.

Their eyes were all full of complex expressions.

[This man sees lives as if they were grasses. He is dominating and law-breaking!]

Yet this man was the only hope of the kingdom at the moment.

He was the only one who could save the kingdom in the chaos!

Maybe that was why he could keep acting above the law!

"Great General Ye." The king's voice was vigorous, "Are you done with your mad actions?"

Ye Nantian had to show some respect to the king in front of the officials after all, so he slightly bowed and said, "Almost... It was far from what I expected, but since my son can still be cured, I will just keep some of their lives. The war is in a tense situation. I think I should think more of the war at the moment."

Some old officials kept shaking their heads hearing those words.

[You have killed thousands of people... And you are just 'almost done'?!]

The thing is... We thought your son is not going to make it, so you started to kill like that, but in fact your son is still alive and still curable...

Your son is curable, then why are you still so mad?

What if your son is sure to die? Would you kill all the people in the city?!

The most overwhelming thing is that... after killing all those poor men, you actually said that you should think more of the war... That... What should we say about it? What do we dare to say? What on earth?]

The king nodded and said blandly, "Your son is fine. That's good. But my court became much more spacious now."

Ye Nantian said, "The new will never come with the old here. Your highness, there are lots of wise men in the Kingdom of Chen. They are enough to bring peace to the kingdom."

When he said "the new will never come with the old here", he intentionally glanced at the officials.

Many of them felt cold on their backs.

Ye Nantian was making a clear statement to them, "if you dare to mess with my son, you will be the old ones".

What a threat it was.

The officials were all mad, but they didn't dare to say anything. There was no difference between reasoning with a mad man and asking for death. The military group in the court were all standing proudly!

[General Ye is a great man indeed!

His vigor is even bigger than the whole kingdom and even the whole Land of Han-Yang!]

The king twitched his lips and said, "Now the four sides are in danger. General Ye, do you have any plan to deal with it?"

Ye Nantian spoke calmly and confidently, "We defend when the

enemy attacks. What is so hard to do? The situation looks difficult to deal with, but in my eyes, those are only some stupid little animals that are unable to bear even one strike!"

An old man with white beard couldn't help but stood out with his body shaking. He said with disappointment and anger, "General Ye, I have been admiring you since you had worked so hard for the country and for the people. I wouldn't want to say anything. But now it is the dangerous moment of the kingdom. Our kingdom is falling in front of us. Yet you actually said those words so casually. I want to see what kind of plan you have to lead us to the victory!"

Ye Nantian said with pride, "The Old Master Wang, I promise you will see it! I promise!"

And then he bowed to the king and held his fist, "I ask your highness to grant me the position of the Kingdom's General Commander. I will need both the tiger token and the dragon token! All the men in the kingdom should be under my lead! I will lead all the forces of the kingdom to fight against the enemies! Let me fight on the land for your long lasting empire!"

It made the whole hall turn silent all of a sudden.

In such a dangerous situation, Ye Nantian actually said such a grandiose request. The officials realized how brave this general truly was.

However, many of them still felt scared.

Ye Nantian was the commander of the north and he already acted beyond the law and killed as he wished. If he controlled all the soldiers in the kingdom and became the General Commander, wasn't the kingdom's future in his own hands?

Would the kingdom fall under his control?

Suddenly, the hall was silent. The officials kept looking at each other.

The Crown Prince's face turned pale at once. He looked at Ye Nantian who was standing in the middle of the hall. He felt that the man was like a huge mountain!

It was like the man was immortal!

That was a "the world is in peace in my hands" kind of vigor!

The Crown Prince felt terrible regret.

[Why did I mess with such a man...?

Wasn't I asking for death messing with a man like him?!]

After everyone remained silent for a while, the king suddenly stood up from his throne. His eyes were full with glow staring at Ye Nantian. For a long while, he didn't say a word.

He just stared at Ye Nantian.

Ye Nantian didn't step back at all. He stared back to the king's eyes and didn't even blink!

After a while, the king shouted all of a sudden.

"Come! Bring me the dragon token!"

The officials were in a panic!

[What is happening?

Will he get it so easily like this?]

"Come! Bring me the tiger token!"

"Your highness! Your highness!! You cannot do that!" Some officials nearly cried out with tears. They kneeled down and begged, "Don't do it, your highness! Please don't..."

The king waved his hand and spoke decisively, "I have already made a decision!"

...

Chapter 184: Three Kinds of Supreme Dan

Looking at the tiger token and dragon token in Ye Nantian's hands, the officials felt the time and space must have gone wrong.

"At the noon tomorrow, there will be a big ceremony to tell the world about granting the tokens!" The king said.

"We better not do it." Ye Nantian replied immediately.

"Why?" The king frowned.

"If we make it known to the world, the enemies would know it in advance." Ye Nantian said, "The wolves struck with all forces this time. It is a perfect chance to wipe them out. If they know that I am taking charge of the army again, the circumstances may change. If they get back to the boundless grassland, they will remain a hidden threat to us like the old times."

"That's true." The king was lost in thoughts.

The officials all hoped that Ye Nantian could save the kingdom from the crisis, yet they were also afraid that some accident would happen. The kingdom had fallen into another's hand. The one who could save them became a man who could push them to the hell.

They were all frowning with sadness.

Nobody noticed that the king and Ye Nantian had showed each other a hint through their eyes.

The king was relieved, yet he sighed, "General Ye, the kingdom is totally in your hands. I hope you won't let me down!

Please save the kingdom from the crisis!"

The king spoke with great expectation.

"Don't worry, your highness! The Kingdom of Chen will last forever!"

Ye Nantian's answer was powerful and firm.

...

That night, the five tiger generals, who led the half of the northern army and was on vacation, got together in Ye Nantian's home.

At the latter half of that night, the three capital gates of the Kingdom of Chen secretly opened. Several troops got out of the city.

One of the troops marched for the west through the western gate.

Another one to the east through the eastern gate.

The last one marched for the south.

When the troops arrived at the camps at the gates, an order was given, and they immediately left. Several lines similar to dragons marched to their destinations like rushing arrows!

The camps were still there. For a long time after that night, there were still smoke going up to the sky from the camps, as though there were people cooking inside them...

The flags were still flying there.

Only a few men knew that the camps were already empty! There were only some horsemen and cooks taking care of them. The others had all gone to the battles.

Ye Nantian stood on the wall, quietly looking at the south.

"The east and the west are still safe as for now. Only the pressure from the south is overwhelming. I hope Brother Su can handle it..."

Ye Nantian frowned. His anxious eyes stared in the middle of the night's darkness like he could directly see the north battle.

"Brother Su, I only need three months! Please hang on!"

Ye Nantian murmured.

The next moment, he got off the wall, rode his horse and rushed to the House of Ye.

The horse steps were like thunders breaking the silent night of the kingdom.

Ye Nantian's hair and clothes were fluttering in the breeze of the night.

"If it goes well, this should be the last war I fight for the Kingdom of Chen. After this fight, the north will be in peace. The world will be in peace... I should take Xiao-Xiao and Song Jue back to the Qing-Yun Realm!"

"I am going to regain what I have lost! I am going to rescue the woman I love! I am going to get what I deserve!"

"Wait for me!"

...

The son of the Great General was curable.

That made many people feel relieved.

When General Ye was with his son and didn't have time for other matters, he had said something, "If my son dies, I will wipe the whole city down!"

That was an immoderate and crazy statement. It despised the honor of the whole royal clan!

The point was that Ye Nantian had the power to say such words!

So it was just informing or stating a truth!

...

"It's so lucky that Ye Xiao didn't die. Ye Nantian saved him. That man is so powerful. He can actually cure the wound of the Melting Bone Palm. That is a terrifying strength. It is lucky that he is so powerful, otherwise..." In the Crown Prince's Palace, Guan Zhengwen still felt terrified when thinking about all this. He didn't say anything about the Crown Prince, but he had been complaining about it.

During the days when Ye Nantian was in the city, he barely slept at all. He was just too anxious to sleep.

He knew that if Ye Nantian got to him, it would only take several fists to get him killed. Now that Ye Xiao was still breathing, there was still hope that things would get better for him. He really felt lucky about it!

However, what if Ye Nantian got to know the truth? If Ye Nantian wanted to dig out the truth, he would surely get to the him. It wasn't an easy thing to hurt Ye Xiao like this after all. It must be done by a man above the middle levels of the Sky Origin Stage. There were not many people in the Land of Han-Yan above that level...

[If the truth is revealed, what should I do?

It is only my thought that things are still in a good side. Would Ye Nantian think so too?

If he really wants to condemn this, it will not be about whether things are in a good side or not, it will be in what way I should die... It will be in what way my whole clan should die...]

Thinking of that, Guan Zhengwen felt terrified as cold sweat dripped all over his body.

He had dreamt about Ye Nantian killing all the way to his house during those days. He woke up from the horrible dreams with sweat all over him. He felt scared once he woke up, even though he knew that he was just dreaming!

In fact, he had only seen Ye Nantian once from distance. That was when the horror was planted deep inside his heart!

That was the first time Guan Zhengwen saw such a terrifying

man.

He used to be holding thoughts like "power, wealth, those are nothing but disappearing fogs; all men need to piss and shxt after all". However, now he knew that there was some kind of man that was so special that he could never afford to mess with...

The Crown Prince felt relieved too. He said, "That's good. I never expected that Ye Nantian could be so capable... He actually cured a man who was sentenced to death by the royal doctors!"

Guan Zheng-Wen just nodded without saying anything.

"I really didn't know Ye Nantian was that powerful." The Crown Prince looked at Guan Zhengwen and said, "Please don't feel strange. Ye Nantian has always been maintaining a low profile. He always hides his true capabilities, and he seems to have some kind of privity with my father. Me and my brothers didn't know he had actually hidden himself so deep..."

Guan Zhengwen smiled bitterly, "I only hope that the truth can be buried forever. Otherwise, my old cracked body will fail to bear the torture of the General Ye. Your highness..."

The Crown Prince promised solemnly, "Please don't worry. Only the sky and earth, you and me know about the truth. There will be no other man who knows about it. Revealing the truth means looking for death. I am on the same side with you on this."

Guan Zhengwen nodded to agree. Yet he was still worried.

"Tomorrow, I will go to the House of Ye again." The Crown Prince said, "I must draw this strong figure to my side."

The figure of the Crown Princess showed up behind the curtain. She sighed with disappointment.

It was full of helplessness.

Since the day Ye Nantian vigorously returned like a thunder, the Crown Prince had obviously changed his attitude to her.

The Mu Clan, which used to be the super powerful clan, was now below the Crown Prince's sight.

...

While they were having conversations in the Crown Prince's Palace, there was also a conversation in the House of Ye.

It was indeed the conversation between Ye Nantian and his son, Ye Xiao.

"Where did you get these dan beads?" Ye Nantian asked with three jade bottles in his hands. Each bottle had three dan beads!

They were the Connecting Mai Dan, Bone Ablutionary Dan and the Limit Breaking Dan!

Those were nine supreme dan beads in total!

These three kinds of dan beads weren't very precious for Ye Nantian. After all, they were only at third or fourth level, and they had limited efficacy.

However, they were all supreme dan beads! That was a different thing!

Three kinds of supreme dan beads showed up in the same place at the same time. That was some good fortune that only happened in dreams. It was even more beautiful what myths could tell!

Ye Nantian suddenly realized that his son became somewhat strange to him. He felt like everything was so unreal, especially when the supreme dan beads showed up in front of him in his son's hands!

If he could get some dan beads like these years ago, he would have been fighting back to the Qing-Yun Realm long ago!

"Usually, when father, you, ask me something, I should tell you whatever I know. But these dan beads are presents from my secret master. He doesn't allow me to expose any details..." Ye Xiao was used to make such lies now.

"Secret master..." Ye Nantian looked at Ye Xiao with sharp eyes, "Xiao-Xiao, I don't care who he is. I just want to know one thing... Is he from the Ye Clan? Or is he from the Jade Glow Palace? Or... is he merely some stranger?"

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[Ye Clan? Jade Glow Palace?]

So he shook his head, "Absolutely not."

Ye Nantian sighed with relief and said, "That's good. I won't ask you anything about your master then... However, how much do you know about those things back in the old times?"

...

Chapter 185: That Is a Father!

Ye Xiao shook his head confusedly, "Things in the old times? What things... do you mean exactly?"

"About your mother." Ye Nantian sounded worried.

He was afraid that his son knew all the truth about it.

Sometimes, it was better to let one person bear the sadness than two persons.

It his son kept fooling around doing nothing good, that would be fine for him. At least his son would be away from getting involved to that "thing" and end up dead.

Yet his son was so outstanding now. He knew Ye Xiao was a man with extreme pride. If Ye Xiao knew the truth, he wouldn't just let his mother remain imprisoned.

However, the Jade Glow Palace was not some normal sect. It was one of the greatest sects in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Ye Clan wouldn't offer any help to Ye Nantian, even though it was his own clan. Even if Ye Clan would, they wouldn't be a match to the Jade Glow Palace!

If Ye Xiao got involved to such a mess, Ye Nantian would feel

terrible.

"About my mother?" Ye Xiao shook his head, "I know nothing about it. You never told me anything. How could I know."

Ye Nantian looked at him for a long while and made sure he truly didn't know anything. He felt relieved and said, "Xiao-Xiao... You don't need to know anything about your mother or me. You only need to do one thing. Make yourself stronger and stronger!"

He was suddenly reminded his son's words, "Qing-Yun Realm? My goal is far more than that..."

"I know." Ye Xiao spoke calmly, "I know that my present capability is far less than enough to know more things... However, I think... When I am qualified enough, I have to know the truth and get involved! She is your wife and my mother!"

Ye Nantian looked out through the window and replied with a raucous voice, "As long as you are qualified enough, you will get to know it!"

"Then to what cultivation level could I be qualified enough?" Ye Xiao asked.

"The Dao Origin Stage!" Ye Nantian said, "Not the first several levels though. You have to be over the fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage..."

And then he sighed.

The Dao Origin Stage was like a dream!

He himself had been cultivating and practicing in fights. Now he was only at the fifth level of the Dream Origin Stage!

He had five more levels to go to get to the first level of the Dao Origin Stage. Every level up was like a distance of several huge mountains!

Ye Nantian told Ye Xiao that he should get to the fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage, because he wanted Ye Xiao to know the truth late.

He merely couldn't stand losing another person in the family...

"The fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage?" He looked around and smiled lightly.

It seemed not difficult for him to achieve though.

"By the way, I almost forgot this. A few days ago when you returned, my master said that he had observe you secretly once and...." Ye Xiao acted like he suddenly thought of something important, "I almost forgot this thing."

"What is it?" Ye Nantian asked with curiosity.

He didn't doubt that Ye Xiao's master had the capability to observe him without being noticed. Within only over half a year, he had taught his son to be so outstanding. He must be a marvelous man. Ye Nantian even thought that this master was at least the fifth level of the Dao Origin Stage. He must be a grandmaster dan-maker. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to give Ye Xiao those supreme dan beads!

To Ye Nantian, it was surely a good thing that Ye Xiao's master was a superior grandmaster!

In fact, at the end of the war, they would very possibly end up facing the House of the Chaotic Storm. To deal with Wan, Xiu and Master Bai, this secret master was a secret force that Ye Nantian planned to use. However, it was only to be used for Ye Xiao's safety.

"Well... After my master saw you, he said that you must be wounded. If you couldn't be cured, you would never be able to reach the sixth level of the Dream Origin Stage." Ye Xiao spoke slowly.

Ye Xiao was so wise and experienced after all. As long as Ye Nantian didn't try to hide it, it would be easy for Ye Xiao to see through that.

Although Ye Nantian was much stronger than Ye Xiao in cultivation capability now, Ye Xiao was much more experienced than Ye Nantian!

Ye Nantian immediately stood up when he heard that. He kept his eyes opened widely. He was shocked!

He couldn't agree more with those words!

He felt admiration to Ye Xiao's master before this. Now after what Ye Xiao told him, he was even more sure that this secret master must be a grandmaster cultivator.

In the Land of Han-Yang, nobody was capable enough to know about his wound!

The natives in the Land of Han-Yang didn't even know what it was like to be over the Sky Origin Stage. They didn't even know how many levels in total there were. Things like Spirit Origin Stage, Dream Origin Stage and Dao Origin Stage were barely in the myths.

The words Ye Xiao's master said were simple and correct. Ye Nantian was extremely shocked.

He knew so well how difficult it was to reckon a man's condition by only observation!

He thought that this secret master must be at least in the Dao Origin Stage and could already connect his mind to the heavens. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to do such a thing!

The one who left the wound on his body was the No. 9 Protector of the Jade Glow Palace, a cultivator in the eighth level of the Dao Origin Stage!

Ye Xiao's master must be close to the No.9 Protector in terms of cultivation!

"Did he really say so?" Ye Nantian was suddenly mad!

He had been working hard to recover his original cultivation capability and had finally reached the fifth level of the Dream Origin Stage. Yet he was stopped there and couldn't make progress anymore!

No matter how hard he worked, he just couldn't break through!

Now he knew the reason!

His body had been restrained by the wound!

Even if he spent all he had, he couldn't break through the restraint!

Now he understood why he was given such a promise. It was merely an impossible dream. It was only a hope that would never come true.

"As long as you break through the Dao Origin Stage, you will

meet your wife again!"

That promise resounded in his ears. It had been the motivating strength that had supported him on the endless fights!

Yet the hope was now an irony to him!

[That was playing me as a fool! He was trying to make me live in a joke forever!]

Ye Nantian sighed. His face was dark. Apparently, he wasn't in a good mood.

When he looked at Ye Xiao's concerning eyes, the flame of anger in his heart suddenly stopped.

[No matter how furious I am, I have to keep it a secret to Xiao-Xiao!

At least now is not the good time to let him know.

Otherwise... he will go mad!

If he couldn't have the power to do what he wanted for his mother, for his whole life, no matter how long he lived, it would be a burden in his heart forever!]

"Yes. A few years ago when I fought against an enemy, that man played some tricks on me. I thought I have recovered. It turns out it's still hidden in me." Ye Nantian took in a deep breath and forcefully suppressed the anger in his heart. He spoke lightly, "Your master is a powerful man indeed. He is actually able to see through this directly."

Ye Xiao looked at his father's face and said, "Who was that man?"

"I killed him. He died fighting, yet before he died, he left a wound on me. That was how he could hurt me." Ye Nantian smiled, "Dust to dust. The dead is dead. There is no good mentioning the past."

Ye Xiao nodded silently.

Ye Nantian thought that Ye Xiao believed what he said, but he was still panicky. It was also like waves inside Ye Xiao's heart!

Ye Xiao had a sharp sensation. He could clearly feel that Ye Nantian was depressed and angry at the moment.

Yet Ye Nantian wanted to protect his son and didn't want to add burdens to his son's heart, so he decided to keep the bad things to himself!

He just made up a story and described it lightly, so that Ye Xiao wouldn't want to do any revenge.

He knew how powerful the enemy was. He just didn't want

anything bad to happen to his son!

[That is a father!

That is a father's love!]

Ye Xiao was extremely shocked.

His heart was like stricken by something. He was touched with a sour feeling.

That was such a special feeling for him!

It was warm, comfortable, joyful, and... It was a fantastic feeling!

He suppressed the feeling in his heart too. So he lowered his head and said, "My master told me that these dan beads could mend your condition to a certain extent. Although it couldn't cure you, it will do you many goods. I have asked my master for a martial art for you."

"Martial art?!" Ye Nantian's eyes lit up. He was thrilled, "What martial art?"

During these days, Ye Nantian had known many things about Ye Xiao, and he reckoned that this secret master must be an earthshaking figure in the Qing-Yun Realm! If such a great man gave him some martial art...

That must be some awesome martial art!

...

Chapter 186: His Son Brought Hope to Him

[Maybe it can cure my hidden wound?]

Ye Xiao took out a new book.

It was a martial art book he wrote during these days after he got to know Ye Nantian's condition.

It was a martial art which was perfectly suitable to Ye Nantian!

“The Unitary Nature?” When Ye Nantian saw the title on the cover, his face turned red because of excitement!

Ye Nantian had surely heard about it before!

When The Unitary Nature first appeared in the Qing-Yun Realm, thousands of men got killed for it! That was a big event!

There once appeared an ancient remains in the Qing-Yun Realm. Countless men of the martial world had been there to find out if there was any treasure. It turned out to be a cultivation cave of a marvelous ancient martial artist eight thousand years ago.

The Unitary Nature was the special martial art of that ancient martial artist. He had been ruling the whole Qing-Yun Realm with The Unitary Nature. He was invincible during his time!

Cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm surely started to fight for it. Suddenly, endless battles began in the Qing-Yun Realm only for this powerful martial art.

Nobody knew whose hands it ended up though.

The only thing that was certain was that thousands of well-known cultivators died during those fights!

Endless unknown people had their lives taken for it!

Now, the legendary martial art actually showed up in front of Ye Nantian's face!

It was such a wonderful thing that nearly made him feel a bit dizzy at the moment!

He didn't expect that this secret master could casually give him such a priceless great martial art!

Ye Nantian was overjoyed, but he also had doubts. The title was The Unitary Nature indeed, yet the content might not be the real one. It could be some fake martial art.

Maybe it was a martial art that was purposely named after the same legendary martial art, so that its price could be raised a little bit!

Yet when Ye Nantian flipped through a few pages of the book, he realized that it was actually the real one!

He was in the initial step of the first-class cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm, but his eyes were in the keenest ones. He had only just flipped through a few pages, but he had already confirmed that this was an extremely outstanding martial art.

He was stricken by surprise. His hands started to shake. He murmured, "It actually is real!"

His voice was shaking too.

His eyes actually turned wet.

He finally had hope now as he had this martial art!

The hidden wound, and all the other obstacles in his cultivations were just nothing in front of this martial art!

Now he finally had the confidence to reach the Dao Origin Stage, and eventually... to see his wife again!

Before that, those were only a desire inside his heart, a target that he could never reach. Now this target seemed to be so close to him! It was not an unreachable thing anymore!

He just needed to work hard enough!

And he just needed the man to keep his promise to him!

The Unitary Nature Ye Xiao gave his father was indeed the real one. Back then when countless men were fighting for it, this book had been changing owners many times. At the end, it finally fell in the Xiao Monarch's hands. However, even though he had it, he couldn't use it!

When he got this martial art, he was doing quite good with the Pure Yang Martial Art already. If he wanted to cultivate The Unitary Nature, he had to abandon everything he had achieved on the Pure Yang Martial Art.

After studying it for a long time, he sighed. He had made massive efforts through life and death and finally got it, yet it ended up a useless thing to him!

So he put it away and didn't want to see it, so that he wouldn't feel annoyed.

In his present life, he already had a better martial art, so he surely wouldn't cultivate The Unitary Nature.

So he decided to give it to his father, Ye Nantian!

Sometimes, it was like the gods had arranged one's fate.

Ye Nantian took The Unitary Nature. His eyes turned red and he said, “Xiao-Xiao... You are young. You don’t know how much this book means to your father. With this martial art, the dream of your parents can finally come true! We must remember the favor from your master. He is our big benefactor!”

Ye Xiao was agreeable on his face, yet he felt ridiculous about it. He actually became the big benefactor of his own family. However, he was extremely happy at this moment!

He was happy. He was pleased.

It was a feeling that he had never had before.

He said, “If it truly is that useful for you, then I must thank my master later on.”

Ye Nantian clapped on Ye Xiao’s shoulder and nodded without saying anything.

He made up his mind in his heart that he should hurry up and finish studying the martial art as soon as possible. When he can memorize every single word in the book, he would destroy it!

An innocent man was always accused for having priceless treasures.

If people found out he had this martial art, he would encounter a great trouble.

He was a profound man. Surely, he could foresee such things.

The next moment, they both took a sigh of relief. They were both calming themselves down.

They didn't know each other's thoughts...

"The day after tomorrow, I have to secretly return to the north." Ye Nantian said, "The kingdom is in the worst situation. I have to take responsibility."

"I understand." Ye Xiao nodded.

He actually felt sad when hearing Ye Nantian talk about separation.

"As long as I am there, the north will be fine. The disturbance you have aroused this time has actually made some good impact somehow. It has actually [drawn out the snake out of its hole](#)... That was a lucky hit... So there is a chance that we can solve the problem in the north once and for all."

Ye Nantian said and smiled happily, "Thanks to your fandango though. You are such a lucky person."

Ye Xiao laughed, "Well, I guess I should do more things like that in the future."

Ye Nantian acted like he was angry and said, “How dare you!”

Ye Xiao acted like he was begging for forgiveness. And then they both laughed out loud. They truly are close to each other now.

“However... things are not good in the other three sides.” Ye Nantian frowned and said, “I reckon the west and east must be in great danger, even though they were still safe at the moment. The south should actually be the best of the three, but there are fatal dangers hidden in the south. The House of the Chaotic Storm is most likely aiming for the south. When they make a move, things will be totally different there.”

“The reason why I have such a conjecture is simple. There are only two persons in the Kingdom of Chen that are highly seen by the House of the Chaotic Storm. One is me, and the other is Su Dingguo.

So Prince Hua-Yang, my Brother Su, is probably going to face some severe danger.

But I am too busy to take care of all sides.” Ye Nantian frowned tightly, “The mastermind of the House of the Chaotic Storm hasn’t shown up yet... Except for the Xiu of the Heavens... She has appeared in the Chen-Xing City before... I just cannot see through them.”

Ye Xiao remembered the words Prince Hua-Yang told him before he left to the south. He felt a bit depressed in his heart.

Su Yeyue had been coming for Ye Xiao nearly every night. She had lost much weight during this time. She seemed full of thoughts all the time. Her bright smiles in the old days had disappeared.

She would lose her bearings staring at the south from time to time.

Ye Xiao knew that she was worrying about her father. He just didn't know what he could do to comfort her.

He thought for a while and talked to Ye Nantian, "What if I go to the south for you, father?"

Ye Nantian was indifferent, "You have no soldiers or even one general. What can you do even if you are there?"

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and didn't know what to say.

And then he was suddenly enlightened.

[I have no soldiers or even one general?]

Ye Nantian happened to remind Ye Xiao something rather important.

...

The next day, Ye Nantian got in and out the House of Ye as usual with a dark face. He drove away all the people from some officials' families who were there to visit him.

“Get the hell out of here, all of you! I am working on my son's wound. You assholes keep coming to flatter me. It is merely wasting my fxcking time! If anyone dares to talk about shit again, I will cut his head off at once!”

General Ye was apparently in a bad mood.

The yes men all ran away with terrified expressions.

There was of course the Crown Prince among them!

General Ye didn't show any respect to him at all.

When the Crown Prince left the house, his face was all dark. He was disgraced and annoyed at the same time, yet he couldn't lose his temper a bit.

Nobody dared to come visit him again after he said such words.

When everyone thought that General Ye was curing his son in his house, Ye Nantian secretly got out of the city at midnight. The three hundred blood guards took moves separately and left the city earlier than Ye Nantian. They were waiting for him far away from

the city.

In the dark night, a group of men were riding horses with as few baggages as they needed while heading to the north!

At the same time, a few carrier pigeons flew to the sky and spread the news, “Ye Nantian’s son is in severe condition. Ye Nantian has turned furious. After he killed a lot in the Chen-Xing City, he stayed at home alone trying to cure his son! After investigation, Ye Nantian is in his house all the time. The House of Ye is fully guarded. The security became more rigorous than before.”

Those pigeons were carrying the “important” news to different directions...

...

Those who were preparing for the auction were now on their way. Some of them had already arrived in the Chen-Xing City.

...

Draw the snake out of its hole (引蛇出洞), means allure the enemy out from their secret locations.

Chapter 187: Mother? Queen?

Ye Xiao, as the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall, was naturally extremely busy at the moment.

At the same time, there was an unexpected guest in the mysterious bamboo forest where Master Bai was located!

Even the extremely mysterious Master Bai was shocked when he saw this guest!

In the bamboo forest, Master Bai was wearing white as usual and was sitting casually on his wheelchair. His eyes were calm and clear looking at the waving forest. He was actually wearing a smile on his face.

[The whole world is changing because of me.]

That feeling of having everything under his control was extremely pleasant, especially when he first did such things.

Yet as time passed, he just got used to it. Maybe he had already been through such a situation too many times. It was as normal as drinking and eating daily for him.

He even felt a bit tired about it.

It might be most people's dreams which were steering the chaos

of the whole world. Yet it was never the dream of Master Bai.

It was just a lame game that anyone would be bored and tired!

Even though it was a big game that was shocking enough!

Yet it still meant nothing to him!

Sometimes, it was horrible to get used to everything!

"The Heavenly Mystery..." Master Bai looked at the sky and he was lost in thoughts.

Since the day it was drawn down to the world, he lost every traces of it no matter how he looked for it.

It made him anxious even though he was always calm.

He just couldn't understand why it disappeared like that. He did succeed in getting it down after all.

[I spent so much and finally got it down, yet it never stayed in my hands. And it may even be in somebody else's hands!]

Thinking about that, he sighed.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were out for their own tasks.

He was the only one who stayed in the forest at the moment. He realized that he was actually so anxious, that he wasn't like who he usually was.

That was not a good sign!

Suddenly, the clouds rapidly changed in the sky.

There seemed to be some colorful glow shining behind the clouds.

A breeze suddenly brought some strange scent to the bamboo forest.

The bamboos were all shaking.

Master Bai raised his head looking at the sky anxiously.

And then a colorful glow appeared in front of him. A woman in majestic clothes showed up within an instant.

She looked at Master Bai with her bland eyes. There was a sense of anger hidden in her eyes.

Master Bai was surprised to see the woman. He straightened up his waist and cried out in alarm, "Ah... You... What made you come here personally?"

The woman said blandly, "Why not? You don't want to go back. Do you not welcome me here?"

Master Bai lowered his head and said gently, "I didn't dare to."

"Didn't dare? I really have no idea what on earth you don't dare to do?" The woman humphed and got close to him.

Most cultivators could operate flying martial arts. They usually just jumped up off the floor and moved in the air in a short time. It could never last long because of the gravity!

Yet this woman actually flew in the air.

While she was moving, the colorful clouds kept rolling under her feet. She didn't touch the floor at all. She waved her hand and the clouds in the sky suddenly came down. A mass of clouds immediately formed into a chair on the floor.

She actually made a real chair using the clouds.

It was all white and clean.

And then she casually sat on it.

Master Bai's eyes twitched. He smiled reluctantly and said, "My Queen Mother, you still dislike any dirt in this world. I better not

serve you any tea then."

The woman made such an effort to turn the clouds into a chair only because she couldn't stand the dirt in this world. She didn't want to touch anything in the mortal world.

The woman humphed and said, "Where are the two little birds?"

Master Bai said, "They are out for some businesses. I will summon them back if you want."

"No need." The woman said blandly, "I will only get more annoyed seeing them."

Master Bai stayed silent for a while and said, "Why? They are good."

"Oh?" The woman looked at him and frowned. She obviously had doubts.

Master Bai stopped talking.

He knew that if he truly told his mother that he wanted to marry Wan-Er and Xiu-Er, or even only showed some tiny affection for them, his mother would kill the two girls immediately.

They both kept silent for a while. The woman spoke again, "When do you plan to go back?"

"I don't want to. I really don't." Master Bai was being frank, "There are so many people fighting for that throne. I don't want it. I just want freedom."

"Freedom?" The woman sighed. There finally appeared a sense of softness and pity in her eyes while looking at her son. She spoke gently, "It is always too simple to just say the word 'freedom'. Who on earth doesn't want freedom? Yet you are meant to be what you are going to be because of your identity. How can you possibly have that kind of freedom? You know your father like you the most. And just because your father like you the most, your brothers, they will never let go of you."

Master Bai smiled blandly and said disdainfully, "My brothers? We are all your own sons."

The woman frowned and sighed.

"However, I truly am surprised that you would come down yourself this time." Master Bai said.

"I am not here only for you though. I felt that there actually showed up a Phoenix Body in this world. So I figured I should get down and see it." The woman frowned and said blandly, "But what I see is actually your flaccid expression. I am annoyed. If the two birds are here, they should be dead now. They deserve to die because they failed to protect their master!"

Master Bai smiled bitterly.

He knew that his mother's martial art was one of the best martial arts, Dancing Phoenix Art. It was a wonderful martial art that had the power to shock the heavens and earth. It contained a secret that was above the nature of the realms. It was indeed marvelous, yet it also had strict requests for the cultivator. Only the ones who had the Phoenix Body could cultivate such martial art. That had shut the door to most people.

If his mother wanted to have a descendant of herself, she needed to find someone who had the natural-born Phoenix Body.

That was her long-cherished wish that hadn't come true yet. It kept troubling her in her heart all the time. She had been looking for the right person for many years, but couldn't find one. And it turned out there was one showing up in the Land of Han-Yang, a low-class world!

It was never a joke that she said she would kill the two girls!

Well maybe she was just saying it!

Xiu-Er and Wan-Er treated the people in this world like ants. In fact, they were also like ants in their queen's eyes!

It was a casual thing that they died; it was also a casual thing that they live!

It was just an inconsequential matter!

"Congratulations, Queen Mother. Your dream is coming true." Master Bai said with respect.

"You know it is only coming true. I haven't seen the person yet. It really isn't anything good yet." The woman spoke blandly, "Chen-Er, are you really not coming back with me?"

"My cultivation is at the last step. I cannot be distracted." Master Bai kept his head down, "Please don't worry. I will return as soon as I finish it."

The women sighed and said, "Fine. Take care of yourself then. I can't stay here long. It may damage the time and space if I stay here too long. The land will fall."

"I understand." Master Bai said with respect.

"This is a little thing that I prepared for you this time." The woman threw down a five-colored ring and said casually, "Don't lose your life in such a low realm. I don't want to be disgraced even if you don't care."

Master Bai held the ring with his head low. After a while, he calmed himself down himself and said, "Don't worry, Mother."

The woman nodded and moved forward to touch his face gently. She then tidied up his clothes and stepped back. She spoke while looking at him, "I am off."

Master Bai actually didn't look up; he only said raucously, "Yes, Mother."

He was afraid that if he look up at the eyes of his mother and found the expectation in those eyes, he would feel soft and promise to return.

The woman sighed again and said with disappointment, "It is alright that you don't come back though. I won't have to feel headache while watching you lads fighting against each other..."

She then flickered and disappeared instantly.

The colorful clouds suddenly gathered around in the sky. It was a wonderful scene.

Master Bai raised his head and stared at the chair his mother had sat on just now. It was totally formed by the white clouds. His eyes were soft and gentle.

"Mother, I will be back." He murmured, "But... not now..."

...

On the other side, Ye Xiao was meeting Su Yeyue on the ice mountain.

He wasn't interested in the ice mountain that he had created. He surely wouldn't want to go and play there...

Su Yeyue, however, was quite interested in it. She had been feeling down recently. She had even felt like dying because of the grief when she heard that Ye Xiao was dying. It had been only a few days yet she already became a lot thinner. Ye Xiao couldn't bear that she actually suffered in such sorrow. After he had confirmed the plan with his father, he took a chance to tell Su Yeyue all the truth as soon as he could. Su Yeyue finally turned happy after all.

...

Chapter 188: An Assassination; The Girl's Thoughts

Because Su Yeyue kept nagging Ye Xiao to make up to her, Ye Xiao picked a time to go out with her.

Ye Xiao now had an attire of a guard. He had intended to look normal.

People all thought that he was seriously ill and Ye Nantian was treating him. If he showed up in the public, then the whole plan would be exposed.

The ice mountain attracted a lot of tourists. Even though the war was happening in the world, people were still so excited about traveling. That was kind of strange though.

Ye Xiao and the four other guards hiked to the top of the mountain with Su Yeyue, providing them a fascinating view of the world.

Su Yeyue looked at the south and murmured, "I wonder how my father is in the south. I keep having bad dreams these days..."

Her face was full of sorrow.

That were some most depressing days for her in her life.

When her father just left the city, Ye Xiao got into such a big problem and nearly got killed. She knew nothing about the truth at the beginning, so she felt terribly sad about it. If not for her mother who kept taking care of her all the time, she might have really ended up in a miserable situation. That was why Ye Xiao had to tell her the truth as soon as he could.

She knew Ye Xiao was fine, yet her father in such a dangerous place had been worrying her.

Even though she had Ye Xiao's company at the moment, she still couldn't be happy.

"Don't worry. It's going to be fine." Ye Xiao said, "Your father is a good man. A good man will surely be blessed. Besides, he is such a strong man. Even if there was a frontal fight or an evil trap placed against him, he will always win. What are you worrying for after all? I think you are just worrying because of overthinking."

Su Yeyue smiled and spirited up a bit. She said, "I know that my father is a great war god. I know he is going to be fine. But I just cannot stop worrying."

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "That's true. You know what he is, then you shouldn't worry about him. I thought you forgot how strong he was."

At the moment, a cold voice sneered and said, "Even a war god will die. War god? Hahaha. So what? Is this war god immortal?"

Suddenly, a mass of arrows came over to them. That was like a rain of arrows shooting at them.

It all happened in an instant.

Even Ye Xiao was shocked.

He was only stunned for a second though. He hurriedly held Su Yeyue's waist and rolled aside. - Shoot! - And then he suddenly turned his direction right after the roll. - Shoot! - He took Su Yeyue to the back of a big rock by doing a series of unbelievable moves.

- Shoot, shoot, shoot! -

Endless arrows hit on the big rock.

Suddenly, a few screams echoed out. The four guards were now like hedgehogs with their bodies filled with arrows. And then they fell to the ground after shambling. The arrows were supporting their bodies and they actually didn't touch the floor at all.

The fastest one of them could only draw out his sword, yet he still ended up like the others.

That was so out of their expectation. They died without finishing their screams.

Ye Xiao had a real fast reaction. He had drawn out a longsword in

an instant. He reached out a bit and saw about 70 percent of the tourists around them were holding their weapons while rushing over to them. They were like crazy.

It was a group of over a hundred men.

Every one of them had a fierce and cruel look.

It was apparently a well planned assassination.

And they were here to kill Su Yeyue.

No wonder there were such an amount of tourist in the ice mountain even in the middle of the war.

They turned out to be assassins.

Ye Xiao had just realized it and then a huge sound appeared. - BOOM! - The big rock in front of them actually cracked into pieces. Obviously, those men didn't like this rock.

The next moment, he saw a few streams of blue glow flashed like dragons. Five men flew in the sky and then got down to the floor like hawks hunting rabbits.

That really scared Ye Xiao.

[Who arranged such action?

They have actually sent five Sky Origin Stage cultivators at a time.]

Ye Xiao realized it was a dire situation.

Except these five men, the other assassins were all showing some golden glow. That meant all of them were above the eighth level of the Earth Origin Stage.

To use such a strong force, even the super sects in the Land of Han-Yang would need to send all the forces they had.

That was a huge plan.

Yet it was only planned to kill a girl, Su Yeyue.

The enemy must be confident about this one.

Ye Xiao realized there was something strange about that. The rain of arrows was fierce, but it appeared to deal with the guards. There were only two of them who could have hit Su Yeyue and only on her shank.

That meant they were only here to capture Su Yeyue!

The big rock was broken into pieces. Ye Xiao stamped his foot when the rock was broken and rushed down to the foot of the mountain with Su Yeyue.

What a reaction!

Some of the assassins were surprised. They just couldn't believe Su Yeyue actually had a guard that was so strong.

The next moment, over Ye Xiao's head, there was someone chasing them.

A figure got to the floor like lightning. He struck with a palm which released a mass of fierce wind. That was a killing move.

Before the attack got close to Ye Xiao, five fierce finger strikes got to him and controlled his body.

Ye Xiao stopped and rolled himself back with his two feet kicking out.

- Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! bang! -

The five finger strikes were shattered by his kicks and the sound of crashing resounded. When the crashes happened, he suddenly started to rush again with an even faster speed down the mountain.

It was the slippery ice on the mountain where he was heading.

He used that crash to push himself down on the ice, so he moved even faster.

While going down, he suddenly opened his legs. A palm strike suddenly hit between his shanks.

And then he drew back his legs and stamped, and then rushed out like a flying arrow.

The man humphed and struck with his two arms while following him. At the moment, the other four Sky Origin Stage cultivators also followed up to him.

Ye Xiao could think of nothing else but trying his best to get out of this predicament. He didn't even have time to look back and check on the enemies.

All the other assassins who were above the eighth level of the Earth Origin Stage followed up. They were all coming to him in all directions. The real tourists were all scared. Yet the assassins didn't care about them. They just kept chasing Ye Xiao.

Some of them even killed all the tourist who stood on their way.

Ye Xiao kept thinking about how to deal with such a situation. If he was alone, it was easy to escape. However, he was taking Su Yeyue at the moment. It was much more difficult to escape.

He might get killed at any second.

He was at the ninth level of the Earth Origin Stage indeed, because he had improved a lot recently. It was easy for him to defeat the enemies if they were only one or two men at the beginning levels of the Sky Origin Stage. Yet the situation was far worse than that. He was facing five Sky Origin Stage cultivators along with about eighty Earth Origin Stage cultivators at the same time. He didn't have a chance.

It was happening in the ice mountain that he created to deal with Gu Jinlong, but after Gu Jinlong died, the things he had set there were removed. He had nothing to use in this mountain.

It was a rather embarrassing situation for Ye Xiao.

He had never been in such a troublesome situation before.

Su Yeyue looked at Ye Xiao with an anxious expression. Ye Xiao was sweaty. Su Yeyue was rather scared at the beginning, but she was calming down. She kept staring at the side face of Ye Xiao while she was shaking in his arms.

Her face turned soft and gentle from panic. Her eyes were like full of water.

She spoke lightly, "Xiao-Xiao, are we going to die here?"

Ye Xiao glanced around quickly and kept pushing his feet. He was trying to move faster. But he still couldn't have an opportunity to turn and check on the situation behind him.

When he was highly concentrated on dealing with the situation, he actually heard Su Yeyue's question.

After Su Yeyue's words, a few palm attacks were stricken down to them. Ye Xiao kept dodging and got away from each attacks.

Su Yeyue's eyes were turning even softer. She was staring at Ye Xiao's face sentimentally.

She actually felt satisfied during the escape, even though they might die the next moment.

[This man doesn't think about giving up on me even under such a situation.

He is still fighting, trying to protect me with all his efforts. The fortitude on his face, the persistence in his eyes, they all prove that he will never give up on me.]

Although Ye Xiao was disguised with a stranger's face, Su Yeyue still kept on watching him sentimentally. The warmth and Ye Xiao's eyes were like lightnings hitting on her heart.

[What else should I expect since I have such a beloved man?]

At the moment, she actually had that kind of happiness like "a girl finally meets her Mr. Right after being in solitude for eighteen years".

...

Chapter 189: All of a Sudden

"It turns out to be such a wonderful feeling being held by the one I love! I would have no regret in my life if I can die in your arms like this." Su Yeyue murmured.

She stretched her arms and kept her body firmly pressed to Ye Xiao's body. At the moment, she truly gave out her heart, her body and her soul to the man who was holding her.

It was a pity to her that Ye Xiao didn't hear any of the words she murmured. He was concentrated on defending the attacks from the enemies. He truly couldn't be distracted by other things!

While he was operating his martial arts, his body was covered by a light blue glow. It kept floating over his body. Although it was in light color, it had a fierce vigor that couldn't be hidden.

"Ah, he turns out to be close to the Sky Origin Stage. No wonder he is hard to deal with!" One of the enemies humphed, "But you are still in the Earth Origin Stage after all. You are still too weak to stop us!"

And then a sky blue sword light appeared and struck over. A blue light wave suddenly came over to Ye Xiao who was running.

It was an area of effect attack!

The real killing strike finally showed up!

It meant the end of Ye Xiao's escaping plan!

Ye Xiao was rushing down off the mountain. He was nearly putting his head down below his feet. Basically, it was impossible for him to just stop immediately.

However, when the area of effect attack was about to get to him, he suddenly stopped. And then he struck with his right hand and Su Yeyue was pushed out off him. She moved in an even faster speed to the foot of the mountain and completely got out of the enemies' reach.

Su Yeyue had been holding Ye Xiao tight. Suddenly, she was pushed out without any preparation. A small piece of Ye Xiao's clothes was ripped apart when she was pushed out from him. The piece of clothes resounded in the wind.

"Go!" Ye Xiao didn't even turn over his head; he only shouted to her. And then he rushed out to the opposite direction and twitched his body again to dodge the attack. And then his body suddenly shook! His cultivation capability was fully unleashed at the moment!

"No!" Su Yeyue screamed in despair. She could only keep looking at Ye Xiao sentimentally. Her slim body was flying out in the cold wind. Her eyes were fixated on the man she love!

It took Ye Xiao's full effort to push her away, so Su Yeyue was now far away from the mountain.

In fact, Su Yeyue regretted when she screamed out "no". She knew that she was only a burden to Ye Xiao. [Xiao-Xiao is apparently risking his life to make me survive! My scream have done nothing good, in fact, it only distracted him!]

Su Yeyue was a smart girl. She then stayed quiet after that scream. She just moved her body to make herself rush out faster. After she got to the highest point, she started to fall.

When she lost sight of Ye Xiao, she felt her heart in great pain!

[Can I see him again?!

Under the encirclement of all those enemies, can he survive?

No! I want to see him!]

She screamed inside her heart. Tears filled her eyes. And then she thought of something.

When Ye Xiao unleashed his all of his strength, something like fog exploded on Ye Xiao's body and covered the sight of the enemies.

Suddenly, dozens of lights flashed.

At the same time a massive stream of gelid qi spread around

covering everything.

A golden color suddenly appeared on the white ice mountain!

Ye Xiao struck out his Demonic Weapons in an instant along with the gelid palm and the golden palm. He was also operating his One Laughter in Skyline flying martial art!

Ye Xiao swayed himself when he operated the One Laughter in Skyline. Suddenly, dozens of his figures showed up in different places. The sound of wind appeared in the air! - Shoot! Shoot! Shoot! -

There was no trace of him.

As he started to fight back, people in the enemies died!

"Ahh...." Some screams sounded out one after another.

On the ice mountain, countless blood flowers bloomed on the ice!

All the enemies were stopped by him alone with the explosion of his cultivation capability!

At least twenty of them fell on the floor screaming. Over a dozen were dead on the floor and would never get up again.

The others kept hiding anxiously including those Sky Origin Stage cultivators.

"Puff!"

When Ye Xiao got down to the floor after flying rapidly, he staggered and spat out blood.

That was unavoidable. He had operated his full power rushing down the mountain earlier and dodging the attacks from the enemies. He had to maintain utmost accuracy on each of his moves. And then he forcibly stopped himself. That would surely cause a negative impact to his Jing and Mai. Ordinary people might die for that!

Yet Ye Xiao had not only stopped, but he also fought back fiercely!

That was not just simply rushing back. He was striking with extremely powerful attacks while he was rushing!

He was filled with vigor!

With his limited cultivation capability, he had actually let the enemies fall into such a disturbance and even a quarter of the enemies fell down. That was horrible!

It was like a wonder, like a legend!

Maybe it was even more than a miracle. It was a myth, since he was only at the ninth level of the Earth Origin Stage! At least the five Sky Origin Stage cultivators who were chasing him could never achieve such success!

However, he paid a huge price to make such a myth though. After bursting out like that, Ye Xiao spat out blood. His Jing and Mai had reached their breaking point. He was seriously injured!

- Shoot... shoot... -

About sixty people got to the floor from the sky and surrounded Ye Xiao. Their eyes were all full of cruel fierceness!

[This bastard actually killed twenty of our brothers within an instant!]

Only a dozen people were on their way to get Su Yeyue.

They all hated Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao coughed and his body was shaking. He waved his hand all of a sudden.

The enemies saw it and dodged immediately. Yet they saw nothing coming out of Ye Xiao's hand. However, they could feel some black points flying from all directions back to Ye Xiao's hand.

"The bastard is taking back his flying weapons! He actually did that under our encirclement!"

When they realized it, Ye Xiao had already acquired all of it.

"Who are you?" Ye Xiao wiped the blood on his mouth and spoke indifferently.

His eyes were calm and profound. There was no fear, no joy, no anger and no surprise in it.

"We are here to take your life!" An old man in white who seemed to be their leader replied coldly, "I didn't expect Su Dingguo would arrange such a Sky Origin Stage cultivator on his daughter's side... He truly is wise. He is a war god indeed. However... I am afraid it is far from enough to only arrange one though..."

Ye Xiao didn't even look at him. He said blandly, "Although there is only me alone, it is still more than enough to deal with you bunch of bastards who only know how to plot against people."

"Hahahaha..." The enemy sneered, "Do you really think it is enough?"

Ye Xiao smiled as blood came out from his mouth. He said lightly, "Talking will never prove it, will it?"

At the moment, a man in white behind the old man who had been checking the wounds on himself suddenly stepped forward and said angrily, "You... You dirty asshole! What kind of evil martial art are you cultivating? You... You despicable bastard! You actually used poison!"

The others heard that and felt frightened. They looked at those who were injured the most and they turned out to be totally dead.

Their bodies were all green including their faces, and they were all turning purple.

They were dead, but their skins were still changing colors. Gradually, they became dark cyan!

Those who were still alive fearfully sucked in a deep breath!

[What is that weapon? What is this poison?

It is actually this vicious!]

Ye Xiao sneered and said, "You ignorant fools. That is no poison!"

He spoke casually, "Besides, even if it is poison, so what? It is either you kill me or I kill you in such a fierce battle. You have such a ludicrous amount of people setting up a trap for us. And then you all gathered together to hunt the two of us with all you've got. Now you actually accuse me that I used some dirty ways. I have to say that you are a bunch of unbelievable guys. I wonder in what

position did you actually say those words that sounded exactly like joke. The reverse impact is no poison at all. However, if you insist that it was, so be it then."

He then continued sneering, "You truly have no experience and knowledge at all. Yet you actually dare to show up in the martial world. How shameless! Who is your master? I am going to have some serious talk with him. He really doesn't teach you well!"

Although he was saying so, he himself was also surprised.

It was his first time to use his Demonic Weapons to take someone's life!

He didn't expect that the Demonic Weapons could cause such a great damage when working along with his gelid power!

...

Chapter 190: My Responsibility; My Protection!

Some of the dead men were only wounded lightly on the skin. Yet such a small wound had actually made them die with their blood veins frozen.

That was much further than what Ye Xiao expected.

He knew that although his gelid power was marvelous, it had different influences to people in different cultivation levels. It worked perfectly on those who were under the eighth level of the Earth Origin Stage. It could kill them instantly with only one strike.

When dealing with the Sky Origin cultivators, its efficacy decreased more when the enemy was stronger. When he was fighting against Liu Changjun, he needed to continually make attacks to make him suffer the negative effects like freezing and paralysis. It was difficult to completely freeze him though.

Liu Changjun was merely at about the fifth level of the Sky Origin Stage. For people like Ning Biluo, Guan Zhengwen and the Master Sun of the royal house who were at the grandmaster levels of the Sky Origin Stage, Ye Xiao reckoned that his gelid power could barely hurt them.

The strongest one of those men who were chasing him had merely half the cultivation capability of Liu Changjun. Ye Xiao's gelid power could surely work perfectly. However, there were just

too many people. And he had to keep them around to save Su Yeyue. His strength would be decreased when he was distracted. That was why it was difficult for him to make a perfect outcome from using the gelid power.

Yet it turned out to be a perfect outcome.

There was only one reason for that. The Sky Demonic Steel on the Demonic Weapons met the blood with the gelid qi and produced a huge damage.

That was the only reason Ye Xiao could unexpectedly hurt the enemies like that.

That meant he could create a lot more fighting strategies with the Demonic Weapons.

Such thought only came to his mind for seconds.

Because the enemies were taking their moves again.

Ye Xiao had no time to think more about other things with the enemies coming over to him.

Three grandmaster level cultivators at the Earth Origin Stage surrounded Ye Xiao and stood in a triangle. One of the Sky Origin Stage cultivators joined them and kept suppressing Ye Xiao. The others just stood aside looking at them with utmost concentration. When they think that something was wrong, they would all strike

out and stop Ye Xiao.

They knew it was the territory of the Kingdom of Chen after all, so they wanted to end it quickly, and they just couldn't care about any martial world rules.

If it was too narrow where they fought and they couldn't all attack together, it would take some time to take down Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao didn't panic. He calmly dealt with the attacks from the enemies. He kept defending it with his shiny golden hand and didn't step back even a bit.

He knew the limit of his own capability, and he was sure that Su Yeyue wouldn't be discovered if she was not stupid. But he just wanted to hold the enemies as long as he could so that Su Yeyue could have a bigger chance to survive.

Ye Xiao always cherished his own life.

He had been isolated all his previous life being a dominator. He cared about who obeyed him and abandoned those who defied him. He would fight when he needed to and would also cut and run when things were hopeless to him.

He wouldn't care about anything or anyone.

However, he actually chose to stake his life so that Su Yeyue would have the chance to survive.

It was impossible and unbelievable for the Xiao Monarch in his previous life.

At the moment, even though he knew he might die if he insisted pushing Su Yeyue to a safer place, he didn't feel wrong about it.

Instead... he was decisive.

[It is my responsibility. A man's responsibility.]

He said so to himself in his mind.

It was a foolish move in most people's eyes though.

But he felt that he had spiritually improved a lot when he did that.

[A man without responsibility will never go any higher and further. It was the basic rule that a man should keep in his life.

Responsibility comes first before the life and death. That was the only way not to disgrace oneself as a human being.

And that was the only way not to disgrace oneself as a real man.]

He was proud of himself at the moment.

The enemies were attacking like crazy from all directions. Ye Xiao kept defending and dodging while taking chances to fight back. The Demonic Weapons showed up in his hands from now and then and his face turned fierce.

Every time when the black glow appeared, the enemies escaped.

The way the others had died earlier had truly left them a deep impression. Nobody wanted that thing to happen on themselves.

Everybody had only one life. Ye Xiao might be careless about his life at the moment, yet they were still quite cherishing their own.

No matter how they tried to be careful, one or two of them would fall down when Ye Xiao struck out his weapons.

The flying needles were nearly invisible. They were also vicious. Ye Xiao had never thrown them to those Sky Origin Stage cultivators, because he had no confidence to kill them by that.

He would rather killed as many as he could before he died.

So his needles never missed.

Whoever was hit by the needles would die for sure.

The blood splashed everywhere on the mountain.

After a short time, Ye Xiao's body bore about seven more wounds. Yet there were also seven more dead bodies around.

Those Tianyuan cultivators were fine at the moment, but they were in an embarrassing situation too. Whenever the black glow appeared, they had to step aside to dodge it. Even when the black glow was going to the opposite direction of them, they still stepped aside because they were scared.

Ye Xiao's power had stunned all of them.

They had known that this "guard" was no higher than the Earth Origin Stage. They thought he must have been using some tricks to produce that light blue glow on him earlier.

Even a grandmaster level cultivator of the Earth Origin Stage should have long died under such attacks. Yet Ye Xiao had only been hurt about seven small wounds. He had damaged his own Jing and Mai earlier, yet he actually could still handle it.

Under the encirclement of so many superior cultivators, he was fighting desperately like a cornered wild beast. It looked like he was going to die at any second, yet he actually still stood up straight there after killing a lot of enemies.

He was truly like a monster to them.

All the enemies felt admiring somehow. But they mostly felt

hatred for him.

How could a tough man not earn people's admiration. Yet when he was their enemy, they surely hated him the most.

As he was strong, it meant that they would lose a lot of people. Everyone was afraid that they would be the next to die under his hands. No matter how they admired him, they just wanted to get him killed as soon as possible.

Things were getting tougher for Ye Xiao because of that. - Shoot! - Some blood splashed. Ye Xiao's face was still calm, yet his eyes couldn't help twitching.

A big piece of flesh on his shoulder was gone.

At the moment, a flying needle hit the Earth Origin Stage cultivator who attacked him on the eye. The needle had actually entered his brain.

The needle was still shaking on the man's eye, producing a deep sound. That man screamed painfully and rolled on the floor holding his wounded eye.

As the fight went on, Ye Xiao had spent more and more of his energy. He couldn't call back his needles anymore.

"Got you!"

- Bang! - Three palms hit on Ye Xiao at the same time fiercely. Ye Xiao couldn't hold it anymore and shambled. And then he was like a kite with a broken string flying out fast. His eyes were blurry.

He felt reluctant.

[These ants...

Ants...

If I am in my perfect condition, I can even blow you all to death at the same time. What a pity that I can only be teased by these ants and couldn't do anything about it.

If they are half the number they are now, I can easily run away after killing a bunch of them.

But there are just too many people.

Am I going to die here? After I got reborn with so much difficulty?

Am I going to fall down like this?]

His eyes were still blurry. He forcibly stood up and blood was coming out of his mouth. He suddenly had a thought.

[If I had the chance to make that choice again, would I give up on Su Yeyue and run away myself?

They were here for Su Yeyue, not me.

If I want to be safe, I have at least 90 percent assurance to survive.

But...]

And then he smiled while mocking himself, [If I gave up on her and escaped, will I still be a real man? Will I still be a human?]

"Hey, hey, hey..." He smiled and suddenly felt relieved. He thought, "If I could treat that girl like I do to Su Yeyue now in my previous life, how could she be so sad?

Why wasn't I aware of the importance of being a real man? How come I didn't understand a man's responsibility?

It turns out the Xiao Monarch is such a weak man.]

He was lost in thoughts and he felt a bit dizzy. He casually waved his hands and the black glow showed up again. Two needles were back in his hands. He had to give up hiding the secret of the needles.

Everybody clearly saw the needles in his hands this time.

Ye Xiao's weapons were no more mysterious now, yet the threat of them were still there. And it became even more threatening.

People who had been rushing to him suddenly held their breaths when they saw the needles. They stared at Ye Xiao who seemed to be at death's doors with the killing black glow in his hands. Their eyes were full of complex expressions.

"Come on! All of you." Ye Xiao smiled, "Let me kill some more before I go to hell."

...

Chapter 191: Live Together, Die Together

The assassins heard what Ye Xiao said and turned furious. They burst with fury and the Sky Origin Stage cultivators shouted, "Brothers let's go put him to death!"

They all rushed over to Ye Xiao at the same time while shouting.

Ye Xiao smiled and used all the energy he had left to instantly struck eighteen needles at the same time!

Simultaneously, three knives that had been hidden in his hair and feet were prepared to fly out!

That was his last strike.

This battle was an extremely cruel incident to him. Ye Xiao actually didn't have the time to swallow any supreme dan beads. After the last strike, Ye Xiao understood that his life was going to end!

However, at this moment, everybody suddenly stopped.

...

Because an accident happened to them.

It was happened out of nothing!

"Stop!"

It was an extremely strident voice, a girl's scream.

It was a voice that was full of terrors and worries, as though if she came a tiny bit later, she would lose the most important thing in her whole life!

Everybody was shocked.

Ye Xiao was stunned too.

They all looked to the direction where the scream came from.

They only saw a girl in unkempt white dress with her dark hair fluttering in the air. She had a pretty face that was covered by her tears. She was indeed Su Yeyue. She was trying her best to run close to Ye Xiao while gasping, like she was going to fall down at any second!

She could barely breath while gasping. When she saw Ye Xiao standing straight there, she rushed forward to him with an energy which nobody knew where she got!

It was out of everyone's expectation.

Those men who had been chasing her earlier were coming back

from another direction though. Su Yeyue wasn't from where she was pushed out.

Ye Xiao was stunned looking at the running beauty. His heart was touched.

When he pushed Su Yeyue away, he had used a huge power on it. He just wanted Su Yeyue to straightly fly out and take a turn down when she passed a mountain. The destination of the push was the cave where he killed Gu Jinlong!

As long as Su Yeyue got to that cave, she could be able to go anywhere she wanted because the cave was connected to many places.

However, she didn't run away. Instead, she found a way back to him.

"You fool!" Ye Xiao's eyes were blurry and he shouted angrily!

Su Yeyue kept running fast. There was only one man in her sight. She just ignored all the dangerous men around her. She actually just showed Ye Xiao a soft eye contact when she heard what Ye Xiao shouted.

At the moment, the enemies shockingly looked at the crazy girl and couldn't help giving a path to her.

- Puff! -

She rushed into Ye Xiao's arms and held him tight.

She finally felt relieved when she heard the breath of Ye Xiao. And then she started to cry like she was letting out the endless grief in her heart!

Ye Xiao could only sigh.

He couldn't tell how he was feeling at the moment.

"Why did you come back... Now we are both in their hands." Ye Xiao smiled bitterly.

He could only give her a bitter smile. There should have been one of them surviving this. If Ye Xiao chose to give up on her and escaped alone, he would have a ninety percent chance, yet he chose to save the girl and be willing to die. As he had planned, she should have been in a safe place now, yet she actually returned because she couldn't let go of Ye Xiao. They had different plans, yet they were all doing the same stupid thing. That was to get themselves killed. They were truly two fools in love!

"We are both going to die?" She finally realized how severe the situation was. She rolled her eyeballs anxiously. And then she humphed and irritatingly said, "I just want to die by your side!"

"But the problem is not about dying by my side or not..." Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. He endured the pain on his body that came from all

his organs, and he smiled, "Now you turn yourself into their hands... It may get your father killed. They are planning to kidnap you to threaten your father..."

"What?! I just forgot about that..." Su Yeyue spoke anxiously and looked at Ye Xiao sentimentally. She asked, "What should we do then?... I don't want you to die!"

Ye Xiao felt touched with a complex feeling at the moment.

When he made a full effort to save Su Yeyue, he surely did it for love, but it was also because he had androcentrism. Yet when Su Yeyue came back to him, she just didn't want him to die!

Maybe she was stupid doing that, but it was so moving!

Looking at the silly girl in front of him, Ye Xiao felt like holding her in arms and kissing her heavily.

[I have prepared to spend my life to get her out of this.

I did. And I thought my death would have its value after all.

Yet she actually just came back...

That made all my sacrifices wasted. Now my efforts mean nothing.

What she did may even have a great impact to the war in the south. If she ends up in these men's hands, it will be a huge strike to Prince Hua-Yang.

But can I blame her?

Can I?]

Ye Xiao realized he couldn't blame her at all.

He understood that she only came back because she love him so much. That was why she came back to this death trap.

How could he blame her pure love?

He could only look at her face filled with tears and sigh.

[Fine. Let's die together.]

"Ah. They turn out to be a pair of lovers. No wonder he has been fighting so desperately. They actually gave up the chances to live and embrace the death." A big man with muscles on his face sneered, "Look how I strike the couple apart!"

"Wait!" Su Yeyue suddenly got off Ye Xiao and wiped her tears. She turned to the enemies and said, "Aren't you here for me? You can have me! But you have to let him go!"

"Let him go?!" Some of them laughed, "He has killed so many of our men. What makes you think that we will just let him go under your words? You two are both in our hands. Do you think you can just fly out of this?"

Su Yeyue stared at that man for a while and then spoke while gritting with her teeth, "You want to capture me and threaten my father. What makes you think you can still threaten my father with my dead body? If I die now, your plan will fail. And it will instead arouse the anger of my father. If I go with you willingly, it will be a different thing. I am sure you understand the rule."

She was actually quite clear in her mind. She continued slowly, "As long you let him leave, I will go with you! And I will never try to kill myself! I promise!"

A man sneered, "You are truly in a hot relationship. A daughter is always the useless one. You actually give up on your father's life for a man you love. Ha ha ha ha! Look what a good daughter Prince Hua-Yang has!"

Su Yeyue gritted with her teeth and said nothing. In fact, she was thinking, [As long as Xiao Xiao is gone, I will kill myself immediately! How will I let you threaten my father like that? I won't keep any bullshit promise in front of you bunch of pricks!]

"Cut the bullshit!" The man who was probably the head of them humphed and said, "Tie her up and cut that guy into pieces!"

They didn't accept her suggestion eventually.

It was too dangerous for them to let go of Ye Xiao.

They knew they might fail to make it back home if Ye Xiao was still alive... Besides, an enemy that was strong like that would remain a huge threat to them all their lives!

- SHOOT! - A sword flew over like lightning.

It was going to hit Ye Xiao's chest!

Ye Xiao saw the killing move was close and smiled bitterly. Looking at the sword getting closer and closer to his chest, he was actually too exhausted to even step aside.

When he saw Su Yeyue was running back to him, he suddenly released the only power that he had been holding. He was now forcibly standing straight on the floor. Surely, he was unable to dodge the attack again.

- Shring! - Su Yeyue drew out her sword and knocked the flying sword. The next moment, her longsword was broken into two pieces and her hand was bleeding. The flying sword was still on its way fiercely to Ye Xiao's chest!

Su Yeyue made a extreme scream and jumped over shouting, "I am your wife today!"

Her weak body actually stopped in front of Ye Xiao. She was rushing to the flying sword.

Everybody was shocked.

They never thought that this girl was so staunch that she would rather sacrifice her own life to save her beloved one!

She knew it won't stop the sword from getting through Ye Xiao's chest, yet she just wanted to die before Ye Xiao. It really astonished everyone there!

Ye Xiao looked at Su Yeyue's slim body between himself and the flying sword with his blurry eyes. He showed a bitter smile. He didn't say anything to stop her.

His heart was in great pain.

[Why did I always fail to take my responsibilities?

Why?]

Although Su Yeyue might die in front of him, it was still better if she was captured to threaten Prince Hua-Yang. She would end up dead after Hua-Yang fell after all. However, Ye Xiao felt pain in his heart with that shame and failure. That was memorable.

[Why am I so useless? If I am stronger, I can solve this problem!

If I am strong enough, how would she die in front of me!]

...

Chapter 192: I Am Pissed

That sword attack was like a howling thunder. The one who made the attack must have extremely hated Ye Xiao. The sword was thrown out in a huge strength. Even though it would hit Su Yeyue first, it would still get through her and hit Ye Xiao's heart.

Ye Xiao saw it and knew it.

[Then we are truly going to die together today.

You little silly girl...

Why do you keep doing such useless but moving things?

You knew it was useless to come back, yet you still came back to die. You knew it was useless to stand in front of me, yet you just did it. Are you just trying to die before me...

You silly girl.]

Tears were held in his eyes.

Thinking about this silly girl, he felt warm inside his heart.

What Su-Ye Yue said resounded inside his mind.

"Today I am your wife!"

A couple lived together, died together.

Ye Xiao understood what she wanted.

While the sword was about to hit Su Yeyue's chest, three of the Sky Origin Stage cultivators jumped over to hurriedly catch the sword to save the girl. Yet they were too late.

Su Yeyue was about to die and that made those men feel regret.

They really couldn't expect such an accident to happen while they were controlling the whole situation.

Things seemed to be unavoidable.

Yet... was it really unavoidable?

There was always no absolute in the world.

At the moment, a voice sounded in a hurry. "Hold!"

- Boom! -

The space and the world... they actually froze.

Even the wind seemed to stop blowing in the sky.

All the people, everything were frozen at where they were a moment earlier.

So was the mountain.

So was the sky.

So was the clouds and the wind.

And so was the sword.

That sword, which had been fiercely flying fast in the air, actually stayed where it was in the air in front of Su Yeyue's chest. It just stopped in the air.

The next moment, a clean and pale hand suddenly reached out. The whole world couldn't even move a bit, except this hand.

The hand grabbed the sword and swung it tightly. The sword then became pieces and fell to the ground.

People were all staying still, yet they were still able to see things.

So they saw what happened with that sword.

It might be normal for someone powerful to destroy a flying sword in the air. Yet this was rather shocking and terrifying.

The next moment, a voice sounded with relief, "I have worked so hard to find myself a disciple. You nearly got her killed in front of me... How dare you fools. How dare you."

The voice sounded serious, yet it was also soft and gentle.

It was a lady's voice.

It was actually a lady who made such a shocking scene?

The next moment, in the sky, there was like a glass board cracking into pieces. In fact, the space was like a breaking glass.

They could see a black fissure appear in the space all of a sudden. And then it returned to normal as if nothing had happened.

And then they found themselves able to move again.

They were all shocked and terrified, including Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao looked forward being extremely shocked.

He saw a woman casually walking over to Su Yeyue from

nowhere.

She was like opening a door curtain and walking out of a house to embrace the nature. She didn't look like any vulgar person at all.

Those assassins could tell that she was an extremely superior cultivator, yet they didn't know how strong she was.

Ye Xiao knew it.

Ye Xiao knew that even in his most perfect condition during his previous life, he could never be as strong as that woman.

He was far from it. He was totally not a match to her.

In fact, she was far more than the ninth level of the Dao Origin Stage.

In other words, she was over the limit of the cultivation levels in the Qing-Yun Realm to a great extent.

Ye Xiao was astonished, [Is this woman... from the Grand World?]

After the woman showed up, the ice mountain actually turned warm as though the spring came to the place and all flowers were blooming.

However, the mountain was still covered by boundless ice. It was still a freezing world, yet it felt warm somehow.

There were colorful clouds gathering in the sky.

The woman was showing a vigor like she was the dominator of the whole world.

Under her feet, there was a piece of colorful cloud supporting her.

Although she was standing right there, she seemed to be in another world. Even the air of this world couldn't touch her skin.

[Who is this woman?

Who on earth can be so vigorous?]

Ye Xiao kept thinking about it, yet he couldn't think of anyone at all. He felt it difficult to truly understand it.

He had never experienced anything from the Grand World, that was the reason why he couldn't understand anything about the woman. He just knew a bit about the existence of the Grand World and that was all.

"Who are you?" A Sky Origin Stage cultivator of the assassins asked with fear and carefulness, "Why are you stepping into our

business?"

The woman didn't respond. She just kept glancing at Su Yeyue from her feet to her head; she was scrutinizing her and she didn't miss any details.

Su Yeyue was scared being watched, so she leaned to Ye Xiao and fearfully spoke, "Who... Who are you? What do you want?"

After a while, the woman finally showed an expression like 'I am satisfied' and said, "Good girl. You value love and relations. You have a pure heart and ingenuous spirit. You are smart and beautiful... You are indeed the one I need."

Ye Xiao coughed and said, "Who are you? What do you want from my fiancée?"

"She is your fiancée?" The woman frowned and glanced at Ye Xiao.

The woman had been ignoring those assassins as well as Ye Xiao. If Ye Xiao didn't say the word "fiancée", she wouldn't even glance at Ye Xiao.

It was only a glance, yet Ye Xiao felt a strong sense of crisis. He tried to stay calm and said, "So she is. What?"

The woman smiled blandly, "If you don't want to die young, I suggest you should take your time and find another one. You don't deserve her."

Su Yeyue heard that and suddenly forgot about her fear. She said angrily, "Nonsense! I am going to be his wife!"

The woman shook her head with disappointment like she was looking at an ignorant kid. She spoke gently, "You don't understand yet. He doesn't deserve you. He is far from qualified."

She lightly waved her hand, pointed towards the assassins and asked, "Are they all your enemies?"

Su Yeyue answered angrily, "They are all bad people. They can't defeat my father, so they use such dirty scheme to capture me and threaten my father."

"Hmm." The woman said, "They are the most disgusting kind of people. I hate such people the most in my life."

She paused for a while and continued, "Since so, let your master clean them up for you. Take it as a small gift from me to commemorate our first meeting."

Su Yeyue asked confusedly, "Master? What master?"

The woman smiled softly and said, "Your master is me. I am your master."

Su Yeyue was totally confused, and she felt shocked, [How come

you become my master? Since when do I have a master? Why can't I remember anything?]

A Sky Origin Stage cultivator said angrily, "Who are you? Do you even know who we are? You are making yourself a big trouble messing with this. Let me tell you. We are from the House of Chaotic S..."

The woman finally showed emotion and she frowned. She said blandly, "I really haven't thought that there is actually anyone in this world who dares to threaten me... Heh, heh... That is rare."

And then she casually waved her pale hand without even turning her head to the assassins.

It seemed the whole space was frozen again.

Yet this time, not everyone was frozen.

Ye Xiao and Su Yeyue were both fine. They could still move themselves. Those assassins were all locked in space.

They just stood there and couldn't move a bit. They couldn't even blink.

The woman looked at Su Yeyue and spoke gently, "Good girl. Don't be afraid. Close your eyes. You shouldn't see such a bloody scene."

Su Yeyue was confused and said, "What?"

The woman shook her head and smiled. She reached her hand and spoke softly, "Smash."

- Pah! - The space broke again.

Yet this time, it was breaking with all those people who were locked.

All the assassins fell down when the space broke. They were all dead bodies without any bones...

They were like some piles of meat spreading slowly on the ground. It only took a blink of an eye and they instantly became piles of crushed meat from standing men.

Over eighty people were now like over eighty red futons which were silently spread on the ground.

...

Chapter 193: The Nine Creating Dan Is Far from Enough!

The next moment, blood was floating on the floor. The flesh and blood of those men were gathering like converging streams. The blood was like a red river running down along the mountain.

Well... as for those men...

Ahem... They were long gone...

"Ah!"

Su Yeyue screamed out in panic. She looked at the woman like looking at a ghost. She started to tremble. Her eyes were full of fear and she said, "You... Oh my god..."

The woman said fondly, "Oh good girl. Are you scared? I told you not to watch. You will always do wrong if you don't listen to your master. Now you understand it!"

Su Yeyue was trembling. Her teeth were shaking and making sounds. She said, "That... What was it? How... How did all those lively men suddenly disappear..."

She turned to Ye Xiao and looked at him. Apparently, she wanted to get the answer from Ye Xiao. Yet surprisingly, she found him covered by blood with a pale face. He was shaking like he would

fall down at any second. He seemed too weak to stand.

She screamed and said, "Xiao-Xiao! What happened?" And then she stepped forward and held him.

The woman glanced at Ye Xiao and said, "He is dying because of the heavy wounds on him."

Su Yeyue was holding Ye Xiao as she burst into tears as soon as the words of the woman echoed in her ears. She shouted, "No! I don't want you to die! Xiao-Xiao please, you haven't married me yet... Woo, woo, woo..."

The woman stood behind Su Yeyue and stared at Ye Xiao.

The expression in her eyes was changing.

It was first filled with killing intent before it suddenly became helplessness.

Ye Xiao looked at her quietly. His eyes were calm.

"I am going to take her with me as my disciple. What's your thought?" The woman looked at Ye Xiao and asked.

Ye Xiao frowned and said, "With your capability, it is surely a good thing for her that you will take her as your disciple."

The woman frowned and said, "Oh really? You think so too?"

Ye Xiao surely thought so. He said that with his full heart.

The woman was stronger than what Ye Xiao could ever imagine! Since such a world-shocking superior cultivator had chosen Su Yeyue as her disciple, it was no doubt that it was Su Yeyue's good fortune!

Ye Xiao believed that if Su Yeyue missed this chance, she would lose the most important opportunity in her life!

"But she is the one who decide." Ye Xiao said.

The woman could sense that Ye Xiao was telling his true feelings. Those were some words from deep inside his heart!

He could never lie in front of her. Not with her sharp sensations.

The woman said lightly, "I have never expected that you can have such profound thoughts. Now you became not so difficult to look at."

She turned to Su Yeyue and said, "Girl, do you want to come with me?"

Su Yeyue kept holding Ye Xiao while taking care of his wounds. She actually ignored the question from the woman as if she was

deaf.

She actually didn't hear it at all.

The woman shook her head and waved her hand. Her sleeve was like a mass of colorful clouds. And then a bright colorful light appeared and got into Ye Xiao's mouth.

Ye Xiao suddenly felt a boiling heat was running over his body from his dantian.

Within an instant, the pain on his body suddenly disappeared.

All his wounds vanished.

His body stopped bleeding, and his skin reverted back to normal!

It was only within an instant. He looked exactly like a healthy man.

[What was that? That is marvelous!]

Ye Xiao could feel that what the woman gave him was much more powerful than all his supreme dan beads. That was more like a real world-shocking supreme dan bead compared to his dan beads!

He also felt that whatever was inside his body had maintained most of its efficacy there after recovering his body. If that efficacy afflicted him at the same time, it could easily explode his body into a hundred pieces!

However, it naturally remained inside his body silently.

It just hid inside somewhere in his dantian.

Ye Xiao knew that the next time he would suffer any fatal damage, it would take effect again.

He wasn't sure how many times more it would work though.

It would work for at least another three to five times.

"Since my girl is deeply in love with you and you have used your life to protect her..." The woman spoke blandly, "I guess I can give you this Nine Creating Dan Bead. Take it as a... compensation to you."

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[Nine Creating Dan!]

He had actually never heard of such a dan!

It must be something extraordinary!

Ye Xiao knew that the woman didn't do it for him; she was doing it for Su Yeyue. Yet just because of Su Yeyue, the woman actually gave him such a precious thing.

That was unbelievable!

It was really hard to compare her to anyone else he knew.

Ye Xiao understood that it always depended on whether it was precious or not.

For Ye Xiao, it might be some precious supreme dan bead, yet for that woman, maybe it was just something trivial.

It was just like the Pei-Yuan dan. For the normal people in the Land of Han-Yang, it was some magical dan, yet for the cultivators, it was just one kind of normal dan, and for those in the Qing-Yun Realm, it was merely garbage.

He and the woman were just like the normal people and the people in the Qing-Yun Realm.

It was always difficult to compare a person with another!

Knowing that Ye Xiao's body was recovering, the woman spoke blandly, "This dan bead can save you eight times in your whole life.

It will also improve your natural condition and let your cultivation become smoother and brighter... If you work hard, you can become a legend in this land, and perhaps you can even become a dominator in a higher realm. I will take your fiancée away. That must hurt you. This dan bead should be enough to make it up to you."

The last thing she said was like a needle stabbing his ears.

She made her voice become like a string to keep Su Yeyue from hearing it.

She was saying it to Ye Xiao alone.

Ye Xiao shook his head and said blandly, "Make up for me? That is far from enough."

The woman was surprised and her face turned cold. She said, "Not enough? Listen, kid. You shouldn't be so greedy."

Ye Xiao spoke calmly, "I am not being greedy. First, I have never asked anything from you, so this is barely a compensation. Second, you said that while standing in a higher position, so you think it is enough for me. Imagine if I kill your husband and give you such a compensation, will it be enough for you?"

The woman said coldly, "You are far from qualified to say such words to me."

Ye Xiao said blandly, "And what makes you think you should say that to me?"

The woman's face turned colder and colder.

Su Yeyue was anxious and she stood in front of Ye Xiao. She said stuttering, "Wh... What... What do you want?"

The woman looked at Su Yeyue and smiled. She said, "That is some harsh words, but you are right. However, even after you cultivate a million more years, you will still be unable to kill my husband."

Ye Xiao smiled lightly, "There is nothing absolute. Don't make it too extreme when you are talking or doing something."

The woman smiled and actually stopped talking.

Ye Xiao was fully recovered. The woman didn't feel surprised at all, it was like everything was under her control. She wanted to say something, but then she just frowned. It seemed she couldn't stand the smell of the blood on the mountain. She casually waved her hand and a wild wind blew away. The whole mountain suddenly became clean.

And then Ye Xiao and Su Yeyue found they were already on the top of this mountain with that woman.

The clouds were floating beside them. They could barely see the

view behind!

Su Yeyue and even Ye Xiao didn't know how and when the woman moved them to such position.

[This woman truly has the power to move the mountain and fill the sea. She can easily control the winds and clouds in the world.] Ye Xiao was once again astonished.

He had been dreaming about having such power in his previous life. He had been working on it for a whole life, yet he couldn't even get close to it!

"Sit down." The woman waved his hand and all the rocks in their sights disappeared. - Puff! - A flat stage showed up.

On the stage, there was a white jade tea table and three white jade chairs. One of the chairs was on one side of the table while two were on the opposite.

Su Yeyue grabbed Ye Xiao's sleeve and didn't dare to let go. She sat down slowly in a panic. Thinking about the bloody cruel scene that happened earlier, she felt like puking.

The woman sat opposite to them. Her eyes kept glancing at Su Yeyue.

In her eyes, there were surprise, questions, doubts and confusion.

...

Chapter 194: I Am Just A Woman!

“What is your name, girl?” The woman asked.

“I am Su Yeyue.” Su Yeyue held Ye Xiao’s hand tightly and answered with a quivering voice. And then she said, “Thank you for saving Xiao-Xiao.”

“Su Yeyue. That is a good name. [As the night resuscitates, there shines the moon.](#)” The woman praised.

She just acted like she didn’t hear the gratitude about saving Ye Xiao from the girl.

Maybe Ye Xiao just meant nothing to her, so she was indifferent.

“Girl, have you been through anything special recently?” The woman asked softly.

She had been looking for a girl with the Phoenix Body for dozens of thousands of years, yet she just couldn’t find one.

She actually stopped searching within the recent thousands of years, because she was already strong enough to sense all the realms as her cultivation improved.

If anyone with a Phoenix Body showed up, she would know it. She didn’t even need to look for that person by spending a lot of

manpower and resources.

Such body was always granted by the gods. It was hardly one out of thousands of billions of people. She knew she wouldn't simply find that person.

Only a girl could be born with the Phoenix Body. It was hardly possible to get such a body posteriorly.

However, she was shocked this time.

The girl was already about sixteen years old, yet she actually sensed her just recently.

What went wrong?

There must be something strange about it.

“Special thing? I don't think so.” Su Yeyue blinked confusedly.

“Now as I see you, I am sure you were not a girl with Phoenix Body at the beginning.” The woman frowned and said, “But your body actually became a Phoenix Body in the last several months. That is an extremely powerful transformation... If there has been nothing special that happened to you, how could it be?”

“Oh? If there's something, it may be the supreme dan bead I took a few days ago.” Su Yeyue said, “Is it the reason?”

“A supreme dan bead?” The woman was in high spirits as she said, “What is that dan bead? What is it for? How could it possibly change you like this?”

“Supreme dan bead is not a kind of dan bead. What I had was actually... Pei-Yuan Dan...” Su Yeyue said.

“Pei-Yuan Dan...” The woman nearly rolled up the whites of her eyes.

[If such a low-class dan could actually turn a girl’s body into the Phoenix Body... Then the world must be crazy.]

If such words didn’t come out from Su Yeyue’s mouth, or if Su Yeyue wasn’t the girl with the Phoenix Body, the woman would have slapped her face and thought, [How dare you fool me like that? Pei-Yuan Dan?!]

Ye Xiao was surprised.

[She didn’t have the Phoenix Body, but her body transformed into a Phoenix Body recently.

That woman couldn’t sense it, but she can now...

What is going on?

What does the change mean?

It is apparently not caused by the supreme dan bead.

But the girl truly hasn't had anything special except taking a supreme Pei-Yuan Dan bead...]

Thinking of that, Ye Xiao suddenly remember something. When he told Su Yeyue all the truth about his illness, she completely collapsed because she was too emotional and she had been too worried for a long time.

In order to wake her up as soon as possible, Ye Xiao used the Primordial Purple Qi in the space to clear her Jing and Mai.

Because he had used the Primordial Purple Qi, that egg had flown up like it was unhappy about it.

Ye Xiao just ignored it. [My purple qi, my call.] So he just did what he wanted and cleared the girl's entire Jing and Mai system.

The egg actually shook and it had never happened before. A mass of dark yellow glow was emitted from the egg, like it was stopping the Primordial Purple Qi from going away.

Ye Xiao focused on treating Su Yeyue, so he didn't care about the egg. With full efforts, finally, some Primordial Purple Qi entered Su Yeyue's Jing and Mai as well as that yellow glow...

After that, the egg remained silent.

It seemed it was depressed, disappointed and unhappy... like it had been badly hurt.

Su Yeyue knew nothing about all this, because she was in a coma when it happened.

[Is it how she got the Phoenix Body?] Ye Xiao imagined.

The woman was still looking at Su Yeyue with confusion.

[How come it just looks like a natural born Phoenix Body if it was formed recently? It was even better than a natural one. But why couldn't I sense it all these times?] She frowned and thought, [It is so strange.]

She finally couldn't help herself, so she grabbed Su Yeyue's arm and poured a stream of pure spiritual power into her Jing and Mai to check it.

And then the woman made a scream.

Her face turned red.

She hadn't thought that she would act so rude, and she would actually meet such a situation.

She found that Su Yeyue's Phoenix Body was even purer than herself.

There seemed to be some ancient power inside her body.

The woman was finally shocked.

She suddenly remembered something her master used to say when she had just begun to cultivate the martial art.

“The Dancing Phoenix Art is a unique and outstanding martial art... It is something that no human being can create. It belongs only to the universe.”

“There has been a few martial arts in the history that could be as harmonious as the Dancing Phoenix Art... In fact, our Phoenix Bodies are actually nothing more than ordinary bodies with some special gifts. We are actually far from the real Phoenix Body. Although we know that it is possible to develop our martial art into a higher stage, yet... none of us can do it. Only someone with the real Phoenix Body that was made by the Primordial Pure Qi... could cultivate the Dancing Phoenix Art to the highest level — Phoenix In Nine Heavens.”

She remembered that her master always sighed after saying all those words.

Afterwards, she had achieved great success and became the

strongest among all the cultivators who cultivated such martial art. That was when she understood what her master truly meant. It was apparently a special martial art that could lead the cultivator to the grand achievement of the universe...

Yet because of the limit of the body, all cultivators could only sigh; they couldn't do anything to achieve that destination.

That feeling made people feel frustrated.

However, the woman was now staring at Su Yeyue like she had found a miracle.

Because...

Su Yeyue was the one who had the grand Phoenix Body, the Primordial Pure Qi and the natural born Mai.

Su Yeyue said in a panic, "What... Wha... What are you screaming for?"

The woman took a deep breath in and said, "Su Yeyue, Yue-Er, you have to be my disciple."

Su Yeyue looked at her bright eyes and felt scared somehow. She stepped back a bit and said, "I... I don't..."

The woman interrupted her immediately and said, "Girl! As long

as you swear to follow me, I will help you become the most powerful person under and above the sky.

And I can bring you life that never ends and the glory that never falls.

I can give you...”

The woman said many benefits, all kinds of benefits. They were all truly attractive. The woman was confident that nobody could resist it. She thought she was surely going to have Su Yeyue.

However, Su Yeyue suddenly asked, “Well then... What about him?”

She looked at Ye Xiao.

The woman didn’t even turn to Ye Xiao and just said casually, “He is not included. He is too weak. He is far from qualified.”

Su Yeyue made a quick reaction. She shook her head, “I am not going with you.”

The woman was stunned, “What? What did you say? Did you just say... You are not coming? Do you even know what you are talking about? Do you know what you are giving up by saying no to me? That is the most glorious, most powerful...”

Su Yeyue lowered her head and said, “In fact, all those things mean nothing to me. I am just a woman, like my mother. Since I was a kid, my mother started to tell me that the most important thing in a woman’s life is to find someone who cares and love myself... I should stay with him for all my life. We should have a baby. We should work together. We should fight together. We should grow old together... When we are old enough and couldn’t even stand up, we stay in the chairs and enjoy the pleasure brought by our grandchildren and the caring brought by our sons and daughters...”

“My mother said it was all what a woman should long for, and it would be enough to have such things... All the other glorious things are truly not important. We are just women.”

Su Yeyue talked slowly.

When she was talking, she didn’t really understand some of the words she said. That was why she showed confusion when she was talking. However, she was truly looking forward such a life.

“I am just a woman...”

The woman was shocked.

Such simple statement from the girl actually boiled the blood in her heart.

[What a simple wish.

I am also a woman.

I wish to have such kind of life myself.

But how could I?

Maybe I can. But I don't want it!]

...

Su Yeyue(苏夜月). Su is a character in Su Xing(苏醒) that means resuscitate. Ye(夜) means night. Yue(月) means moon.

Chapter 195: It's All About Strength!

“In this world, women are in such a low position.” The woman looked at the white clouds in the sky and asked lightly, “Men can go drink and have fun while women cannot. Men can hold several lovers in arms while women cannot. Men can marry several ones while woman cannot. Men can do whatever they want while women would be accused for doing those they are not supposed to do... The world is so unfair. Why should we follow those rules?”

Why can't we live in colorful lives?

I can't take it. Can... Can you?”

The woman asked.

She seemed to ask Su Yeyue, but also asking herself and more like asking the whole world.

Su Yeyue gave another simple answer. She said lightly, “We are just women. Why do we push ourselves so hard?”

It was simple, but it seemed to be powerful enough.

The woman heard her and took another deep breath. She felt like saying something, yet she felt it was useless and meaningless to say it.

“The world is indeed unfair to women. I can’t deny it.” Su Yeyue raised her head, looking at the woman with her clear eyes, “However, even though you can shock the whole world by only waving your hand, what exactly can you change?”

The woman was shocked and stayed silent.

“You have marvelous cultivation capability. You can scare the whole world and look down upon all living things. So what? Did you break the constraint on women?” Su Yeyue asked.

The woman lowered her head for the first time in her life. She was a bit in sorrow and she said, “No.”

Su Yeyue proudly said, “I don’t have any of those that you promised me, but I have him on my side. Isn’t it enough?”

The woman was quiet for a while and then said, “That’s right. You have him. But... he can only sacrifice his life once for you. How is that enough? If I didn’t come earlier, he would be dead. Would you not lose him?”

This time, Su Yeyue was quiet.

Her face showed pain in heart. She held Ye Xiao’s hand tightly under the table.

She was holding it so hard that Ye Xiao actually felt a bit painful.

“I understand your thoughts. I agree with you. There must be something good to be my disciple. If you learn the whole set of the world-shocking marvelous martial art, you can kill all the enemies. You can defeat them, kill them and control them. Only when you are strong enough can you protect the happy life you wished for and your beloved ones!”

The woman said lightly, “It has nothing to do with whether you are or not a woman. It is all about... When we want to protect something or to care for something, we have to keep it from being snatched. Fame, position, property, love, life... all of it.

Everything you want depends on your strength, isn't it?

If you are weak and couldn't protect anything, even though you can have what you want right now, you may lose all of them at the next moment.

The ordinary people, they work for money, for wealth! That is their strength. Only with wealth can they live better, longer and happier.

But when they don't need to worry about money and get used to being rich people, they keep chasing other things like immortality; the power that overwhelm others. They also need something to help them get what they want — strength!

Only when you have enough strength can you have anything you want! Because you are weak, then you are even unable to live as an

ordinary person. There will be somebody stronger than you destroying whatever you have built at any time!”

She pointed at Ye Xiao, “A simple example. Let’s suggest that he isn’t strong enough when he marries you, a pretty girl. There are many randy men in the world. He may not be one of them, so he never go out for girls and you are satisfied about it. However, there will be someone who wants to touch you, but your man doesn’t have the power to protect you. What will you do?

That is why strength matters!

The only thing that fits all the realms is merely this — strength!

Weak parents cannot afford raising their children; weak husbands fail to protect their pretty wives; weak sons can only watch their fathers get killed by somebody or some illnesses. They just cannot do anything to help them!

But if they are strong enough, they become capable! All those miserable things won’t happen! They can protect whatever and whoever they love.

Power means all!”

The woman spoke solemnly, “That, is what I am offering you! Strength! Power! Overwhelming power!

Be my disciple and you can have that power!

If you don't come with me and give up on this opportunity, you will lose the only chance to learn the wonderful martial art from me. After that, you and him, you are going to encounter those things over and over again! You are lucky today that you have been saved by me. Next time, you won't be so lucky. You will die! Maybe you die first; maybe he do. Or maybe you will both die!

That is the reality!"

The woman fondly looked at Su Yeyue, "Girl, I don't want to force you. Take your time and think about it carefully. I am waiting for your answer!"

Su Yeyue was silent. Her face showed that she was hesitating. Apparently, what the woman said actually touched her!

Thinking about her father in the south, thinking about how they got assassinated all of a sudden and nearly died; thinking about how Ye Xiao was covered by blood and dying, she felt terrified.

[That's true. If I am strong enough, I can help father bring peace to the south and the country will be flourishing! If I am strong enough, I will fear no assassinations! If I am strong enough, I won't need Xiao-Xiao to protect me, and I may be able to protect him!]

It was truly attractive to her. Even a girl like her couldn't resist such a thing!

The woman's eyes turned brighter and brighter. She noticed the girl's thoughts. She believed she was going to nail it!

At the moment, Ye Xiao spoke, "Yeyue, she is right. However, there is one thing that nobody can change. In this world, not everyone can have that strength."

The woman sneered, "You are nothing but [a frog hiding deep in a well](#). Your point is merely built under your limited experience about the world. Let me tell you something. Every living person in the world has his own strength! No matter what thing he is capable of, what cultivation level he is in, he has it!"

Ye Xiao was silent for a while and said, "That is a profound view. It is true that no matter in which realm, whoever is able to live has his own strength!"

Ye Xiao felt that he was enlightened by those words.

He had understood the word "strength" in a deeper range.

That was the difference between two people, one of which was experienced enough, while the other was not.

Su Yeyue couldn't make the decision, so she turned to Ye Xiao for help.

Ye Xiao sighed in his mind and knew that she was moved by that woman. Otherwise, she wouldn't turn for help. In fact, if such a thing happened on Ye Xiao, he could barely make a decision immediately. He stayed quiet and then asked that woman, "We know how kind you are for us. We are grateful. But we need to know who you are and where you are from. If she decides to follow you, after how long can she return? Where can I find her when she is gone?"

The woman was surprised. She looked at Ye Xiao and said slowly with a soft tone, "You are quite a surprising lad. I shouldn't tell you anything about myself. But I will break the rule for you today. My name is... Meng Huaqing. Meng Huaqing (梦怀卿), Meng as dream, Huai as embrace and Qing as good person.

Where I am from is the Human Realm Above Heavens. It is a big realm that is much higher than your world."

She looked at Ye Xiao, "I understand that you would like to help her with such achievement, yet you are also a bit unwilling, because you don't want to lose the chance to meet her again. It is hard for a man to cherish love as such. That's why I can't lie to you. After she leaves, you two will barely have the chance to meet again. You are most likely never going to meet again.

In fact, you may never hear the words 'Human Realm Above Heavens' ever again. You are never going to find it!"

She looked at Ye Xiao's eyes and said, "I have told you everything. Do you still agree that she should come with me?"

Ye Xiao slowly nodded when he heard the woman. He said, “I agree!”

His eyes were full of constancy and he said, “I don’t care if you believe me or not. I know you are from somewhere special. I know it is a precious opportunity for her to go with you.”

He continued with a gentle tone, “I know that, maybe in the whole history of the billions of realms in the universe, she is the only sixteen years old girl who has this opportunity.

I don’t want her to give up such an opportunity. If I keep her with me, I am ruining her bright future. How can I live with that guilt?

In fact, I agree that she go with you. I am ready to be separated from her. I just can’t believe that I can’t find her again.”

The woman looked at Ye Xiao with a new attitude. She smiled and said, “You can say the phrase ‘billions of realms’. That means you are not a simple man. I never thought I would make wrong judgements on people.”

...

A frog in a well(井底之蛙) means a person with a limited outlook.

Chapter 196: Marriage and Separation

Ye Xiao smiled, "There is truly no absolute in the world. I believe I can find it."

"Maybe." The woman didn't deny it.

"I..." Su Yeyue twitched her lips and suddenly burst into tears, "I know you both are talking about the truth, but I don't want to leave you, leave my parents. Do I really have to go..."

"We are all making choices all the time in our lives. When you get something, you always lose. It is the same around." Ye Xiao spoke, "Especially in such a disturbed world, I really cannot protect you well with my present capability. There will be many assassinations and hunting like this against us in the future. This time, it is the House of Chaotic Storms. Next time, it will be some other forces... Those kingdoms that your father has fought against before will come and get you after all..."

When he said "really cannot protect you well", he felt strongly disgraced.

Just as the woman said, power mattered.

One could protect whatever and whoever he loved if he was powerful, but if he wasn't, he would eventually fail.

Ye Xiao clenched his fists hard.

"Let's get off the mountain."

The woman said understandingly, "I should inform your parents after all, that I want to take you as my disciple."

Su Yeyue sadly said yes. All the way to her house, she kept holding Ye Xiao's hand and didn't let go.

When they arrived at the Palace of Hua-Yang, Ye Xiao was dragged in too.

Princess Hua-Yang knew that such a marvelous woman wanted to take her daughter as her disciple. She felt happy, but at the same time, she was unwilling to separate from her.

She could tell that woman must be someone from the higher worlds. She thought that woman might be some goddess.

She reckoned that her daughter would surely have a bright future following such a woman.

However, when she knew that Su Yeyue would leave her and they might be unable to meet again for the rest of their lives, she felt extremely painful in her heart.

"We simply can't protect our children their whole lives. Sometimes, we just have to let go..." Princess Hua-Yang wept for a

long time and finally made her decision, "I won't be worried to let her follow you, sister."

The woman nodded, "Great."

"However, I have one thing that I have to say." Princess Hua-Yang said, "The two kids were engaged long ago. They grow up together. I think even though they can't really be together, they should at least finish the wedding before she go. It will fulfill mine and her father's wish."

The woman heard that and frowned. She spoke blandly, "Are you sure?"

"Yes." Princess Hua-Yang nodded.

Meng Huaiqing sighed and nodded without saying anything.

She knew that after the girl left with her, Ye Xiao would never have the chance to meet her again.

The "wedding" seemed to be meaningless to her.

In fact, the wedding could actually comfort Ye Xiao and Princess Hua-Yang, as well as calm the girl down.

It was a triple benefit thing.

Time seemed to have lost its use in the world of cultivations. The Dancing Phoenix Art was a marvelous martial art. It would at least take her a dozen years to achieve an acceptable success. It was normal that she needed to cultivate it for over a hundred years. That was why she would only have a few chances to meet any mortal people.

Meng Huaqing thought that after a few times of isolated cultivation, Ye Xiao might already have been through many lives. She simply didn't believe Ye Xiao could find her.

She thought of that, so she didn't deny the wedding.

The wedding started right away.

Su Yeyue was solemn. She cut off a stream of her own hair and cut some of Ye Xiao's, and then tied them together with a sincere heart. She said solemnly, "Xiao-Xiao, you must remember me. Life after life, I am and will be your wife forever."

Ye Xiao looked at the hair knot. He suddenly couldn't tell the feeling in his heart.

He never had such a kind of feeling in both his lives. He didn't know what to say at the moment.

The next moment, a fire was set. The hair knot was burned to ashes in the fire.

The ash was put into two cups of liquor. They raised the cup and drank them up.

After that, they became a couple. Their hearts will never be apart as if they were a whole.

After that drink, Su Yeyue tried to be calm and said, "Comfortable. Xiao-Xiao, you have to remember me..."

Ye Xiao nodded. He felt a heavy responsibility placed on his shoulders. He looked at her and felt his heart filled.

Only Meng Huaqing and him knew how hard it was for him to meet Su Yeyue again.

It was not the Qing-Yun Realm she was going; it was a realm even higher than that.

It was a realm that was one level higher or maybe more than one level higher than the Qing-Yun Realm.

Su Yeyue turned around and took off a jade from her neck. It was still warm. She put it on Ye Xiao's neck herself and then kept it inside Ye Xiao's clothes. She stepped back a bit and stared at Ye Xiao sentimentally. She said, "It will be at your side for me."

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[She has given me the jade that she is always wearing. That means a lot. What should I give her?]

He looked over the whole Boundless Space and couldn't find anything to give to Su Yeyue as a proper gift. He wanted to give her something that she could be proud of even in front of her master.

Ye Xiao had thought about giving the egg.

He surely didn't do it. He was just thinking about it. The egg in the Space actually flew up high. It was merely an egg, but it gave people a feeling like it was in panic.

It was funny, but also real.

Ye Xiao said, "I am not really giving you out. No need to panic!"

Then it was like the egg believed Ye Xiao's words and slowly got down to the jade plate.

All of a sudden, a stream of light showed up. A small piece of the Heavenly Crystal Marrow in the Sky Space actually broke out and fell to Ye Xiao. It was a piece as big as a goose egg.

Ye Xiao was shocked. He asked, "Don't tell me you can hear whatever I say all the time? You..."

The egg emitted an arrogant emotion. It didn't make any

reaction.

Ye Xiao was surprised, "Aren't you just an egg? How can you be so magical?"

The egg shook and emitted a furious emotion. And then it just stayed in the jade plate and never moved again.

Apparently, it was saying:

[Why can't I be magical? Are you looking down upon me? Piss off!]

...

"I have nothing special to give you as a gift." Ye Xiao said to Su Yeyue, "Here is a stone. Just take it."

And then he took out a piece of Heavenly Crystal Marrow.

As the Heavenly Crystal Marrow showed up, the whole room became clean and clear. Everybody around them felt comfortable at once.

That woman, Meng Huaqing, was sitting aside casually at the beginning. When Ye Xiao took out the Heavenly Crystal Marrow, she suddenly stood up and rushed to Ye Xiao, "Heavenly Crystal Marrow? Where did you get this?"

The others were surprised by her reaction.

Ye Xiao spoke innocently, "Are you talking about this? Well, a man casually gave it to me after I helped him with some business... It is a stone that can emit beautiful scent. It seems rare but it is definitely worth no money."

"A stone that can emit beautiful scent... No money..." Meng Huaqing early passed out.

Such a big piece of Heavenly Crystal Marrow could be worth a whole town in her realm. It was actually given out casually and it was even treated as a stone... She was pretty shocked.

[No money? Could you even be more wasteful than this?

How can you measure its value by money?

Such a piece can at least be exchanged for ten of a whole realm like this one.]

"Hmm... Wait, if you have such a thing, I should have sensed it earlier. Why did I just know it now?" While Su Yeyue was playing with the 'stone', Meng Huaqing looked at Ye Xiao and said, "You obviously didn't have it on you. What was it?"

"I had this. I won't show it to anybody except my girl." Ye Xiao

humphed and showed the ring on his finger.

"Oh, I see." Meng Huaqing was relieved. She thought, [I must have been careless. I actually missed the Space Ring, such a special object.]

And then she turned to Su Yeyue and said solemnly, "Girl, this... this stone, you must keep it safe. It may give you a lot of help in the future... It may help you break through a difficult level... There is somewhere you will have to need it... Luckily, you have it now. You are indeed... my disciple."

She meant to say something like 'blessed by the gods' or something.

But she didn't say it.

She thought there was no need to explain too much to the mortal people...

The girl held the Heavenly Crystal Marrow and thought, [Even if I really need to use it, I won't. It is a gift from Xiao Xiao. It is the only thing that I can feel him in the days to come. It is a replacement of Xiao-Xiao..."]

Things were all done.

Meng Huaqing wanted to return to her place, so she suggested she left with Su Yeyue immediately.

...

Chapter 197: Radical Change in the South; The Summer Snow!

Because of Princess Hua-Yang's request, Meng Huaqing decided to take Su Yeyue to the south and speak to Prince Hua-Yang face to face.

Princess Hua-Yang had a strong reason — Their daughter was leaving home and they may never meet her again for the rest of their lives, so she had to tell her father in person.

Meng Huaqing was so fond of the girl at the moment. She wouldn't want the girl to have any concerns in mind, so she agreed with the request. It would normally take about half a month to reach the south, but for such a great cultivator, it would only take a short moment.

Before they left, Su Yeyue held Ye Xiao's hand and spoke with tears in her eyes, "Xiao-Xiao, you must not forget me... You must come to find me..."

Ye Xiao comforted her, "Don't worry. I will. But maybe I won't need to find you. If you can cultivate fast enough and reach the peak early, maybe you can come back to me. By then, it will be you protecting me at my side. That is just the same."

Su Yeyue's eyes lit up and she said, "Yes. That's true!"

She made up her mind that she would work extremely hard on

cultivation. [Xiao Xiao is in such a dangerous situation. I have to be successful soon and come back to him...]

She wept and held Ye Xiao's hand. Her other hand was holding her mother's hand. She didn't want to let go either of them. Again and again she kept talking, like there were endless words she needed to tell them.

Meng Huaqing finally became impatient. She dragged Su Yeyue's shoulder and gently shook it.

Su Yeyue's hands were forced to let go.

And then she slowly flew up off the floor.

"Xiao-Xiao! Mother!"

She cried in the air with tears.

"Don't worry! I am here. Everything will be fine in the house. Just don't worry!" Ye Xiao followed her to the door and shouted.

Su Yeyue was weeping and nodding. She looked at Ye Xiao with her eyes full of love, like she was trying to keep every detail of Ye Xiao's face deep in mind.

The next moment, Meng Huaqing waved her hand and a long space crack appeared in the sky.

“So long!” She said. And then they just disappeared in the sky.

Only two drops of tears were falling down in the air.

They dropped on Ye Xiao’s face. It was salty and sour. They were the tears of Su Yeyue.

Ye Xiao faced the sky and sighed.

Su Yeyue left the Palace of Hua-Yang in the afternoon.

At nearly the same time, she arrived at the military camp of the south battle.

Meng Huaqing took Su Yeyue to the south battle that was thousands of miles away from Chen-Xing City, yet it was just like opening a door and reaching the yard from her own house.

It was just like a few steps away.

In fact, they had indeed just walked a few steps.

The space crack that was made by Meng Huaqing was just like a door that linked the city to the south.

She brought Su Yeyue through the door and showed up in

another space.

That was a marvelous skill.

The secret of such space travel was mysterious. Even the Xiao Monarch, who was a grandmaster level cultivator of the Dao Origin Stage, didn't really understand it. It was one of the most formidable skills that only existed in some of the bigger realms. He had never seen or heard such a skill.

However, it only shocked Ye Xiao.

Who knew nothing felt no fears. Princess Hua-Yang knew it must be some extraordinary martial art, yet she didn't know exactly how powerful it was.

Ye Xiao knew clearly about it. So he was stunned.

If a person travelled between two different space and he happened to be a grandmaster cultivator of the Dao Origin Stage, he might be capable. If he brought an ordinary people with him and he wanted to make the route specific, it would be extremely difficult.

It was an instant move to travel between spaces. During the process, the traveller needed to defend the effects from the spacial turbulences. It would be easier to only defend oneself. To defend himself as well as an ordinary person, it would be dozens of times more difficult.

Ye Xiao knew that, so he was extremely shocked like his jaw was dropping down.

One who knew more would realized the fact that he knew too little.

It was lucky to be ignorant.

Ye Xiao was shocked, but on the other side, people were shocked much more.

It was described as a big event that happened in the south.

An event that made the whole world changed.

The afternoon was the hottest time in the day. Prince Hua-Yang's army was facing the enemy's crazy attacks. Everybody knew that both sides were using their full forces in this fight.

Although Prince Hua-Yang's side was brave and strong, things were still tough for him because they were lacking in number. It was getting worse and worse.

Suddenly, the sky was covered by dark clouds and the wind started to howl. The thunder resounded and the lightnings struck. It was dark and people couldn't even see their own fingers.

After a while, it actually started to snow.

It actually snowed in the summer!

The snow was getting heavier. At the end, it was like the sky and the earth were linked by the snow.

Two men standing in front of each other could barely recognize each other.

Within such a short time, the temperature actually dropped down rapidly. It was getting colder and colder. The soldiers could get their fingers frozen by touching their weapons.

Under such situation, both sides couldn't go on the fight. So all men returned back to their camps and prepared for the next fight.

The snow had caused the same damages to both sides, so things were truly not doing any side good.

The men in both sides didn't bring their winter suits. Nobody expected it would snow in the scorching summer.

Millions of soldiers all started to curse when it started to become colder and colder.

“What a bloody strange weather...”

“I am so not believing this...”

“It truly is my first time to see it snowing in summer for the forty years of my life...”

“Forty years? It is the first time in my hundred years!”

“Stop bragging! You old dog are mostly sixty...”

“Is it the [Snow in June](#)? Is there injustice happening in the world?”

“To the hell injustice! What do we, soldiers, have to do with such a thing?”

“Sheee... It freezes me to death... I should enter the camp and make some fire...”

“Where are my firewoods? Why haven’t they brought them yet? I am freezing...”

“Hey! Wang, it is cold. I bet your cxck must be frozen? Congratulations. You can finally get hard...”

“Piss off!”

“Hahahahaha...”

After snowing for a day and a night, they were finally able to see the world and they were stunned.

What they saw was truly beyond their imaginations.

There were three countries fighting this war and millions of men were fighting in the battle. The Kingdom of Lan-Feng and the South Barbarians made an agreement, and they had spent a lot to keep the battle in the flat land.

There were a few small mountains and hills, yet the battle was mostly flat. It was, however, a bad thing to the Kingdom of Chen.

Prince Hua-Yang couldn't change it. When he got here, the Kingdom of Chen had been pushed to this place. If they stepped back more, it would bring the battle into the kingdom. They had to fight under the advantages of the enemies and they just couldn't do anything about it.

However, after the snow... there actually appeared a passage in front of the army of Prince Hua-Yang.

It was not some simple passage. The sides of the passage were all big mountains reaching the sky. The passage was merely about 35 meters wide. It was like a mountain that was cut into two halves.

That was unbelievable, but there was something much more shocking. Between the mountains on each side, there was actually

a castle!

Prince Hua-Yang's men possessed the castle in advance. They surprisedly found out that this castle was built with irons!

It was extremely tough!

Suddenly, they had a castle that was exactly guarding the passage. As long as they kept the enemies from getting through the passage, they could keep the south safe. It would only take them dozens of thousands of men to guard the passage.

Basically, it was nonsense to guard the whole south with only dozens of thousands of men. Yet it was actually the truth that happened to them now. The mountains were in a curved line covering three directions of the southern part of the Kingdom of Chen.

The South Barbarians and the Kingdom of Lan-Feng were both astonished when they saw such a magical wonder.

[Damn it! We have spent almost everything we had and sent out almost all forces of the South Barbarians to attack them. We finally exhausted them after attacking days and nights.

We just wanted to go nail them down and suddenly it started to snow! It was a snow that stopped our pace.

If it was some ordinary snow, that's fine. They were going to fall

under our feet sooner or later.

But... Where the hell did those mountains come from? What the hell is that passage?

Do the gods want us to die?

Is the gods helping the Kingdom of Chen?

It can only be some god-made wonder! What else could it be then?]

Suddenly, to the south from the mountains, people's curses resounded like thunders.

They were just so mad.

Snow in June [六月飞霜], means it snows in summer because something injustice has happened the god gives the snow as a sign.

Chapter 198: It Is Better to Have a Daughter

If the enemies wanted to continue the fight, they would have to go through a roundabout route around the mountains. If they wanted to go around the mountains... it was dozens of thousands of miles. They couldn't afford it.

If they attacked directly, it would only take about five thousand men to defend them because of that castle.

As the saying goes, one man guards the pass and ten thousand are unable to get through.

Even if the enemy wanted to assassinate the commander, they will still need to pass through the passage.

All the attacking scheme seemed to lose power in front of this wonderful passage.

If they wanted to climb over the mountains... That was just bullshit. The mountains were so tall that nobody saw their tops. They might be frozen to death half way on the mountain.

'Fxxck!'

The camps of the South Barbarians were full of cursing words.

Their men were all furious.

"What the hell is that. Is it real?!" A general kept cursing what he just saw and then fell down from the horse. He spat out blood and passed out because of the extreme anger...

...

General Lan, who was Lan Langlang's father, walked out of his camp with the quilt covering him. He was shocked when he saw what happened. - Crack! - His jaw was dislocated. He tried hard to put his jaw back and said, "What... Wh.. What... the hell is this?"

The guards around him were numb. They thought, [How on earth do we know?]

So nobody answered General Lan's question.

After a snowy night, things just happened.

[Mountains from heavens?

The gods are helping us?]

"How... How on earth did the mountains appear?" General Lan, Lan Luoyue, looked at the mountains and said, "If the mountains fell down from the sky, it would absolutely cause an earthquake. With such giant mountains falling to the ground, our men here should have all died... Yet it was so quiet and traceless. How?"

"General, do you think it is fake? An illusion?" One of his close guard made a guess.

General Lan rode on his horse with the quilt on him and rushed to the mountains. He reached his hand and touched the mountains murmuring, "It must be an illusion. It must be fake... It is fake... Oh what the hell it's true..."

The closer guards were all speechless.

Lan Luoyue was thrilled and he stammered with anger, "The gods are... are... are really not bl... bless... blessing me... Wh... What... What is this... Where the hell did... did the mountains fall from... With the moun... mount... mountains I can defend the e... e... enemy myself. Yet now Su... Su Di... Su Dingguo the pr... pro...prick is here to take the easy job... I am so m... mmm... mad!"

The guards looked at each other speechlessly.

It was true though. If he knew such a thing would happen, he would only need thousands of his men to defend from enemy successfully. It was just an unbelievable advantage for them.

The questions was how could he know such a thing in advance?

Well in fact, nobody knew that if Su Dingguo wasn't here, there would be no mountains at all.

Prince Hua-Yang had a good daughter. It was his daughter who brought him such luck to have the "wonder"...

After the war, when General Lan learned about the truth, he sighed and said, "It seems be... bett.. better to have... have a daughter..."

The reason why all that happened was simply a few words of the girl some time earlier.

"My father must have a tough time fighting this battle..." Su Yeyue looked at the battle with tears in her eyes.

"Yue-Er, listen. I can't do you this favor. Even if I am willing to lower my position for you and interrupt the war of the mortal world, releasing my power and energy may cause the whole land to collapse. Such a low-range realm can nearly hold my extreme power." Meng Huaqing frowned.

"But my father is in danger. As I am leaving him, it might be the last time we can see each other. How can I ignore such a situation and just leave..." Su Yeyue wept.

"But there truly is nothing I can do... Hmmm. It is truly difficult for me to do anything..." Meng Huaqing sighed.

"It won't really need you to join the battle. I am just thinking that it will be great if there is a passage right there. Now it is a flat land and there is nowhere to support my father's defense. That is why

they have to fight face to face. It is going to get so many people killed..." Su Yeyue looked at Meng Huaqing with her eyes full of hope.

"Oh... That is easy. You are truly a smart girl. You are qualified indeed to be my disciple. Well done." Meng Huaqing was pleased and praised Su Yeyue at once.

That was why the mountains showed up within just one night.

And the passage came out of nowhere.

Well, it seemed it was better to have a daughter than a son.

General Lan's son could barely do anything except fooling around with his favus head.

Su Dingguo had a daughter and what a great support his daughter provided.

Most importantly, his daughter would weep. [She wept and things just get over for her...](#)

...

Prince Hua-Yang looked at his daughter and her master. He felt unwilling to be apart with her, but he still felt comforted that she had a great master.

Things about the passage and the mountains seemed to be less important to Prince Hua-Yang when he knew that his daughter was leaving.

He was wearing his armor while standing in front of Su Yeyue. There seemed to be tears in his eyes. He sniffled and sighed. He wanted to say something, yet he had nothing to say.

He just stood there while staring at his daughter.

After a while, he said, "I never expected a goddess to show up in my house. Great. Great. Yue-Er, don't worry. Stay with your master. Work hard in learning. Nothing to worry about our family. As long as I am here, everything will be fine."

Su Yeyue could barely talk because of sobbing. Her face was full of tears and she just held her father tight crying, "Father... Father..."

Su Dingguo's eyes turned red and he gritted with his teeth saying, "Go now. Don't make such a scene here."

He walked to Meng Huaqing with big strides and said, "Master, I feel relieved that my daughter can stay with you. If she does anything wrong, scold her and punish her, you can do anything you should. Afterwards, the kid belongs to you."

Meng Huaqing smiled, "You are being too kind, General. It is my

responsibility."

Su Dingguo nodded and said, "Please."

And then he stood straight and saluted formally.

Meng Huaiqing felt surprised and her eyes lit up.

She knew that he must be a noble and tough man. Yet now he actually saluted as a soldier to her.

Su Yeyue was in tears.

Su Dingguo held her and sighed, "I am comforted that you have such a good way to go. I am just feeling sorry for my Brother Ye. I broke the oath of the marriage."

Meng Huaiqing said, "Before we came, they had a wedding and exchanged their gifts."

Su Dingguo smiled bitterly and shook his head, "You and I, we all know what it means. Let's just keep it under the beautiful illusion."

Meng Huaiqing looked at him with praise.

[Su Yeyue's father is indeed an outstanding person. He is truly above ordinary.]

...

It was in the capital.

When Ye Xiao returned to the House of Ye, it was already night.

Ye Xiao looked different at the moment. His face showed he was deep in thought.

That jade on his neck seemed to be weighing thousands of kilograms.

In his brain, there were a few images going over and over repeatedly.

Sometimes, it was a beautiful lady in white looking at him, gritting her teeth while, "Ye Xiao, I hate you!"

Sometimes, it was Su Yeyue looking at him with a trustful look and tears in her eyes, "Xiao-Xiao, you will come to find me, right? You will marry me, right?"

Sometimes, it was the lady in white being refused and feeling sad. Two drops of her tears fell on the floor.

Sometimes, it was Su Yeyue disappearing. leaving two drops of tears falling in the air.

Sometimes, it was Su Yeyue standing in front of him facing a flying sharp sword with cold glows. She opened her arms with a tough expression, "We will die together today. I am your wife!"

All those images filled up his mind. He felt utterly confused and helpless.

All the negative emotions kept haunting him in his heart and they never stopped.

The feelings of shame and helplessness that he couldn't protect whoever he cared about were rolling in his heart.

Ye Xiao felt like drinking liquors so much.

When he got home, he directly went to Song Jue's room.

"Uncle song, would you mind having a couple of drinks with me?" Ye Xiao stood at the door and spoke weakly.

Song Jue was shocked. He thought Ye Xiao would never dare to drink any liquor after what he had encountered the last time they drank. There were some days after that "accident" happened that Ye Xiao would turn furious when hearing anybody say something about liquor. Drinks nearly became forbidden in the House of Ye.

However, Ye Xiao actually wanted to have drinks at the moment

and he seemed to be eager for it. Song Jue looked at him and found that he was terribly dispirited like he had encountered something extremely terrible. So Song Jue asked, "I will drink some with you if you want to."

At the moment, Ye Xiao only wanted to get drunk. The alcoholic Song Jue happened to be a best company for that.

The kitchen had prepared a full table of dishes. The uncle and the nephew sat opposite to each other.

Song Jue smiled and asked, "Xiao-Xiao, I guess this isn't that liquor you drank last time. Am I right?"

...

There is a story about the author when he wrote this part. His wife wanted to buy something but had no money, so she wept in front of the author. The author gave up and gave his wife his bank cards and told her to spend as much as she was happy to. After that, the author felt terribly regretful... That was why he wrote something like this.

Chapter 199: I Can't Be Reconciled

Ye Xiao said sulkily, "Let's drink something yours. Next time I will prepare some fine liquor for you."

"Great! It's a deal!" Song Jue was happy.

He accepted all kinds of liquor except medical liquor. He would rather take poisonous liquor than male-strengthening liquor...

They took out the bottles of liquor and each had a bowl full of liquor. Song Jue raised his bowl and said, "Drink up!"

He just drank it up at a time. He truly was an alcoholic.

Ye Xiao, who was the one asking for drinks, didn't even finish one bowl while Song Jue had already drunk up three.

Ye Xiao wanted to laugh at him, yet he ended up silent while sighing. He just kept drinking quietly. The more he drank, the more he felt depressed. The drinks actually deepened his annoyance!

Song Jue noticed that Ye Xiao hadn't said anything, so he put down the bowl. He had already taken six bowls of liquor already. In fact, he wasn't that alcoholic. He wanted to comfort Ye Xiao because he knew Ye Xiao was in bad mood, so he drank a lot in advance, hoping Ye Xiao would laugh at him. He had already played a fool, but Ye Xiao still couldn't be any happier. He

reckoned that there must be something serious, so he asked, "Xiao-Xiao, are you in any trouble?"

Ye Xiao was quiet and then he replied, "Yes. There are a few things I can't understand."

Song Jue said, "Just tell me some. I have lived dozens of years longer than you after all. I have seen more than you do and I am more experienced..."

Ye Xiao couldn't help but roll up the whites in his eyes, [You have lived dozens of years longer than me?

I... truly don't know what to say about it...]

But he had been a blank fool in such a kind of thing in all his lives. Song Jue wasn't wrong about it though.

"Uncle Song, don't you think people's affection is weird?" Ye Xiao spoke in depression.

Song Jue nodded. His face was a little bit pale and he slightly raised it, "Yes of course. It is weird."

Ye Xiao took a drink and said, "Let me ask you a question."

Song Jue said, "Sure. Your uncle is listening." And then he drank up a lot.

Ye Xiao said, "Uncle Song, let's say that there are two ladies who like you at the same time..."

"That is impossible!" Song Jue shook his head fast and interrupted, "Don't mention two ladies while I am afraid there will never be even one. That is my true feeling after all these years."

Ye Xiao was surprised and said, "Weren't you listening to me? I said 'say'."

"There is no such suggestion about such a thing!" Song Jue was tough and overwhelming.

Ye Xiao was annoyed. He grabbed Song Jue's hand and said with a heavier tone, "I! SAID! LET'S! SUGGEST!"

Song Jue smiled and looked at Ye Xiao with his eyes half-closed, "Oh, Okay! I understand. Go on."

"If, I said if, there are two ladies who like you at the same time. They are all pretty, elegant, graceful ladies. One of them was engaged with you. The other one... You owe her so much..."

Ye Xiao continued, "Most importantly, they all love you wholeheartedly.

You clearly know that you should make things up for the lady

whom you owe a lot. Yet you don't think you can betray the wholehearted care from the other one..." Ye Xiao looked at Song Jue, "What would you do?"

"What would I do? Stir it." Song Jue laughed.

Ye Xiao went on drinking.

He didn't want to talk anymore.

Apparently, Song Jue meant no help to him!

"Why are you troubled by such things that you shouldn't care that much about?" Song Jue was surprised, "Why do you think it's difficult to do? You can just marry both of them! Isn't it good? They are all loving you wholeheartedly after all!"

Then, he became interested and got close to Ye Xiao and said, "I mean... Are there two gals falling in love with you at the same time? Am I right? Hmm. Let me guess. Yeyue is definitely counted in. The other one... Who is the other one? You weren't doing anything good. I really have no idea who, except for Yeyue, would fall in love with you. Why?"

Ye Xiao frowned and smiled bitterly.

He realized it was a big mistake to talk to Song Jue about such a thing.

Because Song Jue was completely a fool in affections too.

He was even worse than Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao had been loved by girls, yet Song Jue hadn't been loved by even one girl.

He couldn't give Ye Xiao any practical suggestions except teasing him!

Song Jue didn't realize it, so he just kept talking, "Who is the other one? Who on earth? Is she someone from the brothel you kept fooling around? Did you owe her something? Did you... treat on her? Is she pregnant?! Are you..."

Ye Xiao sighed and felt extremely helpless. Then he laid his head on the table.

He wasn't drunk yet, but his heart was long drunk!

[Why can't I get drunk? The liquor keeps enhancing the annoyance in my heart. How can I sleep with that!]

Song Jue murmured, "What are you doing you little prick? You said you wanted to drink with me and had something to talk to me. I was being very kind to try to make you laugh. And I tried so hard to comfort you and give you suggestions. Yet look how fast you get drunk... Unbelievable..."

And then he poured some into his bowl and drank it up.

Ye Xiao was actually half-drunk. Song Jue had really made him feel worse.

When he returned to his room, he understood more and more about what Meng Huaqing said. Although it was mean, it was all rational.

Power mattered!

As she said, now that Su Yeyue was her disciple, Su Yeyue would become more experienced, knowledgeable, and she would also reach a high position. Su Yeyue would become higher than Ye Xiao in all aspects. It was possibly upon Ye Xiao's recognition.

If he didn't work hard, it would be very possible that he wouldn't deserve a girl like her, as Meng Huaqing said.

That was very possible!

No matter how deep the girl felt in love with him, after opening her eyes in the big realms, she would know how tiny this land was.

That would surely changed her thoughts.

Maybe she wouldn't change her heart to Ye Xiao. But if Ye Xiao was still as normal as he had ever been, he would end up too weak

to protect his wife and even himself. Meng Huaiqing was telling the truth.

Su Yeyue didn't understand it now. Ye Xiao was an experienced cultivator after all. He was like a baby on things between men, but he was profound about how cultivation influenced people.

[That is it. No matter what, I should become stronger as fast as I can.]

Ye Xiao said in his mind, [It was such a huge shame today. But it was a reasonable thing in people's eyes. So... I am going to keep such 'reasonable thing' from getting on me ever again.]

Some sharp purple glow was emitted from Ye Xiao's eyes.

"I never had a clear life goal in my previous life. Nor had I in this life. I don't know where I should go when I take revenge in the Qing-Yun Realm. It was always a meaningless thing to say 'grand achievement is ahead'. It is always just a saying.

Now I get it. I see it!" Ye Xiao spoke lightly, "My goal is... to get into your world and defeat the most powerful man there!

My goal is that... I will be capable in protecting well whoever I should protect! Nobody will be allowed to say that I don't deserve anything!

That is my goal!"

And then he lied on the bed and operated the East-rising Purple Qi concentratedly.

He had never felt so clear about what he wanted to do in his life.

He was actually full of motivation on cultivation at the moment!

He swallowed all the shame and disgrace in his heart and made them rot inside him.

That would become the lasting motivation in his cultivation!

Insensibly, with his current emotions, the East-rising Purple Qi was running in his Jing and Mai in a way that it had never been.

It actually ran several times faster than before.

When a man felt not reconciled, it would become the first motivation in his improvement!

"A man should be romantic. A man should never take in the disgrace. The flame of anger will burn in his heart. With that, he should come to the day when the anger is vented."

Such lines appeared in his mind.

However, he was lost in cultivation, and it was like he had put everything else aside including himself.

There were some words flashing in the Space.

"East-rising Purple Qi; the first stage of the worldly affections."

The moon suddenly became bright after being dim in the sky.

And then a mass of dense purple qi appeared from nothing in the world. It gathered around the House of Ye slowly...

...

In the south, Meng Huaqing was in the sky preparing to leave through the space crack again with Su Yeyue. Yet she suddenly frowned while looking at the direction of the Chen-Xing City. Her face showed that she was seriously shocked.

That was an expression that had never been on her face for countless years!

She felt that there was a boundless mysterious power appearing in that direction. It was gathering and it disappeared, reappearing again.

"That is actually so powerful!"

She was sure that such a power was strong enough to even threaten herself.

She frowned and wanted to go and check on it after thinking for a while.

While she just moved, she suddenly remembered that she was holding a girl with her left hand. She turned around and found Su Yeyue looking at her confusedly with her eyes which was red because of weeping a lot.

Thinking about how rare the Phoenix Body was, she felt her heart in consternation.

...

Chapter 200: Master Bai's Concern

[Humph. No matter what, there is nobody in this world that can be more important than my disciple. The first thing I should do is to take Su Yeyue back to my place. She needs to have a bone-ablution. Her muscles and bones should be replaced with the Universal Spiritual Root and Ingenious Jade Bones as soon as possible.

It will be worse if she gets it later. She is not a child after all...

That power is strong and infinite, but it is in the initial stage. It still needs a long time to truly be able to threaten me. To me, it is now just like a joke.]

Thinking of that, Meng Huaqing didn't want to go back to the city anymore. She held Su Yeyue's little hand and said gently, "Let's go."

She waved her right hand and they suddenly entered the dark from the light. The whole Land of Han-Yang disappeared in their sights. Su Yeyue saw endless streams of star rivers.

With her master's, Meng Huaqing's, lead, she was like stepping on the stars walking upward.

Meng Huaqing's white clothes were floating. She was like a flying star rushing ahead with Su Yeyue. Countless spaces appeared and disappeared behind them. The two pretty ladies were going straight up to somewhere above the sky...

After just a short time, they had been through endless spaces and travelled for a long distance.

The Land of Han-Yang should be millions miles away.

It might be further away though.

...

The war had been changed quietly.

Nobody in the Chen-Xing City knew about it though.

Ye Nantian was on his way to the north. Maybe he hadn't arrived yet. Nobody knew, because his position became a secret. People thought he was still in the capital.

The battles were failing in both the east and the west.

The south had been stable after all. It will never be a problem to the kingdom for a very long time.

The Chen-Xing City was in a huge disturbance. The news about Ling-Bao Hall holding an auction had attracted too many people.

There were too many.

Endless superior cultivators, even those who had been hidden away for decades, were all showing up in the city.

Countless flags of different sects were shown in the Chen-Xing City too.

The big sects, the great sects and those hidden sects were all showing up in the city.

At the same time, two ladies in white with silk on their faces entered the city through the west gate silently.

...

It was in the bamboo forest.

Master Bai was frowning with a face full of doubts.

[What is going on?]

"Everybody just disappeared."

A man in black said lightly in front of him, "Mission failed."

"How?"

"Well... I don't know."

"Hmm?"

"I heard that at the beginning of the fight, some tourists saw them. It was a tough fight and our men were in great advantage. Although one of Su Yeyue's guards was far above our estimation and we failed to get them at once, but we have surrounded them. At the most important moment when they were about to die in our men's hands, suddenly, all of them disappeared..."

"Including Su Yeyue?" Master Bai frowned.

"Yes."

"No dead bodies. Nothing?"

"No. No exceptions. They all disappeared."

Master Bai took a breath in and frowned.

One more strange thing happened after all those had happened in his life.

He was troubled by the mysterious disappearance of the Heavenly Mystery.

Yet what happened now was much stranger.

He stayed silent for a while and waved his hand to let the man go away. He moved his wheelchair and got to the window. He murmured, "Was it my mother?"

He concentrated himself to sense his mother, yet there was no trace of his mother in this world.

"She is gone... It shouldn't be her then." Master Bai was lost in thoughts, "Then... What happened? Who can make over a hundred superior cultivators disappear at the same time? Who in this realm can do that? Whoever he is, he should be at at least the grandmaster levels of the Dao Origin Stage."

"Would it be..." Master Bai's body shook and his eyes emitted sharp glows, "Would it be... the Purple Lotus Decree Master... Is he really in the Land of Han-Yang? And maybe he is recovered to his perfect condition? He is even improved a lot?"

Even if he is recovered and improved, how could he dare to challenge me?"

He kept thinking and thinking. He still couldn't figure it out. At the moment, a small eagle flew into the bamboo forest fast.

There was a little bamboo bottle on its talons.

He opened the bottle and there was the recent important news in

it.

It was some news that he would never want to know.

"Strange scene happened in the south. There were huge stones falling from the sky all of a sudden. That blocked our attack route. The troops didn't know what to do. It is impossible to get the south down..."

He read the news and then humphed. He finally confirmed something as he sighed and murmured, "Mother... If you want to come, you just come. Why did you go destroy your son's plan? Is it what you do to punish me for not going back home with you?"

He finally figured it out.

There was no other person who could make such things happen in the world. The Purple Lotus Decree Master might be able to get over a hundred men killed in an instant, but he could never do things like moving the mountains and changing the rivers.

Only his mother was capable of that.

Now that his mother had left, the rocks from the sky that kept his men away could never be moved.

He could only accept the truth and bitterly smile.

In fact, Meng Huaqing had no idea her own son was the one who planned all this.

She never knew that those men she killed were her son's men.

To her, it was totally an accident. And she wouldn't know the truth, because she was going back with her satisfying disciple.

Even if she got to know it, she wouldn't care about it. She had just killed some ants of her son and just helped another group of ants for her beloved disciple. That meant nothing to her.

As for her son... She would see it as a punishment.

Master Bai was holding the note and said with a dark face, "Inform Lady Wan and tell her to come back quickly."

He had just placed an order to summon Wan of the Cloud, and another piece of news came to him quickly. This one had really frightened him.

He failed to kidnap Su Yeyue; all his men died; mountains from the sky blocked his army and made him lose the south battle. These could never make him feel troubled. Yet the information he just got had truly frightened him.

"According to the spy's information, there was a mysterious cultivator who took Su Yeyue as her disciple. All we know at the moment is that this cultivator is a female with unbelievably strong

power. She is elegant and proud. People didn't dare to look directly at her. Nobody knows about her history or where she is heading. She is missing at the moment along with Su Yeyue."

He felt anxious knowing such truth.

Now he had to change his plan as things were so out of his expectations.

He might need to cancel his whole plan and make a new one.

It was all because of Su Yeyue's mysterious master.

Others might not know who that mysterious master was, but Master Bai surely knew her. She had to be his mother.

[Now that mother has Su Yeyue as her disciple, I should become like a brother to Su Yeyue.

If I do something evil to my sister's family...

Well that...]

He could only bitterly smile, "My mother will be the first one to kill me... She has been looking for this Phoenix Body for countless of years after all... Now that she has found it, she will surely love the girl like she was her heart... It will be asking for troubles if I mess with the girl at the moment."

"The question is, the fate is settled. The falling fortune has been pointing at the Kingdom of Chen... How can I change it? If I change it forcibly, I will have to wait another sixty years."

"At least only after sixty years can the fate be changed. But how can I wait for another sixty years?"

He looked at the nebula map and smiled bitterly.

"Oh, mother, my mother. You came and you left, leaving me a serious problem."

He frowned and smiled bitterly. His eyes were getting sharper though.

"It all depends on human effort. Since Su Dingguo can't die, so be it. Those mountains suddenly appeared and the situation was stabilized in the south. Let me do a favor for my sister apprentice then. I will let the army of the Kingdom of Chen live. As long as I can hold Su Dingguo and his men in the south and they can't go support the other three sides, their kingdom will still fall."

"At that time, even if the south is safe for them, the other three battles will collapse."

"If the kingdom collapsed, Su Dingguo won't be able to change anything. He is merely a prince with a different family name. He is not a true royal family member after all."

"Hmmm. What was I thinking. How could I be in such messy thoughts. It actually took me such a long time to figure out such a simple thing. It was an unexpected situation... But Su Dingguo is not my problem. My problem is myself."

"I am not in a good mental state."

"My heart is disconsolate."

...